



The five most famous men in Peru and Chile



The five most famous men in Peru and Chile

THE GENERAL
HISTORY
OF THE VAST
CONTINENT and ISLANDS
OF
AMERICA,
Commonly call'd, THE
WEST-INDIES,
FROM
The FIRST DISCOVERY thereof:

With the best Accounts the People could give of their

ANTIQUITIES.

Collected from the Original RELATIONS
sent to the Kings of SPAIN.

By *ANTONIO DE HERRERA*,
Historiographer to His CATHOLICK MAJESTY.

Translated into *English* by Capt. JOHN STEVENS.

VOL. V.

Illustrated with CUTS and MAPS.

THE SECOND EDITION.

LONDON,

Printed for WOOD and WOODWARD in *Paternoster-Row*.
MDCCLX.

652515.2.61

46
196

HARVARD
UNIVERSITY
LIBRARY

THE HISTORY OF THE

AMERICAN REVOLUTION

BY JAMES OSGOOD

IN TWO VOLUMES

VOLUME II

NEW YORK

1861



T H E
General HISTORY
Of the vast CONTINENT and ISLANDS of
A M E R I C A, &c.

D E C A D. IV. B O O K II.

C H A P. I.

Pizarro appoints the City of Lima to be the Capital of Peru; founds that of Truxillo; at variance with Almagro; they are reconcil'd.



P I Z A R R O having founded the City of *Lima*, design'd to make it the *Spanish* Metropolis of *Peru*, because of its advantageous Situation and the Benefit of the Harbour, which he concluded would be much resorted to. He also settled another Colony, which he call'd *Truxillo*, in memory of his own native Town in *Spain*; and endeavour'd to gain the Affections of the neighbouring *Indians*,

B

using

2 The HISTORY of America.

using all possible means to advance those two new Towns. The Va'e of *Chimo*, where this City of *Truxillo* stands, has its name from a potent Lord, and when subdu'd by the *Ingas*, they paid most regard to those Princes, and to the People, who had very notable Burial Places, out of which much Gold has been taken. The City of *Truxillo* was built near a great and pleasant River, whence Trenches are drawn to water the Gardens and Orchards, which are always green and fresh, and the Water runs by the Houses. The Country is healthful, full of Farms, and pleasant Houses, abounding in Corn, Cattel, Fowl, and all sorts of Fruits; and there is plenty of Fish, because so near the Sea. The City is in the Middle of a Plain, among delightful Groves of Trees; the Streets broad, and has a spacious Market-Place, whither the Mountain *Indians* came down to Trade, and Ships sail'd from thence, laden with Cotton, Cloth, and other Things, carried to several Parts.

WHILST *Pizarro* was at *Truxillo*, *Almagro* was inform'd, that the King had given him the Government of all the Country to the Southward of *Chinay*, which included the City of *Cuzco*, whereupon he would not make use of the Commission given him to that purpose by *Pizarro*, who on the other Hand was advis'd to read that Commission, as he did, giving that Government to his Brother *John*, and only empowering the Marshal *Almagro* to go upon the Discovery of the *Cheriguanas*. These Things prov'd the Seeds of Discord, some siding with *Pizarro*, and others with *Almagro*. The Brothers of the former, who were grown haughty with their Success, giving out that the latter intended to murder the Governour, whereupon being admonish'd by the Magistrates to behave themselves modestly, they grew more insolent, and had recourse to Arms, which

- native
Tartar
name -

The HISTORY of *America*. 3

which might have caus'd much Bloodshed, but that *Almagro's* Presence struck an awe upon the *Pizarros*. This was the Beginning of the Tumults in *Peru* between the *Almagros* and *Pizarros*. Advice of this Discord being carried to the Governour *Pizarro*, he hasted away to *Cuzco*, where *Almagro* met him in the Church, and they embrac'd, but each seem'd to blame the other. The Licenciado *Caldera*, a Man of a good natural Disposition, well spoken, and excellently qualified in all Respects, undertook the Reconciliation, and having discoursed them both, with the Assistance of the Priest *Loaysa*, soon brought them to a Treaty, and meeting in the Governour's House, they both solemnly swore faithfully, and without any evasion, all that was contained in certain Articles there read, with the heaviest Imprecations upon the Infringer of the same. The Substance of the said Articles was 1. That their Partnership should subsist without any Infringement, through Interest, Ambition, or any other Motive. 2. That neither should Plunder, Revile, or any way Offend the other. 3. That they should observe the Conditions stipulated between them long before. 4. That they should jointly write to the King what related to those Provinces, and neither of them any thing to the detriment of the other. 5. That all Profits should be fairly produced and divided, and all reasonable Expences allow'd on both Sides. This Oath was taken on the 12th of *June*, 1535. in the Presence of many Persons of Note, *F. Bartholomew de Segovia*, saying Mass. All but *Pizarro's* Brothers rejoiced at this Reconciliation, being envious to see *Almagro* have so great a Share in what they coveted for themselves, being already grown so arrogant, that scarce any could bear them. Notwithstanding this solemn Reconciliation, there remain'd a difference of Parties, and the very *Indians*, who, till then, had been quiet, had their Share in these Divisions, some incli-

4 *The HISTORY of America.*

ning to *Pizarro*, and others to *Almagro*, but the most applied to their *Ingra Mango*, whom they lov'd as their natural Prince, Son to *Guaynacava*; all those People following him wheresoever he went.

THIS was the Posture of Affairs, when (*Almagro* resolved) to lay aside the former Project of the *Che-riguanas*, and to march into *Chile*, because that Kingdom fell within the Government conferr'd on him by the King, and the fame of the immense Wealth of that Country had rais'd the Expectations of all Men. Proclamation being made for such as had no business at *Cuzco* to prepare for that Enterprize, there was much rejoycing, all being willing to serve under the Marshal, who was belov'd for his mild Temper and Generosity; and he to the end that all might be furnish'd with Arms and Horses, brought out above one hundred and eighty Loads of Silver, and twenty of Gold, which he distributed to such as would give Bonds to repay the same out of what they should get in the Country they were going to; and thus were those Kingdoms conquer'd for the Crown, the Conquerors serving for no Purchase, no Pay. *Almagro* using all Diligence to set forward on his Enterprize, desir'd the *Inga* to appoint two *Indians* of Note to go before him, to prepare and dispose all Things for the Reception of his Forces, and the *Inga*, accordingly assign'd him his Brother *Paul Topa* and the High-Priest *Vilehoma*, whose Presence was of much Moment to keep the Country quiet, and it was thought that the *Inga* sent his Brother to take away all Occasion of Jealousy, and *Vilehoma*, as thinking him too powerful, and of a turbulent Spirit. It was found necessary for defraying the Expences of the Expedition, to have the Gold and Silver cast at *Cuzco*, to deduct the King's fifth, at which *Almagro* was present, being very careful that the King should have his Due, and it was wonderful to see the vast Quantity

The HISTORY of *America*.

ty of those Metals. One *John de Lepa*, begg'd of *Almagro* one Ring, out of a Load of them that lay before him, who readily answer'd, he might take as many as he cou'd hold in both his Hands; and being told he was a marry'd Man, gave him four hundred Pieces of Eight, to return to his Wife. To *Bartholomew Perez*, who had been Jaylor at *Santo Domingo*, and presented him with a Target, he gave four hundred Pieces of Eight, and a Silver Pot, weighing forty Marks, of eight Ounces the Mark, with two Lions Mouths of massive Gold to it for Handles, which were found to weigh three hundred and forty Pieces of Eight. To *Montenegro*, who presented him the first Spanish Cat that had ever been in those Parts, he gave six hundred Pieces of Eight. It wou'd be endless to recount the generous and charitable Acts of that Commander. He order'd *Paul Topa*, and the Priest *Vilehoma*, to go before, and to halt at two hundred Leagues distance, sending three *Spaniards*, with them; and *John de Saavedra*, to follow those *Indians* with all the *Spaniards* that were willing to go, and at an hundred and fifty Leagues distance to found a Colony, pursuant to what had been agreed with *Pizarro*, and upon this Commission was founded the Town of *Paria*, an hundred and thirty Leagues from *Cuzco*, to which all the People of *Collao* and *Los Charcas*, resorted. *Almagro* having sent away his Men, and fearing least *Pizarro* should secure him, on Account of their late Differences, or, as was reported, being inform'd that there was such a Design, to get him out of the Country the sooner, march'd with inconsiderable Forces, having order'd the Captains *Ruy Diaz* and *Benavides*, who were gone to *Lima* to raise Soldiers, to follow him, and *Roderick Orgoner* to stay at *Cuzco*, and pick up as many as he could, to come after.

THE Day before he set out from *Cuzco*, he advis'd *Pizarro* to send away his Brothers into *Spain*, to avo d

6 The HISTORY of *America*.

all future Occasions of Discord, which would be very acceptable to all People, those Gentlemen insulting all Men on Account of his Authority, and in order to it said, he might give them what he pleas'd of his Treasure. This would have been wholesome Advice, if *Pizarro* had taken it, but he answer'd, That his Brothers lov'd and honour'd him, as if he were their Father, and would never Occasion any Disturbance. *Almagro* being come to *Paria*, the Forces advanc'd, *John de Saavedra* having Orders to go along the High-Way to the Province of the *Chuchas*, the Capital whereof was *Topisa*, where *Paul Topa* and *Vilchoma* expected him. There he receiv'd Advice from *Cuzco*, that it was not proper for him to proceed on that Enterprize, but to halt, because a Person of Distinction was arriv'd at *Lima*, with a Commission from the King, to divide the Governments; but tho' this was most Expedient, he was so fully possess'd with the Ambition of disposing of such vast and wealthy Nations, as he had been inform'd of, and so intent upon bestowing much on those Gentlemen who follow'd him, that he valu'd not the Country he knew, and this gave Occasion to his conniving at many Crimes among his Soldiers, whence afterwards ensu'd much Desolation. The Lords of *Parcaz* visited, and made him considerable Presents, and tho they gave him bad Accounts of the Wealth of *Chile*, and much worse of the Deserts he was to pass through, neither he, nor his Soldiers would believe them, fancying they did it to save their passing through those Lands. Here we will leave them to proceed to other Affairs that belong to this Place.

Pizarro having sent away *Almagro* to *Chile*, return'd to *Lima*, leaving his Brother *John* to govern at *Cuzco*. At *Lima* he found, *F Thomas de Berlanga*, Bishop of *Panama*, who had the King's Commission to ascertain the Boundaries of the Governments of *Alma-*

gro

The HISTORY of *America*. 7

gro and *Pizarro*, to prevent all Controversies. *Pizarro* then began to Exercise much Liberality, giving two Gentlemen two thousand Pieces of Eight each, a thousand to a *Trinilarian* Fryar, to Portion his Sisters, and so to several others. At this Time *Alonso de Alvarado* came from *Truxillo* to *Lima*, and being a Man of Discretion and good Management, *Pizarro* gave him Commission to go and reduce the Province of *Chachiapoyas*, and others to the Eastward of them, with which he return'd to *Truxillo*, where he gather'd twenty Companies, and marching with them towards the *Chachiapoyas*, they arriv'd at *Cochabamba* and were well receiv'd, because *Alonso de Alvarado* being a good temper'd Man, would not suffer any Person to be injur'd, by which means all the People came in to submit themselves peaceably. He then told them, there must be no more Idols nor Sorceries, nor shedding the Blood of Men, Beasts, or Birds, but that they were to adore the only G O D, the Creator of all Things; they gave ready Attention to him, saying, they would be Christians, and then both Men and Women being dress'd very gay, had a Dance in the Square, and laying down all the Jewels they wore in an Heap, presented it to *Alvarado*. Having mention'd the Dances of the *Peruvians*, it is not improper here to observe, that all Nations of the world living in Society, have their several Exercises, by way of Recreation. In *Pern* there was a sort of Fight usd by way of Diversion, which generally grew so hot, that it prov'd dangerous. Those People have a thousand Sorts of Dances, wherein they imitate several Professions, as Shepherds, Husbandmen, Fishermen, Hunters, &c. with very leisurely Steps, Musick and Measure: Other Dances were of Persons mask'd with hideous Vizors, and some Men danc'd on the Shoulders of others, most of those dances being somewhat Idolatrous, because they so honour'd their Idols. At these Dances they play'd on

8 The HISTORY of *America*.

several musical Instruments, some being little Pipes, like Reeds, others like Tabors, others like Snails, and they were all wont to sing, one or two repeating their Verses, and the rest answering. Some of those Verses were Historical, others Superstitious, and others Nonsensical. These Dances were call'd *Taaqui*; and because they are now only meant for Recreation, they are tolerated, the Prelates having contriv'd to put religious Matters into their Verses, which they will listen to the whole Day. They have also introduc'd among them the several *Spanish* Ways of Versifying, which they are much taken with. *Alvarado* thinking those People were well-dispos'd to embrace whatsoever they should be taught, lest some *Spaniards* there, charging them to live peaceably and orderly, and having promised to return speedily, went away to *Lima*, to give *Pizarro* on Account of what he had done, who thought fit that he should keep the Presents that had been made him by those *Indians*, provided he wou'd immediately return into that Province to found a Colony there, and in order to it, he furnish'd himself with all Necessaries, and a Commission to divide the Lands.

At *Lima* some Soldiers joyned *Alonso de Alvarado*, and though they did not approve of a Captain of so much Moderation, however many follow'd him because he was good Natur'd. He went thence to *Truxillo*, and having gather'd more Men there, march'd to *Cochabamba* where he muster'd them, and found that the Foot had Cross-Rows, Swords and Targets, and short Coats, stuffed with Cotton, of good use by way of Armour in those Wars: The Horsemen had Swords, and Spears, and Morions, with the same sort of Armout. He named the Commanders, and prescribed Laws for strict Discipline, that the Natives might not be oppressed, thinking fair Means the best to reduce them to Obedience. The *Indians* were not pleas'd to see *Alvarado* return with so many Men, but
he

The HISTORY of *America*. 9

he appeased them with his courteous Behaviour, and having disposed all Things to his Mind, marched away to the Eastward, where he was inform'd, that the Inhabitants of the inner Provinces were incens'd at the others for having permitted the *Spaniards* to come in among them, whereupon, notwithstanding all *Alvarado's* Perswasions, they began to assemble and threaten, declaring, that they would not submit, nor change their ancient Customs, and therefore the *Spaniards* might depart and quit their Country. *Alvarado* sent Messengers to advise them to return to their Houses, and till their Lands, for he would do them no wrong, nor force them to quit their Religion, but only instruct them to live as becomes rational Men. His Perswasions not prevailing among these People, who were then in Arms, it was requisite to use Force, accordingly he advanc'd towards them, with some of the Natives that had joined him. *Camacho* going before with twenty Men, at a League and half Distance, came to a Stony Field, which was very bad for the Horses, and then the *Indians* sent Messengers to *Alvarado*, with Presents, suing for Peace in an humble Manner, whilst they advanced towards the *Spaniards*. He returned an affectionate Answer, but as soon as the Messengers were gone back the *Indian* Army appeared, and fell on with their usual Cries, however being well received, they soon turned their Backs and fled.

Guayamamel, the Chief of the *Curacas*, or *Caziques*, perceiving that the *Spaniards* were not to be vanquish'd, perswaded the rest to accept of Peace, (alleging, it was visible that the Sun favour'd the Strangers); for which reason it was better to be quiet in their Houses and enjoy what they had, than to expose themselves to the dreadful Wounds those Men gave; to endure Hunger, and destroy their Wives and Children. This he said in the hearing of all his Army, and though *Guaman*, another powerful *Curaca* opposed it, he instantly

10 *The HISTORY of America.*

stantly stripped himself of his fine Garment, and putting on a worse, taking his old Wife along with him, went away to *Alvarado*, humbly begging Pardon, and offering to submit. *Guaman* follow'd his Example, as did the other Lords, except only *Guayamil*, who held out with a great Number of Men, and was a notable Juggler; but they found Means to seize and deliver him up to *Alvarado*, who condemned him to Death, as a Disturber of the publick Peace.

Alvarado proceeded to the Vale of *Vagua*, always taking care to do no harm, and found about eight thousand *Indians*, guarding the Passage of a River. Having readily made Floats, his Men being very Obedient upon all Occasions, they passed the River near the Town, which they called *De la Cruz*, or of the Cross, and met another Army, both which were attack'd, and soon routed. The Fame of these Successes, of *Alvarado's* Courtesy, and of the strict Discipline observ'd by his Forces, prevailed with all to submit to him, and he told them, That he would found a City in those Provinces, that should be as considerable as that of *Cuzco*, where they might live pleasantly, and like Brethren. However he was inform'd, that there was another Army of *Chachiapoyas*, at Hand, whereupon, he sent to desire the *Curaca*, that they might be Friends, and avoid Effusion of Blood, of which no good could come. He answer'd, that having been told that the *Spanish* Swords made great Wounds, and being desirous to see one, he prayed him to send it. *Alvarado* accordingly sent one, with a Silver Hilt, which when he had observ'd and try'd, he was astonished, and went away to conclude Peace, so that all the adjacent Provinces were reduc'd, and *Alvarado* apply'd himself to settle the Government in Spirituals and Temporals. The *Ingas* had made a Road to this Province of the *Chachiapoyas*, with whom they had long

The HISTORY of *America*. II

long Wars, and tho' vanquish'd in one Battle, they were at last subdued, and many of them transplanted to *Cuzco*, where they settled on the Hill called *Carmenga*. These *Chiachiapoyas* are the whitest and most graceful People of all the Nations in *Pern*, and the Women so beautiful, that they us'd to be carried for the *Ingas*. They embrac'd the Religion, Habit and Customs of *Cuzco*; and when *Alvarado* reduc'd these Parts, he then founded the City that was call'd *San Juan de la Frontera*, that is, St *John on the Frontiers*, on a Place call'd *Levanto*, an uneven Ground, which they were forc'd to level for building of Houses; but he soon remov'd it to the *Guanacas*, because it was found to be an healthy District. All the Province of the *Chiachiapoyas*, *Guanacas*, *Cascayunga*, is within the Territory of *San Juan de la Frontera*, (in which during the Reign of the *Ingas* there were Temples, Palaces, and Royal Store-Houses. In some Towns there are rich Gold-Mines, abundance of Cattel, and they make fine Woolen-Cloth; the Soil fruitful and producing all Things of the Growth of *Spain*. To the Eastward of this City is the great Ridge of the *Andes*: To the Westward is the South-Sea, and beyond the *Andes* is *Mayobamba*, and other great Rivers, with other Nations more unpolish'd) which the Natives say are the Progeny of the famous Commander *Ancoalla*, who, on Account of the Cruelty practis'd towards him by the *Ingas*, abandon'd his native COUNTRY, and went away with as many of the *Chiancas* as thought fit to follow him.

The Natives of the remoter Provinces disturbing those that had submitted, *Alvarado* was oblig'd to send some *Spaniards* to assist them in taking Revenge of their Enemies, which they did accordingly, and then he, by fair Means reduc'd the Territory of *Longua*, whence he proceeded to that of *Charrañmal* to the Eastward, taking with him a Number of the

Conse-

12 *The HISTORY of America.*

Confederate *Indians*, and halted in a Place near a Town call'd *Gomora*, the Inhabitants whereof had so great a Conceit of their own Valour, that they scoffed at those who had comply'd with the *Spaniards*. *Alvarado* having, according to his Custom, in vain endeavour'd to prevail on them by fair Means, sent *John Perez de Guetara* against them, with twenty Men, but they fled and abandon'd their Town. Having rested some Days at *Charraſmal*, he march'd through all those Eastern Parts, without meeting any Opposition, till he came to a Town, where they inform'd him, that farther on, there were large Towns, and the People were resolv'd to stand upon their Guard, and coming to a Town call'd *Corcon* found it abandon'd, and no Guides to be had, which put him to some Trouble, because the Country was much cover'd. The *Indians* confiding in their multitude, and being sensible that steep Hills were bad for the Horses, whom they most dreaded, waited an Opportunity to attack the *Spaniards*, not thinking that *Alvarado* knew any thing of their Designs; but he being vigilant, and acquainted with their Intentions, used all means to save the Effusion of Blood, which proving ineffectual, and understanding that the Enemy were drawn together on an high Mountain, he advanc'd against them with all his Forces. The *Indians* were not idle, but coming down upon the *Spaniards*, wounded one Horse, and struck a Dart through the Pomel Part of a Saddle, tho' that Weapon had no Iron Head: However the other *Spaniards* making way to the Top of the Hill, those *Indians* were all put to Flight, *Alvarado* not suffering them to be pursu'd, to prevent the Slaughter, yet they, in the utmost Despair, for being, as they said, forsaken by their Gods, burnt their own Houses, and destroy'd their Lands. To put a stop to this Evil, *Alvarado* sent *Camacho* with forty *Spaniards* and a thousand *Indians*

The HISTORY of America. 13

dians to take some Prisoners, who might go to offer Peace. At a few Leagues Distance, *Camacho* met five thousand *Indians* of the Province of *Hafallao*, that were marching to joyn those who had been defeated; and it being usual for Soldiers to observe the Methods of their Leaders, the *Spaniards* offer'd Peace, which being rejected, they ply'd their Cross-Bows, the Effect whereof was such, that those *Indians* soon fled, as did another Body that was following them. Several other Skirmishes happen'd, which being much alike in their Circumstances are not worth the mentioning in particular.)

C H A P. II.

Of the Situation of the City of Lima; temperate Climate in the Torrid Zone; discoveries made by Belalcazar, he founds the City of Guayaquil.

THE City *De los Reyes*, or of the Kings, now generally called *Lima*, is seated three hundred Leagues from *Quito*, and at the like Distance from *Los Charcas*, whereas that of *Cuzco* is too far from the first of those Provinces and very near the latter. The Harbour is very safe and commodious; for the great Trade carry'd on there from *New Spain*, and all other Parts on the South-Sea, and therefore this is the proper Residence for the Vice-Roy, who is nearer at hand than if he were in an inland Town to receive his Orders from the Court of *Spain*, and to see all that comes into and goes out of that Kingdom. The Air is extraordinary healthful, the Heat being moderated by the South Wind, and the Weather is generally serene and fair, because the Sun being perpendi-

14 *The HISTORY of America.*

pendicularly over it, dispells all the Vapours that rise from the Earth. The Cold of the Night is not of it self sufficient to temper the excessive Heat of the Sun, whence it must be concluded that the fresh Air alone renders the Torrid Zone so moderate and delightful, that it is like a perpetual Spring; whereas the Antients look'd upon it as not habitable, supposing it to be like an Oven, ever burning and scorch'd up. That this Coolness is owing to the Wind appears in that some Countries in one and the same Latitude enjoying such Temperature as has been said, others are scarce tolerable for the Heat, as *Brazil Ethiopia*, &c. The same is found in Places very little distant from each other, still in the very same Latitude, for *Potosi* is excessive Cold and Barren, whereas *La Plata* is Temperate, Delightful, and Fertile, and yet the Distance between them is but eighteen Leagues.

WHILST what has been said above happen'd in other Parts of *Pern*, *Belalcazar*, removed the Colony he had founded at *Riobamba* to the City of *Quito*, giving it the Name of *St. Francis*, from whence he made many Excursions, gaining several strong Holds those People had made. *John de Ampudia* upon one of these Expeditions, being inform'd where the Indian General *Zopezopagua* was with his Family, sent to advise him to be a Friend to the *Spaniards*, and not oblige them to Severity. He answer'd, that was what he desir'd, but that he dreaded their Cruelty, and Breach of Faith. *Ampudia* reply'd, he gave his Word that it should not be so, but whatsoever was concerted should be observ'd. *Zopezopagua*, on the one Hand, dreaded that they would press him for the Gold and Silver that had been hid, that being what the *Spaniards* hunted after, and was not safe on the other, because the Natives then had no regard to Friendship or Kindred, as only aiming to gain the good Will of the Conquerors, and consequently knew what

The HISTORY of *America.* 15

what Course to take; but *Ampudia* knowing where he was, went thither with six Horsemen and took him, tho some say he surrender'd himself; after which *Quingolamba* and other Commanders submitted themselves, bringing considerable Presents of Cattel. Soon after *Irruminavi* was also taken, which put an End to the War at *Quito*. *Belalcazar* cruelly wreck'd those great Men to discover the Gold and Silver they had, but they were so resolute as to disappoint his Covetousness, and he inhumanly put them to Death.

AT this same Time Captain *Tapia*, by Order of *Belalcazar*, (sent one from the Province of *Chinto* to make Discoveries Northward) and met with little Opposition. At *Tacunga* *Lewis Diaz*, took a stranger *Indian*, who said he was of a great Province call'd *Cun-dirumarca*, (subject to a potent Prince, who, some Years since, had fought a great Battle with certain very bold Neighbours he had, called *Chicos*) who having been much distressed by them, had sent this Man with some others, to crave Aid of *Atahua'pa*, at the Time he was engaged in the War with *Guasca*, and had been answer'd, that he would comply with his Request, as soon as the said War was at an End, bidding those Messengers to attend him till then, of all whom only this Man escap'd, and went away to *Quito* with *Irruminavi*. (Being ask'd several Questions concerning his Country, he talk'd of prodigious Plenty of Gold and other mighty Matters there were in it, which gave Occasion to so many to attempt the Discovery of *Dorado*, that has always look'd like an Inchant'd Country. *Belalcazar* upon this Relation of the *Indian*, order'd *Peter de Anasco*, with forty Horse, and the same Number of Foot, to go with him to discover his Country, which he said was only twelve Days Journey distant. In hopes of finding that mighty Treasure, they pass'd thro' *Gnallabanba*, and march'd between the Towns of the *Quillacingas*,
going

16 The HISTORY of *America*.

going over craggy, dreadful Woods and Mountains without finding any thing of what they sought after. A few Days after *Belalcazar*, who 'could never rest' sent *John de Ampudia*, with a considerable Party of Horse, after *Peter de Anasco*, who took all the other's Men under his Command, and attempted new Discoveries. *Belalcazar*, in order to make a way from *Quito* to the Sea, and render it safe for Trading, march'd out himself, and having reduc'd the Natives to Obedience, settled a Colony, by the Name of *Santiago de Guayaquil*, appointed *James Daza* Governour, and return'd to *Quito*. Those that were left at *Santiago* aforesaid made such haste to grow rich, that the Natives being no longer able to bear their Disorders, conspiring together, kill'd them all, except four or five, with their Governour *Daza*, who return'd to *Quito*, and it was not without Difficulty that those People were afterwards subdu'd. This City of *Guayaquil* was founded to the Westward of *Puerto Viejo*, at the first Entrance into which Territories are the *Indians* call'd *Guancauilcas*, who drew out their Teeth by way of Sacrifice.

WE left *Ferdinand Pizarro*, after his return from *Spain*, travailing through the Plains of *Peru*, to the City of *Lima*, where he heard by the way a vast Quantity of Gold and Silver was to be melted down, whereupon he sent in haste to his Brother the Governour, desiring to put off that Work for a few Days, as was accordingly done. Before his Arrival *F. Michael de Oronez*, Commendary of the *Mercenarian* Friars, founded a Monastery, and the Bishop of the Province of *Tierra Firme*, propos'd the assigning a Plot for a Cathedral, and then thinking there was no difference between *Pizarro* and *Almagro*, and consequently no Occasion for dividing their Governments, as the King had order'd, or in reality perceiving that there was no good to be done among those People,

The HISTORY of *America*. 17

People, he return'd home to his Diocese, refusing to accept of a great Present that was offer'd him; several Gentlemen who were satisfied with what they had got, and foresaw the Mischiefs that were like to ensue through the Ambition of the Governour *Pizarro's* Brothers, took hold of that Opportunity to return to their own Homes. *Ferdinand Pizarro* came at this Time to the City of *Lima*, and the Governour his Brother complaining that he had consented to the cutting off so much of his Government for *Almagro*, as would deprive him of the City of *Cuzco*, he excus'd himself by showing, that he had obtain'd the Addition of seventy Leagues to his Government, which would include the said City; adding, that the King and Council were so fully acquainted with the great Merits of *Almagro*, as to think the Reward they had assign'd him too little. The Governour had left his Brother *John* to Command at *Cuzco*, as his Lieutenant, and, as was said before, *Paul Topa*, and the High-Priest *Vilehoma*, were gone before on *Almagro's* Expedition; but before his Departure for *Chile*, the said *Vilehoma* had concerted with *Mango Inga*, who was much honour'd and belov'd by the *Indians*, that there should be a general Insurrection, for recovering of that Empire, which had only a Shadow remaining of its former Grandeur. (Some Days after) the departure of that Priest, *Mango Inga* call'd to him many of the Lords of the Provinces of *Condesuyo*, *Collasuyo*, and *Chinchasuyo*. (When they were come, after many Sacrifices and Entertainments, *Mango* said, He had summon'd them in order to declare, before his Kindred and Servants, what was expedient for them all, in relation to those Strangers, whose unbounded Avarice and Lust were not satisfy'd, as appear'd by their Plundering the very Temples, and taking their Wives and Daughters for their Mistresses.) In short, he represented all the Grievances they lay under, and

18 *The History of America.*

whatsoever else could excite them to deliver themselves from that Bondage, before the *Spaniards*, who daily receiv'd Recruits, were grown too numerous. The first Part of their Answer consisted in Cries and Lamentations, which being ceased, they said, he was *Guaynacava's* Son, and they pray'd the Sun and their Gods to be assisting to him in delivering them from that miserable Thralldom, and in order to it they advis'd him to make his Escape privately from *Cuzco*, that they might all join him, and expose their Lives in so good a Cause. This could not be done without the Knowledge of the *Yanaconas*, who having been Slaves before and made free by the *Spaniards*, if the Conspiracy succeeded must again return to their servile Condition. They gave Notice to *John Pizarro* and other *Spaniards*, who, tho they did not give entire Credit to it, order'd those *Yanaconas* to observe all the *Inga's* Motions in a cautious Manner, and to bring Advice of every Step he took, which they, being so much concern'd, diligently perform'd. The *Inga* in pursuance of what had been concerted, was carried out of the City on his Bier, in the Night, attended by his Wives, his Servants, and some of the *Orejones*, leaving some People in his House, and taking the way to *Chinchafuyo*. *John Pizarro* had Notice of it immediately, who went to the *Inga's* House, where the Confusion and Disorder was so great, that they plunder'd it, carrying off much Wealth, the greatest Part whereof the *Yanaconas* took. *John Pizarro* returning home desir'd his Brother *Gonzalo*, tho the Night was very dark, to pursue the *Inga*, as being sensible of the Consequence, which he did with ten other *Spaniards*, on a large Trot, and at the Salt-Pits, half a League from *Cuzco*, they overtook the People that attended him, who being asked, where he was, answered, That he went another way. The *Inga* hearing the Noise, and perceiving they were *Spaniards*,

The HISTORY of *America*. 19

niards, cursed those that had discovered his Flight. *Gonzalo Pizarro* laying hold of an *Orejon*, who was near the *Inga*, pressed him to discover that Prince, and upon his not confessing, caused a Cord to be tied about his Genitals, and he tho much tortured, cried, That the *Inga* was not there. Four Horsemen held on their way, still inquiring for the *Inga*, who when they were close by him, alighted from his Bier, and hid himself among the Rushes, but they hovering about the Place where he lay, as believing they had known him, he came out, and desired they would not kill him, for he had departed the City to follow *Almagro*, who had sent a Messenger to him; which Lie raised many Jealousies that were the Occasion of mighty Troubles and Slaughters. Those that had taken him, called out to *Pizarro*, who being come up, they in a very courteous Manner, without giving one ill Word, set him up again on his Bier, and returned to *Cuzco*.)

John Pizarro was gone out another way, with a great Number of Horsemen, in Quest of the *Inga*, and being informed that he was taken, returned well pleased, knowing of how great Consequence the securing of him was for preserving the Peace of the Country, all the Natives paying him the greatest Veneration, and told the *Inga*, he was ungrateful to his Brother in endeavouring to make his Escape, after that manner; who again answered, his Design was no other than to follow *Almagro*, who had sent to call him. (Then going home, and finding his House plunder'd, he was the more incensed, and fled again, with a Design to hide himself on the stony Mountains next to *Cuzco*; but *John Pizarro* being informed of it, brought him back, and he was then kept under a strong Guard.) The *Indians* to excuse him, said, he was so pester'd with *John Pizarro's* Importunity to give him Gold, that he went away to

20 *The HISTORY of America.*

evade that Trouble. The Confinement of *Mango* was very grievous to the *Indians*, who cried to their Gods, fasted, offered Sacrifices, and begg'd Aid to set him at Liberty, making Songs, or Ballads, wherein they extoll'd the goodness of their Sovereigns, lamented their Misfortunes, and wish'd for some favourable Conjecture in order to find a Redress of their Grievances. The Division of the *Spaniards* seem'd to offer an Opportunity, and those People being much inrag'd, and all not able to dissemble, as *Peter Martyr de Moguer* was in a Village that had been given him, the *Indians* killed him, thinking to keep it secret, but some of those that went thither with him, returning to *Cuzco*, discovered it, and the same being a Matter of great Moment in the Consequence, *Gonzalo Pizarro* marched with a Number of Men to chastise those *Indians*, who having Notice of it, retired with their Wives to a steep high Rock, carrying good Store of Provisions and Water, where they were besieged so long that their Water failed, and being ready to surrender, so much Water fell in the Night, that they repented saying, that GOD had commiserated their Condition, and sent them Plenty of Water. *Gonzalo Pizarro* sent advice to his Brothers, who marched to his Assistance, carrying a Wooden Galery to cover his Men in their approach to the Rock; but the Defendants threw down so many Stones, that they broke it, wounding five Christians, and some *Yanaconas*. *John Pizarro* having often in vain summon'd them to surrender, and being disappointed of Success, by open force, tried many Artifices to as little Effect; at length a Captain of the *Orejones*, who was at the Siege, by Order of the *Inga*, found means to speak to the besieged, bidding them to be of good Courage, for on a certain Night, all the Horses should be killed, when they were to sally to assist those that did it. One of the *Yanaconas* happening to hear the Discourse, gave advice to

John

The HISTORY of *America*. 21

John Pizarro, who caused the *Oregon* to be burnt, because he having been sent by him, to perswade the besieged to surrender, had told them what had been said, pretending to him, that they had demanded six Days to submit. At the same time, he ordered Captain *Gabriel de Rojas*, whom he had left in his stead at *Cuzco*, to threaten *Mango Inga* for the Treachery committed by his Servant *Rojas* after his natural mild way, told the *Inga*, who excused himself, saying, he could not be blamed for the other's Offence; and being afraid of his Life, commanded one *Pavaara Inga* to go use his endeavours, that the Siege might soon end. He coming to the Rock, discoursed the Defendants, complain'd of the Confinement of *Mango Inga*, added he was coming to their Assistance, and that he had the sacred Axe of the Sun to take the Oath of Fidelity. They being well pleased, contriv'd that he should return the next Night, with only four Companions, to concert the Method for killing all the Christians. The *Oregon* having well viewed the Fort, the Gates, and the manner of shutting them, return'd, and told *John Pizarro*, that to the End he should be kind to his Lord *Mango Inga*, he would do him a signal Piece of Service, which it was a great Hazard would cost him his Life. He demanded four *Spaniards*, who being close shaved, and daubed after the *Indian* manner with black or white, and cloath'd in their Fashion, with their Swords conceal'd, should go with him at Night to the Rock, *John Pizarro* himself being to follow them, with the rest of the *Spaniards*, and the *Tanacunas*.

At the appointed Hour, the *Oregon* with the four *Spaniards* began to climb the Rock with much difficulty, the *Indians*, at the same time, repenting the Agreement, for fear of some double Dealing; but having offer'd to treat with only four, they would not fail on their Part, directing that the first Gate

22 *The HISTORY of America.*

should be open'd, if only four came, whereas if there were more, they should be kill'd; but in case they exceeded not that Number, the four should stop within the first Gate, and the *Orejon* should pass the second Gate, till they saw the sacred Axe, and took the Oaths. None appearing but the four, and the *Orejon*, who carried the little Copper-Axe, on which several Oaths were taken, rais'd on a short staff and a Club they use in fighting, concealed, as soon as he came to the Top, he gave a call, some armed Men open'd the first Gate, and the four being left there, not a little Apprehensive of some Treachery, the second Gate was open'd, and as they were going to shut that again, the *Orejon* casting off his Mantle, handled his Club, and crying, *Viracocha Vecaramon*, that is, *Spaniards or Christians, come quickly*, tho they made all possible haste, the *Orejon* was kill'd calling upon the *Spaniards*, who fought desperately with their Swords, the Darkness of the Night, and the Narrowness of the Place, saving there Lives. *John Pizarro* came up to their Assistance, making good their Ground till it was Day, (when the *Indians* seeing the Enemy within their Fortrefs, it was dreadful to hear the Cries and Shrieks of Men, Women, and Children. Many of them made Choice of a voluntary Death, casting themselves headlong down the Rocks, and a dreadful Slaughter ensu'd by the Hands of the *Tanacunas*) cutting off Arms and Legs, the *Spaniards* shewing as little Mercy. (One prime Man, of a good Presence, shedding abundance of Tears, and often naming *Guanacava*, tied together in one Rope, his wife, two Children, six Sheep, and many Bundles of Garments, and shutting his Eyes, cast himself headlong among the Rocks, dragging all the rest after him. When the heat of the Slaughter was over, the plunder ensu'd, which amounted to no more than five thousand Pieces of Eight, and those by the unanimous consent

The HISTORY of *America*. 23

sent of all, were given towards the Building of the Church of *Cuzco*. No sooner was this done, than News came, that *John Bozerril* had been murder'd at *Ondesuyo*, by his own *Indians*, and *John Pizarro* resolv'd to march immediately to make another Example of them.

C H A P. III.

Ferdinand Pizarro made Governour of Cuzco, sets Mango Inga at Liberty, who departs the City, and begins the War; the Fort of Cuzco taken; Indians routed; Alonso de Alvarado marches to the Relief of the City.

*F*erdinand Pizarro being come to the City of *Lima*, laboured to induce all the *Spaniards* to grant the King a free Gift, which they generally were averse to, alledging, that the King already had the fifth of what they gain'd at the Expence of their Blood, and labour, without any charge to the Crown; and that they could expect no Advantage from any such Present, all the Benefits whereof would redound to the *Pizarros*, *Francis* being already created a Marquess, and *Ferdinand* Knighted; however through their Influence a considerable Sum was Collected, and the said *Ferdinand* desir'd he might go to *Cuzco*, to carry on the Collection there, which his Brother granted, and to the End he might perform it with the greater Authority, appointed him his Lieutenant in that City, excusing himself to his Brother *John*, who was thereby remov'd from that Post. Whilst this was in Agitation, Advice was brought that *Tizo*, Uncle to *Mango Inga*, had done some harm about *Tarama* and *Bom-*

24 The HISTORY of *America*.

bon, for which the Governour order'd him to be taken into Custody; but he having Notice of it, made his Escape into the thick Woods of the *Andes*, whence he sent to advise his Nephew *Mango*, to make his Escape as soon as possible, from the *Spaniards*, and commence the War, and he would come to his Assistance. In the mean time the Governour visited the Cities of *Truxillo* and *St. Michael*, establishing good Rules and Orders in those Places, and every where perswading the *Indians* to lay aside their Idolatry, and embrace the true Christian Religion. After which he returned to *Lima* to promote the Works and Establishment of the new City.

Ferdinand Pizarro arriving at *Cuzco*, took Possession of that Government, appointing his Brother *John* his Deputy, and then set *Mango Inga* at Liberty, much against the Will of his Brothers, whereupon it was reported, that the *Inga* had made him a very great Present of Gold. As soon as free, *Mango* began to contrive the Destruction of the *Spaniards*, and for as much as it was requisite to make his Escape from *Cuzco* he perswaded *Ferdinand Pizarro* that he would go fetch a Statue of his Father all of Gold and Silver, that he said, was four Leagues from *Cuzco*. Being permitted to go, with two *Spaniards* and his *Indian* Interpreter, *Ferdinand* was soon sensible of the Error he had committed, and march'd out with seventy Horse to bring back the *Inga*, who was then at *Colca*, and by the way met the two *Spaniards* he had sent with the *Inga*, who told him, they had been dismissed by that Prince, saying he had no Occasion for them. However he advanced towards *Calca*, and coming to an high Ground, was attack'd by a multitude of *Indians*, whom he drove back to the Town, where he stay'd that Night, in a very uneasy Manner, being alarm'd every Moment, and in the Morning he thought fit to return to *Cuzco*, not thinking that City safe, the *Indians* in vast Numbers charging him all the

way

The HISTORY of *America*. 25

way till he was in the Place. (Tho *Ferdinand* was in *Cuzco*, the *Indians* did not draw off, but rather increased, till they amounted to two hundred thousand to carry on that Siege, the Defendants being no more than an hundred and seventy *Spaniards*, and about a thousand Natives that stuck by them, many of them *Yanacunas*. The Besiegers being come near to the Houses, *Ferdinand Pizarro* having given necessary Orders, made a Sally with all the Horse, whom the *Indians* suffer'd to advance till they had compassed them in; however they all fought their way out except one Gentleman, whose Horse falling, he was immediately kill'd, and they cut off his Head, and his Horse's, looking upon that as an extraordinary Success, whereupon they drew nearer to the City. The High-Priest *Vilehoma* possessed himself of the Citadel, whence they daily gain'd Ground, making Barricadoes in the Streets, by which means the *Spaniards* were confin'd to the Market-Place, and tho a Captain was put into a strong House adjoyning to secure it against the Enemy, they gained it that very Night, and by that means a great Part of the Square, throwing Stones with their Slings, so thick, that the *Spaniards* could find no Shelter, and being thus drove into two Houses, that were opposite to each other, they thought it better to sally out than to perish there, which accordingly they did, driving the *Indians* along the Streets, and throwing down their Intrenchments. The *Indians* to secure themselves against the Horses, made Ropes of the Sinews of Sheep, with three Nooses in each of them, and a Stone to every one, with which they seiz'd their Horses and the Riders, that they were disabled from making use of their Weapons, when the Foot prov'd very useful, for cutting of those Gins, which they call'd *Aylos*, with their Swords, tho' not without difficulty, those Cords being very tough.)

Thus the *Spaniards* regain'd the Market-Place, with much difficulty, the Commander of the Foot being wounded

26 The HISTORY of *America*.

wounded in the Head with a Stone. The Noise of the Horns and Drums, was hideous, and the Cries of the *Indians* nothing inferior, the *Spaniards* being in a Consternation, by Reason of the smallness of their Number, and the Multitude that inclosed them; whereupon considering how much harm was done them from the Citadel, it was thought requisite to attack it, which was accordingly done, under the Conduct of *John Pizarro*, who, with his Men, drove the *Indians* before him, till he came to a Ditch the *Indians* had cut before the outward Wall; there *Alonso de Mesa* resolutely leap'd his Horse over, and maintain'd the Fight till others got over, which brought them to that outward Wall in which there were two Inlets, one of which was gain'd with a mighty Slaughter of *Indians*. At the same time there was an engagement in the City, to which the *Indians* set fire, and all the Houses being Thatch'd, it was soon burnt, which put the *Spaniards* upon the point of quitting it, and marching away to *Lima*. But they were not idle at that Place, for the Insurrection being general, a great Army of *Indians* was late down before it; however Supplies coming thither by Sea, and the Country being plain, where the Horses were of most use, the *Indians* could not stay so long before it as they did at *Cuzco*. The *Spaniards* there, being destitute of all Hopes of Relief, upon several Consultations, were resolv'd to abandon the Place, having been nine Months besieg'd, but *John* and *Gonzalo Pizarro*, *Gabriel de Rojas*, and *Ferdinand Ponze* resolutely oppos'd it, as a most dishonourable Action, declaring they ought rather to die upon the Spot.

John Pizarro boldly carried on the Attack of the Citadel, and had gain'd all but the Towers; when it was late, being much fatigu'd with the Labour of the Day, he took off his Helmet, and that very Moment he receiv'd such a Blow on his Head, with
a Stone,

The HISTORY of *America*. 27

a Stone, that it stunn'd him, and he dy'd within a Fortnight.) The next Day *Ferdinand Pizarro* went with twelve Horsemen to the Assistance of those that were carrying on the Attack, leaving *Gabriel de Rojas* in his stead, to defend the City. *Ferdinand Sanchez* was one of the twelve that went with him, who applying a Ladder to one of the Towers, and covering himself with his Target, nimbly ran up, notwithstanding the many Stones cast at him, and leap'd in, others following his Example, gain'd the other Towers, above a thousand *Indians* being killed in this Action. Nor were they idle in this City, where *Gabriel de Rojas* was shot through the Nose into the Palate, and *Alonso de Toro* knock'd down with two Stones. The Citadel being gain'd, *John Ortiz* was put into it with fifty *Spaniards*. (At the same Time the Governour *Francis Pizarro* finding himself close besieg'd, and receiving Advice from several Parts that divers *Spaniards* had been kill'd in the Country, and that the Insurrection was general, fearing to be again drove out of the Country, sent Messengers to the Marquess *Cortes*, in *New Spain*, to the Council of *Hispaniola*, to *Guatemala*, *Nicaragua*, and other Parts, to demand speedy Succours, which came afterwards, but late, when the Danger was over. He sent out, as soon as possible, four Commanders at several Times, with Parties of *Spaniards*, who were all kill'd by the *Indians*, except eight or nine, whom *Mango* sav'd to serve him as Slaves; with them he took some Horses, Arms, Muskets, and several Commodities, and the *Indians* fought with those Weapons. Whilst they were thus pressed at *Cuzco*, *Ferdinand Pizarro*, committing the Charge of the City to *Gabriel de Rojas*, march'd out with seventy Horse, some Foot, and a Number of *Indians*, to *Tambo*, seven Leagues distant, in the Vale of *Yucay*, where the *Inga* resided. Being come near the Place, he routed some Parties of the *Indians*, who all fled, saving only

28 *The HISTORY of America.*

on'y two *Chiachiapoyas*, and they threw two Stones from the Wall, which broke an Horse's Fore-Leg, whereupon he flung and plung'd so furiously that the rest being disordered, were obliged to draw back to a Plain before the Gate of the Town, which so encouraged the *Indians* that they returned to the Charge in such Numbers, as put the *Spaniards* almost into Despair of saving their Lives; for at the same Time the Enemy turn'd the River that runs by that Place, upon them, so that the Horses were boggled, and the *Canibal Indians* pressed on, so that there was a great Slaughter of them, and those that sided with the *Spaniards*. At Night *Ferdinand Pizarro* retired with much difficulty, as frequently meeting with Bodies of Men, and being much perplexed with abundance of a Sort of Thorns or Thistles, called *Cabuyo*, that were thrown in the way, and lamed the Horses. When the Siege had lasted ten Months, they marched out for Provisions, and had a sharp Engagement, in which they took two Commanders, who informed them that the *Inga* designed to raise a greater Army the next Summer, in order to complete the Expulsion of the *Spaniards*, and above three hundred of them having been kill'd during the War, all their Heads were carried to the *Inga*, and one of the *Spaniards* he had in Custody.

DURING this Siege it had been the Custom for six Horsemen to go abroad once a Week, to scour the Country, and see whether there was any Relief from *Cuzco*. *Gonzalo Pizarro* going out in this Manner, with six chosen Horsemen, after routing many small Parties, near *Xaquixaguana*, discovered a great Multitude of *Indians*, and it being then the Custom with the *Spaniards* always to fall on, whether the Number of the Enemies were great or small, he did so, the *Indians* pressing forward in a most desperate Manner, so that the Horsemen were oblig'd to retire fighting, and yet

The HISTORY of *America*. 29

yet were so hard beset, that *Pizarro* was oblig'd to send one to his Brother for Relief, which came so opportunely, that it rescu'd those Men from certain Death, they and their Horses being quite spent, and the *Indians* despairing of Success, fled with Precipitation. Provisions growing very scarce in *Cuzco*, especially Flesh, *Gabriel de Rojas* (a very able Commander march'd out with seventy Horse, towards *Pomacanche*, a Province fourteen Leagues from the City, and returned with two thousand Head of Cattel: The *Indians*, who appear'd on the Hills, not daring to attack him. After him *Ferdinand Ponce* performed such another Expedition towards *Condesuyo*, as did *Gonzalo Pizarro*, who kill'd above a thousand *Indians*, and carried many Prisoners to *Cuzco*, who were all there set at Liberty, but several of them had one Hand cut off, which struck such a Terror among those People, that they durst not afterwards come down into the Plains, which gave an Opportunity to the friendly *Indians* to go abroad as there was Occasion, and the besieged were less streightned.) Provisions falling short again, *Gabriel de Rojas* marched with sixty Horse to *Xaquixaguana*, where there was much *Indian* Wheat, which he sent at several Times to *Cuzco*, under a Guard of six Horsemen. After that, returning himself, he was charged by a Body of *Indians*, who had several *Spanish* Swords, Muskets, and other Arms, and some Horses, all taken from *Spaniards* they had kill'd. A *Spaniard* that was their Prisoner, having saved his Life, taught them the use of those Weapons: *Rojas* would not suffer his Horsemen to pickeer as they were wont, but kept them in a Body whilst he sent to *Ferdinand Pizarro* for some Cross-bows and Pike-men, which being come, he pour'd in several Flights of Shafts, and then fell on with all his Horse, who soon put all those Barbarians to rout, whom he would not suffer to be far pursu'd, thinking it needless to shed the Blood
of

30 *The HISTORY of America.*

of the vanquish'd. Upon this Occasion some *Indians* were seen on Horseback, with Spears, behaving themselves with much Bravery, and shewing that they had been instructed by Christians.

THE Governour *Francis Pizarro*, being deliver'd from his Siege at *Lima*, as was said before, because the Horse in those Plains bore down the *Indians*, and the Mountain People had not their Health among the *Tungas*, that is, the Vales along the Sea Coast, he resolv'd to send a Body of Troops to *Cuzco*, from whence he could get no Intelligence, the Distance being an hundred and twenty Leagues, and the *Indians* intercepting all Messengers. Accordingly he assembl'd five hundred Men, and gave the Command of them to *Alonso de Alvarado*, ordering him to reduce the Country to Obedience as he went. *Alvarado* stay'd longer on the way than was convenient, which prov'd of very ill Consequence, as we shall see hereafter. Whilst he was on his march, *Ferdinand Pizarro* march'd out from *Cuzco* with eighty Horse, and some few Foot, thinking to surprize the *Inga* at *Tambo*, but arriving there at Break of Day, found Things in another Posture than he imagin'd, several Sentinels being posted in the Fields and on the Walls, with proper *Corps du Carde*, who giving the Alarm with loud Cries and Comets, above thirty thousand drew together, in good Order, waiting to make their Advantage of the *Spaniards*. It was surprizing to see some come forward with *Spanish* Swords, Targets, and Head-pieces, and some single Men arm'd after this Manner, were so bold as to attack an Horseman, thinking it an Honour to be kill'd with a Spear, to gain the Reputation of Bravery. The *Inga* himself was on Horseback among his Men. with a Spear in his Hand, keeping his Troops in a Body, close under the Town, which was fortify'd with a Wall, a River, good Trenches, and strong Ramparts, at certain Distances.

The HISTORY of *America*. 31

Ferdinand Pizarro considering that no good was to be done there, resolv'd to retire, which he did in good Order, the *Indians* pursuing and pressing hard upon him. In return for this Visit, the *Inga* sent twenty five thousand Men to make an Attack upon *Cuzco*, by the way of *Andesuyo*, (who did it with so much Resolution,) that they were upon the Point of entering the Town, wounded several *Spaniards*, had once taken *Peter Pizarro*, but he was rescu'd, and kill'd two Horses, after which they drew off. Another Party of them making an Attack by the way of *Carmenga*, one of them being taken, gave Intelligence, that the Captains *Gaete* and *James Pizarro*, sent by the Governour to the Relief of *Cuzco* with a small Party, had been cut off by the way. Among other Things that happen'd, during this Siege, the *Indians* (being very much bent upon burning the Church,) believing that if they could do it all the *Spaniards* would perish, cast abundance of red hot Stones out of Slings, and shot fiery Arrows, till the Covering being Thatch'd, as is there usual in the greatest Building, at length it took Fire, and it is certain that when once kindled there is no extinguishing of it, for which Reason they never attempted it; but all Men plainly saw that this Fire went out of itself, which both *Spaniards* and *Indians* looked upon as miraculous, and the latter were so much daunted, that they never after came on with their former Fierceness upon the City of *Cuzco*, but slackned and left the *Spaniards* more at Liberty and Ease.

C H A P.

C H A P. IV.

The Marques Del Valle Cortes upon the South Sea; Don Antonio de Mendoza, appointed Vice Roy of New Spain; what hapn'd at Santa Marta, and the River of Plate.

THE Marques *Del Valle Cortes*, was much offended at the Wrongs done him by *Nunno de Guzman*, and the more for that the Council at *Mexico*, neglected to do him Justice, and he could obtain no Answer to all the Letters he had writ to the King, whereupon, he resolv'd to raise Men, and go in Person to recover his Ship. Accordingly he sent three Ships he had fitted out, and march'd himself by Land towards *New Galicia*, with a Body of Horse and Foot; which Motion of his put *Nunno de Guzman* into such a Consternation, as well answer'd the Expence the Marques had been at. Being come to the Place where the Ship lay, he found it a Ground, and Plunder'd, the loss being computed at above twenty thousand Ducats. There the Marques embark'd with all the Men and Horses his Ships could carry, leaving *Andrew de Tapia* to command the rest, sailing away to the Country where *Fortun Ximenez* had been kill'd, and arriv'd at the high Mountains call'd of *St. Philip*, and an Island three Leagues from the Continent, which he nam'd *Santiago*. On the 3d of *May*, he enter'd the Bay, where the aforesaid *Ximenez* had been kill'd, which he call'd *Santa Cruzco*, being a safe Harbour against all Winds, lying in 23 Degrees and an Half of North Latitude. From that Place he sent for more Men and Horses, but the Weather

The HISTORY of *America*. 33

Weather proved so foul, that only the least Ships return'd. There the Marques stay'd many Days in great Want of Provision, for the Country afforded none, by Reason that the Natives were Savages, having no Houses, nor Tilling the Land, but only feeding upon Fruit, and the natural Product of the Fields, and such Game as they kill'd with their Arrows, Fishing at Sea on Floats made of five Pieces of Timber, the Middlemost longer than the rest, either serving for an Head. The other Ships not returning, the Marques went aboard that he had, with sixty Men, carrying all Necessaries for building a Ship, because there was no Timber in that Place. Having advanc'd fifty Leagues on the Coast of *New Spain*, one Morning he found himself among a Parcel of Rocks, so that he knew not how to get out, or which way he had come in. After plying about some time, they spy'd a Ship at Anchor two Leagues from them, but could not tell how to come at it, the Sea on all Sides breaking upon the Flats. The other Ship having descry'd them, the Pilot come aboard in his Boat, and pretending to steer the Marques's Ship, ran it aground, but the Sea threw it into the Channel, so leaky that all they could do was to save the Men and Goods; however they brought it a Shore, and working Day and Night, refitted and lanch'd it again. The Ship found there being one of those that belong'd to the Marques, had Plenty of Provisions, bought at *St Michael's* in the Province of *Culnacan*, eighteen Leagues to the Westward of that Harbour, where the Marques was, call'd *Guayabal*; and the Men gave an Account that the other Ship going to *Xalisco*, and having taken in much lading of *Indian* Wheat and other Provisions to return to the Marques, had met with a Storm, that bore down its Masts, so that it was drove ashore without any Sails, and Stranded, whereupon the Men went away by Land to *Mexico*, as

D

they

34 *The History of America.*

they design'd to do themselves, finding their Ship unfit for the Sea.

THE Marques caused it to be search'd, and to sail with the other, but it struck and beat off the Rudder, whereupon he Imbarked aboard the other to return to the Place where he had left the Men. Two Days after a Yard fell and kill'd the Pilot, and then the Marques himself took charge of the Ship, till he arriv'd where his Men were, whom he found ready to perish with Want, three or four being already Starv'd, for which Reason he ordered they should have Meat given them by Measure, lest they should eat too much, and four or five dy'd. The other Ships he expected not coming, and being informed that *Don Antonio de Mendoza* was come to be Vice-Roy of *New Spain*, the Marques left his Men in that Place with Provisions for above a Year, and sailing back for *Acapulco* met at several Times five of his own Ships, that were on their way to joyn him, and brought them all back to the aforesaid Port. There he receiv'd Advice of the Distress *Pizarro* was in at *Lima*, and the danger of losing that Kingdom, whereupon he immediately sent two of those Ships to his Assistance, under the Command of *Ferdinand de Grijalva*, with a good Number of Men well Arm'd, and a considerable Quantity of Muskets, Cross-Bows, Spears, seventeen Horses, sixty Coats of Mail, Linnen, Hangings, Silk Cushions, Canopies, Vestments, for the Service of the Church, and many other Necessaries, which tho they came after the Siege was rais'd at *Lima*, were very acceptable.

THE President *Don Sebastian Ramirez*, having Govern'd in *New Spain* for the Space of six Years, with much Justice and Moderation, and being desirous to return into his native Country, the King appointed *Don Antonio de Mendoza*, Brother to the Marques *De Mondejar*, Vice-Roy of that Kingdom, which Post many, with good Reason, thought ought to have

The HISTORY of America. 35

have been bestow'd on the Marquels *Del Valle*, who had perform'd such Wonders in the Conquest of it. The (new Vice-Roy was in the first Place charg'd to promote the Conversion of the *Indians*, and Propagation of the Christian Faith, taking Care in order to it, that the Service should be perform'd with the greatest Majesty and Decency, that the *Spaniards* should give good Example to the Natives, that vicious Persons should be severely punish'd, and scandalous Churchmen sent away into *Spain*. His other Instructions were, that he should visit all Parts of the Kingdom himself, or where that could not be, send Visitors of known Integrity; that he should preserve the Regal Patronage over all Churches and Monasteries, not permitting any Person whatsoever to enjoy such Right; that there should be a good Understanding between the Spiritual and Temporal Courts; that the People should be induc'd to contribute towards a free Gift to his Majesty; that the *Indians* should not be permitted to live idle, but apply themselves to Tillage, or other Employments; that in regard the want of Money in those Parts was a great Obstruction to commerce, a Mint should be erected, to Coin Silver and Copper, but no Gold; that special Care should be taken not to oppress the Natives in any Manner, but that they should be free; that no Arms should be sold to *Indians* or Blacks, nor they suffer'd to wear them; that no Churches or Monasteries should be built without leave. Many more Instructions there were for establishing that Government, the most of them according to the Laws and Customs of *Spain*, and not necessary to be taken Notice of in this History.

AT this Time the Adelantado of the *Canary Islands*, *Don Peter Fernandez de Lugo*, contracted with the King of *Spain* to carry over fifteen hundred Foot, and two hundred Horse, from *Spain*, and the *Canary Islands*, to conquer the Province of *Santa Marta*, ly-

36 The HISTORY of *America*.

ing between those of *Venezuela*, *Cabo de la Vela* and *Cartagena*. In pursuance to the said Contract he landed there this Year 1535, and having rested a Fortnight, sent to offer Peace to the People of *Bonda*, which they refusing to admit, he made ready to subdue them, having twelve hundred Men he had brought out of *Spain*, besides those he found in the Country. He marched from *Santa Marta*, and coming to *Bonda*, attack'd the Town, the Inhabitants standing upon their Defence, tho they had sent away their Wives and Children; but after a long Contest, they abandon'd the Place, having kill'd thirty *Spaniards*, through ill Management; for had that Affair been conducted as it ought, neither so many *Spaniards* had been lost, nor the *Indians* gone off as they did. Several Parties were afterwards sent abroad, but perform'd no Actions of Moment, whereupon the new Adelantado, or Governour, made all the necessary Dispositions for going up the River of *Santa Marta*, which being executed, in another Year shall be then taken Notice of, as shall the Expedition of *George Spire*, a *German*, in the Province of *Venezuela*.

AFTER the Encounter *Alonso de Herrera*, before spoken of, had at the River *Viapari*, with the *Indians*, who told him, that the Province of *Guayana* was behind, and that of *Meta* before him, he carried those *Indians*, who had given him that Information, as far as *Caburuto*, where he found the Country depopulated, by reason of the War with the *Canibals*, yet some Provisions were got, by means of the *Indians* he had with him. Being come to the Fall in the River, from whence *James de Ordas* had turn'd back, he caus'd the Vessels to be unladed, and with immense Labour had them drawn to the other Part where that River was again Navigable. Beyond that Fall they found large Plains, but abandon'd, and after several Days sail, came to the Mouth of the Creek of *Meta*. There seeing some Tokens of Dwellings, and being in want of Provi-

The HISTORY of America. 37

Provisions, they left their Vessels aground, well conceal'd among the Trees, marching through Morasses, with immense Labour, as carrying all they had on their Shoulders, till they came to higher Lands, and discover'd till'd Ground, and the Houses of the *Indians* called *Xagnas*, a war-like and bloody Nation, who seeing the *Spaniards*, sent their Wives and Children into the Woods, and advanc'd to meet their Enemies, well Arm'd with Darts, Lances, Macanas, and Shields, attacking the *Spaniards* with great Resolution, but after a short Engagement they fled, the *Spaniards* pursuing them to the Town, where, to their great Satisfaction, they found Provisions. Having rested there some Days, and their Sustenance beginning to fail, they were oblig'd to advance further, to find out some Place to Winter in, that Season drawing on. Marching on up the Country, they came to a River, which ten *Spaniards* swam over, with their Swords and Targets, and went on till they saw a large Town, returning then as they had been order'd, to give an Account of it, whereupon they made Floats, and all cross'd the River. The *Indians* immediately left the Town, and fled into the Woods; and the *Spaniards* found Corn, and other Provisions, as also dumb Dogs, by the *Indians* call'd *Mayos* and *Auries*, reckoning them a great Dainty. (Here they resolv'd to Winter, tho frequently molested by the *Indians*) who perceiving that the *Spaniards* design'd to stay there, and went out a Marauding, drew together from all Parts, thinking to surprize them. A Soldier that stood Centinel, at the Perswasion of a Women, who offer'd to do his Duty, quitted his Post, to go cut a little Wood, by which means the *Indians* were not discover'd, and fell upon the *Spaniards* unexpected, when many of them were abroad. The Commander *Alonso de Herrera* ran for his Horse, which as ill Fortune would have it, had been carry'd to Water, and he pressing

38 *The HISTORY of America.*

on for him, with Sword in Hand, receiv'd two Arrows, one in his Face, and the other in his Back, yet wounded as he was he mounted his Horse, and play'd his part courageously, as did all the other *Spaniards*, who tho' hard press'd by that Multitude, at length put their Enemies to Flight, and they going off, were met by the other *Spaniards* who were returning with Provisions, and made a great Slaughter of them; but coming to the Town found several of their Comrades wounded, three of them with poison'd Arrows, of which Number the Commander *Herrera* was one who died the 7th Day, to the great Grief of all his Men, because he was courteous and friendly to them all, brave as to his Person, and fit to manage any Enterprize.

Alvaro de Ordaz succeeding *Herrera* in the Command of these Men, assembled them all, asking their Advice how to proceed, considering the Difficulties they laboured under, the small Number of Horses they had, the Multitude of *Indians* they were to deal with, and the badness of the Ways and Weather, offering, if they were willing, to lead them, as far as they should think fit. The Resolution was to return to their Vessels, which was done without any Opposition, but being oblig'd for want to eat their Horses, the Fish they could get, and Herbs, till they came into the Sea, where the danger was no less, the Wind proving contrary, and blowing hard one of their four Vessels ran aground, and was lost, only the Men being sav'd with their Arms. To add to their Misery, they met Abundance of *Canibals*, whom tho' they defeated, it was with the loss of four Men, and being taken aboard the other three Vessels, they sail'd to *Paria*, where they found the Fort ruin'd and the Country abandon'd. However advancing, they met Captain *Nieto*, with three Brigantins sent by *Ferome de Orta*, to the Assistance of *Herrera*, which was a great Comfort

The HISTORY of *America*. 39

Comfort to the distressed, and *Nieto* was astonish'd to see those Men in such pitiful Plight, ragged, and consum'd with Hunger, and other Hardships, whereupon they all return'd to *Ferome de Ortal*, who then appointed *Augustin Delgado* to command instead of *Herrera*, ordering him to march to *Neveri*, and settle on the Banks of that River, which is two Leagues from *Maracagrana*. *Delgado*, pursuant to his Orders, began to build a strong House, to the great Regret of all his Men, who found nothing to be got in that Place, and suffer'd very much. Nevertheless he made an Incur-sion far into the Country, and after some Encounters with the *Indians* came into a District where there were many good Towns, and Plenty of Provisions, with the *Caziques*, whereof he contracted Friendship, making them Presents of red Caps, Knives, and other Things they valu'd, in return for which they gave him some Gold. Soon after a Party of Men sent by *Antony Sedenno* landed within the Government of *Ortal*, and surprizing some of his Men, disarm'd and stripp'd them, in return for which *Augustin Delgado*, fell upon them, and serv'd them in the same Manner.

ABOUT this Time *Francis de Montejo*, Adelantado, or Lord Lieutenant of the Province of *Yucatan*, having receiv'd no Succours, being continually press'd by the war-like Natives of that Country, and finding it yielded no Gold, abandon'd that Government, and went away to *New Spain*, in hopes that the new Vice-Roy there might put him into a Condition to retrieve his loss. Nor was it any better with *Andrew de Cereceda*, Controller of the Province of *Honduras*, who for like Reasons, quitted the City of *Truxillo*, and marching away with the Men that would follow him, was some Days after met by *Don Christopher de la Cueva*, who commanded a Party for *Don Pedro de Alvarado*, Adelantado of *Guatemala*, to find out a way to *Puerto de Cavallos*, for carrying on the Trade of that Pro-

40 The HISTORY of *America*.

vince. These two Commanders joynd their Forces, having sign'd Articles to act unanimously, which *Cerezeda*, a wicked Man, soon broke, and so they parted again, and those Provinces were left in the same Disorder as they had been before.

NONE having gone since the return of *Sebastian Gabor*, to subdue the mighty Provinces along the River of *Plate*, the King now granted that Government to *Don Peter de Mendoza*, upon Condition that he should find a way by Land to the *South-Sea*; that he should carry over a thousand Men, and an hundred Horses and Mares, with Provisions for a Year, at twice, without the King's being oblig'd to contribute towards that Expence, only allowing him two hundred Leagues in Length, towards the Streights of *Magellan* for his Government, with a Salary of two thousand Ducats a Year, during his Life, and two thousand Ducats free Gift, to be receiv'd out of the Profits of the Country. No sooner was this Enterprize nois'd abroad, than so many Men flock'd to be concern'd in it, that all possible Expedition was us'd to set out upon it. *Mendoza* accordingly sail'd from *San Lucar*, with eleven Ships, carry'd eight hundred good Men, and well equipp'd, and had a good Voyage; for those who are to sail for the River of *Plate*, should not set out after the Middle of *August*, in order to be there by the End of *November*, when the Summer begins in those Parts, and they have the Breezes at North, and N. E. and if they go later, they cannot enter the River after the Month of *March*, when the South and South-west Winds prevail, and oblige Ships to turn back to Winter at Port *Patos*, or in the Island of *St. Catherine*. He came to an Anchor at the Island of *St. Gabriel*, and discover'd a little River, on the other Side of the Island, towards the Streights of *Magellan*, where he began to found a Town, calling it *Nuestra Señora de Buenos Ayres*, or, Our Lady

The HISTORY of America. 41

Lady of good Air, on that Part of the Country call'd *Cabo Blanco*, or white Cape, where were none but *Canibal Indians*, who were always Enemies, and Cruel, as being barbarous Man-Eaters. The Provisions being insufficient for the Number of People, soon after their arrival, they were order'd to be allow'd only six Ounces a Man, which was their Sustenance, with Thistles, and other Herbs, so that the Allowance being short, and the Hardships many, they began to sicken and dye; for which Reason, the Governour who was himself indispos'd, order'd his Brother *Don James de Mendoza*, to march with a Party, to find *Indians* to furnish Provisions, who met with a Nation call'd *Quirandies*, dwelling in moveable Houses and Towns, like *Arabs*, with whom they encounter'd, and the *Indians* being very numerous and active, whereas the *Spaniards* were weak, kill'd *Don James de Mendoza*, and five more, taking hold of the Horses with Snares they carry'd, so that if the rest had not fled, and been supported by the Infantry, they had all perish'd. Next the Governour sent a Kinsman of his own, with four Ships, to discover certain Islands, where he had been told there were *Indians*, who spent so much Time in seeking those Islands, from one River to another, that the Allowance was reduc'd to three Ounces, so that the third Part of the Men aboard, being about sixty in all, dy'd, and they must have all starv'd, had it not been for some *Indians*, among whom they found *Indian Wheat* to support them till they return'd to *Buenos Ayres*, where the scarcity was so great, that many kept their dead Comrades three or four Days, that they might receive their Allowance, saying, they were sick, and others eat human Flesh, two Men that had been Executed, being devour'd from the Waste downward. The distress being so great, the Governour order'd *John de Ayolas* to sail with three Ships, and ninety Men in each of them, to look out for Provisions, and each Ship having but one Pipe of Meal, they

42 *The HISTORY of America.*

they were reduc'd to eat Herbs, Snakes, Alligators, Mice, and other Vermin, whereof many sickn'd and dy'd.

IT was now the Year 1536. when *Ayolas* ranging about, came to a Lake, where he found some *Indian* Fishermen of the Nations of *Tambues* and *Carares*, who came in a peaceable Manner, whereupon the Soldiers were order'd to sit down, with their Weapons in their Hands, that the *Indians* might not perceive their Weakness. Those *Indians* brought some Fish and *Indian* Wheat, which was a great Comfort, and therefore the Men repair'd to their Houses, and took up their Quarters in one of them. *Ayolas* having got a good Quantity of Provision, which the Natives freely furnish'd by way of Barter, return'd to *Buenos Ayres*, promising his Men he wou'd be with them again within forty Days, and giving them leave, in case he did not, to march into the Country where they should think fit. Those *Spaniards*, who were left there having made Huts or Barracks, apart from the *Indians*, were reduc'd to very great Streights for want; when one *Gonzalo Romero* of the Number of those that had been left there by *Sebastian Gabor* came to them, and said, the Inland Country was very rich, and had good Towns, upon which Advice, they thought fit, since *Ayolas* did not return, within the limited Time, and they were somewhat recruited, to advance into those Parts. When they were upon the Point of setting out *Don Peter de Mendoza*, arriv'd there in such distress, that two hundred of his Men had dy'd with Hunger, so that both *Spaniards* and *Indians* were forc'd to Fish and take Pains to live; and the *Spaniards* then beginning to be enur'd to the Food of the Country, the Captains advis'd *Don Peter* to settle another Colony four Leagues below that Place where they were. However, they were divided among themselves, some for going to find the Country *Gonzalo Romero* told them of, and others for proceeding on the River *Paraguay*. Amidst
this

this Confusion, *Don Peter de Mendoza*, being very sick, resolv'd to go back to *Buenos Ayres*, in order to return into *Spain*, taking the sick along with him, and leaving the Treasurer *Alvarado* to command in that Place, which was call'd *Buena Esperanza*, or Good Hope, and ordering *John de Ayolas* with three Brigantines to make Discoveries on the River *Paraguay*. When *Mendoza* and *Ayolas* were gone, those that remain'd suffer'd so much, that they were forc'd to return to the Place where they had been before; *Ayolas* sailing up the River in great Want, because his Vessels were heavy, and could not fetch up the Canoes they saw. Here the Weather growing very foul they lost one of their three Vessels, but the Men were sav'd, and so they proceeded till they came into the Country of the *Ameguaes*, who supply'd them with a good Quantity of Fish and Canoes to carry the Men that march'd by Land. Thence they advanc'd to the Province of the *Carioes*, in other Parts of the *West-Indies* call'd *Caribes*, who met the *Spaniards* in a friendly Manner, giving them a great Quantity of *Indian* Wheat, Batatas, Fowl, and other Provisions, by way of Barter; and thus reliev'd they went on about an hundred Leagues to the *Payaguaes*, where they also found good Entertainment, and having rested some Days *Ayolas* thought fit to march up the Country, with an hundred and thirty of his own Men, and some of those *Payaguaes* assign'd him by their Chief, ordering *Dominick de Irala* to expect him there, with forty Men and the Brigantines, till he return'd.

IN the mean Time *Don Peter de Mendoza*, sent Captain *John de Salazar* with the Ships and eighty Men after the said *Ayolas*, from *Buenos Ayres*, where they began to live something better, necessity having taught them to Fish, Hunt, and find out Roots. Captain *Salazar* being come to *Buena Esperanza*, proceeded from thence at the Beginning of the Year 1537, in Quest of *Ayolas*, as far as the Territories of the *Carioes*,

44 *The HISTORY of America.*

vices, where he built a strong House, and gave it the Name of the *Assumption*. Whilst he was on this Expedition, the Governour *Don Peter de Mendoza*, went away for *Spain*, leaving Captain *Francis Ruyz* to command at *Buenos Ayres*, till Captain *Ayolas* return'd from his Discoveries. *Don Peter* dying at Sea, the King confirm'd *Ayolas* in that Government, and sent him Supplies of Men, Arms, and Provisions, of all which more shall be said hereafter.

The End of the Second Book.

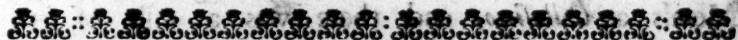




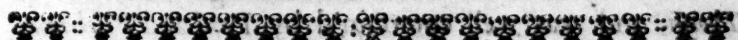
THE General HISTORY

Of the vast CONTINENT and ISLANDS of

AMERICA, &c.



DECAD. IV. BOOK III.



CHAP. I.

The march of Almagro into the Kingdom of Chile ; two Commanders follow him with Recruits ; of the snowy and the burning Mountains, and of the Earthquakes in Peru and Chile.



He left the Adelantado, or Lord Lieutenant, *Don James de Almagro*, marching towards the Kingdom of *Chile* about the beginning of the Year 1536, the High-Priest *Vilehoma* and *Paul Topa Inga* having been sent before to keep the Natives in Quiet, because no Spaniards had been yet in those Parts. Whilst they waited at *Topisa*, the Capital Town of the *Chichas*,

46 The HISTORY of America.

richas, the three *Spaniards* sent with them by *Almagro*, and two others that had joyn'd them, exceeded their Orders, advancing as far as the Province of *Xutui*, believing they should find good Entertainment, as they had till then, for the sake of *Paul*, and hoping to gain favour with *Almagro* for having discover'd the Country; but they pay'd for their Presumption, for the *Indians* seeing so small a Number of Strangers, resolv'd to kill them, as they did, tho three of them sold their Lives very dear, and the other two flying, were sav'd by the Fame of the Army that was advancing. *Almagro* had at this Time march'd thro' the Countries of the *Canches*, the *Cannas*, and the *Col-las*, and been inform'd, that there were great Mines of Metals at *Collasuyo*, and there was a talk of settling there, but he said that Country was too small for so many Men of Worth. At length he arriv'd at *Topisa*, and was well entertain'd by *Paul* and *Vilehoma*, who gave him ninety thousand Pieces of Eight in fine Gold, of the Tribute brought thither from *Chile*, and inform'd him of the Death of the three *Spaniards*; he reprov'd the others that had escap'd, and dismiss'd several Lords to return to their own Homes. Soon after his arrival at *Topisa*, the High-Priest *Vilehoma* fled, in the Night, with some Men and Women, returning to *Collao* by ways unknown to the *Spaniards*, and being every where entertain'd, attended, and concealed, on Account of his Dignity, his Return, whilst the Troubles were at *Cuzco*, encouraging the *Indians* in their Revolt. Some *Spaniards* and *Tanacunas* were sent after him the next Day, but in vain; however, they were inform'd that in his way, he had perswaded the Natives to have recourse to Arms, for recovering of their Liberty, representing the *Spaniards* as easily to be cut off by Reason of their small Number, and the People were well enough inclin'd to take his Advice, but that they dreaded the Horses, and
were

The HISTORY of *America*. 47

were daunted at the Sight of *Almagro's* Forces, which were so well accouter'd, and made a fine Appearance, the Fame of their Valour being before spread throughout all the Country.

Almagro, when he mis'd *Vilehoma*, ask'd *Paul Topa*, why he had not given him Notice of his Design, who answer'd, That he never knew any thing of it, which might be credited, because he was very young, and well inclin'd; however, lest he should happen to do the like, he order'd him to be guarded, and treated with much Respect. Captain *Salzedo* was then sent with sixty Horse and Foot to chastise the *Indians* that had kill'd the three *Spaniards*, but they had fortify'd themselves in such manner, that he could not come at them, whereupon more Men being sent him, under the Command of *Francis de Chaves*, the besieg'd sally'd, and fell upon the *Yanaconas* belonging to the latter, slew many of them, and carry'd off his Baggage, flying with all Speed along uncooth Ways, for fear of the Horsemen. *Almagro* having been joyn'd by some *Spaniards* from *Cuzco*, and given the Natives all Satisfaction, desiring they would be kind to such as should follow him that way, march'd on to joyn *Salzedo* and *Chaves* at *Xuxuy*, where he stay'd two Months, to pick up all that daily resorted to him. The Forces marching from thence advanc'd as far as *Chaquana*, where the Natives were in an Uproar, for which Reason the Captains *Salzedo* and *Chaves*, were order'd to scour the Vale of *Arruya*, with a Troop of Horse, which prov'd of good use, for the People being amaz'd at the Swift-ness of the Horses, dispers'd; however, being recover'd of their Fright, they assembl'd some Days after, in greater Numbers, swearing by the high and powerful Sun, that they would either dye, or destroy them all; sending out several Parties at the same Time, to cut off the Blacks and *Yanaconas*, that went for Wood, Straw, and other Necessaries; and because they

48 *The History of America.*

they did some Mischief, *Almagro* march'd against them, and they kill'd his Horse. Going out again with fifty Horse, he found the Towns abandon'd, the Inhabitants only shewing themselves on the Tops of the Mountains, crying and howling after an hideous Manner.) He left *Coaquana*, dismissing the Lords of the Province of *Paria*, to return to their own Homes, having with him two hundred Horse, and above three hundred Foot, besides many *Indians* carrying the Baggage, and guarded by the cruel *Tanacunas* and Blacks, who us'd them so ill, that many dy'd by the Way, for which the Commanders were much to blame. (After some Days march through the Country, the Forces arriv'd at that which they call'd *Chile*, in much want of Provisions, saw a small Fort, and tho Plain, the Land seem'd to be barren. Some Horse were commanded out to bring in Provisions, which falling very short, and being inform'd that they were to march some Days thro' a Desert, they were very much cast down. *Almagro*, to encourage them, order'd some Sheep and Swine that remain'd to be distributed, and exhorted the Officers, Gentlemen and Soldiers, to be of good Courage amidst their Sufferings, which martial Men were always expos'd to, and the more, for that Honour and Interest were not to be gain'd without Difficulty. They all chearfully answer'd, that they would follow him, and bear with all that should happen; from which Time the Provisions were more cautiously distributed. (Seven Days they march'd thro' Lands of Salt-Peter, Dismal and Barren, Hunger pressing, because the many Servants they had with them, consum'd the Provisions, and coming out of a Break, discover'd vast snowy Mountains, running a great Length, which were of necessity to be cross'd, without knowing the Extent of them; and the *Indians* said, there was much more Snow than what appear'd, which would have daunted

The HISTORY of America. 49

ted any other People) that had not been, like them, enur'd to attempt such desperate Enterprizes, undergoing the greatest Hardships, and labouring at all sorts of Employments, from which when Occasion requir'd, the prime Officers and best Gentlemen were not exempted.

Almagro, who always endeavour'd to content his Soldiers, and was much concern'd at their Sufferings, being sensible of the Perplexity they were in, went before with a good Body of Horse, to pass the Mountains, and see whether he could find Provisions to relieve the Forces. Being come to the Passes, nothing was to be seen but deep Snow, and it then fell very thick, so that he endur'd very much that Day, till he came to some small Huts, where his Men stay'd that Night, very cold. Nor was their Fatigue less the next Day, the Wind blowing hard, and the Snow beating in their Eyes, besides they found, that from the Top of the Mountain there were twelve-Leagues to the Vale of *Copayapo*; however, the next Day they reach'd that Vale, where they were well receiv'd, and supply'd with Provisions, which he desir'd the *Indians* to carry to his Forces, and they readily comply'd, carrying Sheep, Lambs, Wheat, and Roots. The Troops being got into the Snow, were in great Perplexity, the *Indians* complaining against those who had brought them out of their Countries, into such Distress, and the *Spaniards* comforting and helping them with much Compassion, because they were not able to move thro' Weakness, and if they stood still were frozen to Death. (In short, many dy'd with cold; there was no Wood to make Fire, and the Air was so sharp that it stifled them, and what was worst, at Night, there was no shelter. In short, thirty Horses perish'd, many *Indian* Blacks expir'd, leaning against the Rocks, and Hunger prevail'd so far, that the living *Indians* eat the dead, and the *Spaniards* would

50 The HISTORY of *America*.

willingly have eaten the Horses, but that, if they stopp'd, they were frozen to Death, and a Black who led an Horse, halting on Account of some Cries he heard, they were both starv'd. At last, when quite spent, they began to spy the good Countty, and passing the Word from one to another, all took Heart, especially when they saw the *Indians* bringing them Provisions. When come into the Vale they all soon recover'd.) The Lord of that Place was a Youth, who upon his Father's Death had been recommended, together with the Government to a great Man, who was his Relation, and not only usurp'd the Lordship, but endeavour'd to destroy him; but the loyalest of his Subjects having conceal'd him, as soon as the *Spaniards* came into the Vale, he apply'd to them for Assistance against the Usurper. *Almagro* having examin'd into that Affair, and found him in the Right, restor'd him to his Estate. (Three *Spaniards* who had Ignorantly advanc'd before the rest, pass'd through many Parts, finding good Entertainment, till they came into a Vale, the Lord whereof was call'd *Marcondai*, who after a kind Reception, kill'd them and their Horses, when they were asleep, burying all privately, after which he fell to sacrificing, dancing, and drinking to Excess, with his People; *Almagro* always asking for these three Men, and being told, that they went before. Departing from *Copayapo*, in three Days he came to the aforesaid Vale, was well receiv'd and furnish'd with Provisions and all other Necessaries; but the *Yanaconas* searching about for other Things, found some Remains of those that had been slain.) Being come from thence to the Vale of *Quimbo*, *Almagro* order'd inquiry to be made into that Affair, and Captain *James de Vega*, who was in the Rear, to secure *Mercondai* and his Brother, and to send some *Spaniards* to *Copayapo* to seize the young Man's Relation, that had usurp'd his Dominion, and both

The HISTORY of America. 51

both of them to be conducted to *Quimbo*, where he caus'd twenty seven of the prime Men to be burnt for the Murder of the aforesaid three *Spaniards*, without hearing what they had to say for themselves, which was very unjust, and look'd upon as an extraordinary Cruelty.)

Almagro, at his setting out from *Cuzco* left *Roderick Orgonnez* there to pick up what Men he could, and follow him, which he did with a few *Spaniards*, and Blacks for their Servants, being well entertain'd till they came into the Province of *Topisa*, where wanting Provisions, and going out to furnish themselves, they met with arm'd *Indians*, who kill'd four of them, which made them proceed on their Way in much Distress. At *Chequana* they found better Accommodation, and took store of Provision, having been inform'd of the Passage over the snowy Mountains, where the Cold was so excessive, that it kill'd most of the Blacks and *Indians*. *Orgonnez* himself helping to set up his Tent at Night, the Snow fell, and the very Nails came off his Fingers, two other *Spaniards* escap'd little better, and two others were bury'd in the Snow, with their Blacks, *Indians* and Horses. At length in four Days they made their way thro', with the loss of twenty six Horses, all their Furniture, and most of their Baggage, all which was not valu'd for the Satisfaction of being out of that Misery. The Lord of *Copayapo*, in Gratitude for the favour shew'd him by *Almagro*, sent several *Indians* laden with Provisions to meet them, which reviv'd their Spirits, but they were forc'd to halt some Days in that Vale, to recover Strength, the *Indians* being very kind to them.

John de Rada, who had been sent by *Almagro* to *Lima*, meeting there with *Ferdinand Pizarro*, after his return from *Spain*, earnestly solicited him to put into his Hands the Dispatches he had brought from the King

52 The HISTORY of *America*.

for the said *Almagro*, but the *Pizarros* having no good Intentions towards him, delay'd delivering the same from Day to Day, till at last *Ferdinand* being importun'd, promis'd he should have them at *Cuzco*, which was accordingly perform'd, the design having been to gain Time. *Rada* then set out from that City, to follow *Amagro*, and coming to *Chile*, found he had eighty *Spaniards*, Horse and Foot, well Arm'd and Accoutred in all Points, with sufficient Servants. The *Indians* having every where convey'd away their Provision, those Men suffer'd very much, which oblig'd their Commander to send out two Parties a marauding, one of which by the Industry of the *Yanaconas* found a considerable Quantity of Corn in a Cave, and the other brought a Flock of Sheep, which being spent, with much Difficulty and Danger, another supply was procur'd, and then *Rada* went to give *Orgonez* Advice, that he was marching to joyn him, desiring he would send some Provisions to meet him on the snowy Mountains. *Orgonez* did so, and by that means He and his Men pass'd those dismal Ways better than the others had done before.

There being often Occasion to speak of these and such like dreadful Passes of Mountains, it will not be improper to say something concerning them. It is certain that different Airs have no less different Effects upon Bodies, not only of Plants, but of Animals, and even upon Iron, the hardest of all Metals, for in some Parts of the *West-Indies*, Iron Bars have been seen so eaten by the Air, that they would moulder away between the Fingers. It is well known, that those who are not accusom'd to it, are generally Sea-sick, when they go to Sea, which is occasion'd by the watry Air which they are not us'd to, tho' the Motion of the Ship, and the smell of Pitch and Tar may add something to it; and this same Effect is seen on the Mountain of *Pern*, call'd *Periacaca*, for all

The HISTORY of America. 53

all that pass over it are troubled with extraordinary Qualms and Vomiting, till they come into a better Air, the same happening all along that Ridge of Mountains, for the Space of five hundred Leagues; and the only Remedy against it is to stop the Mouth, Nostriis, and Ears, and to keep the Stomach warm, because the Air is so cold, that it penetrates into the very Bowels. Something of the same Nature happens to Beasts, which are sometimes benumm'd to such a Degree, that they cannot stir. Those who have pretended to dive into this Secret, do believe that to be one of the highest Places in the World, which occasions the Air to be so thin, as not to be proportion'd to Man's breathing, as requiring a thicker Air. The Cold on the Mountains in *Spain*, is outwardly painful to the Hands and Feet and requires good cloathing on the Body; but that in the *West-Indies*, tho not so smarting to the Hands or Feet, operates on the Bowels, as being more piercing than sensible, for which Reason that Ridge of Mountains is not inhabited, nor do any other Beasts breed there, besides the *Vicunas*, which have been before spoken of, and the Grass is always parch'd. This Desert extended between twenty and thirty Leagues. There are other Deserts call'd *Punas*, where the Air insensibly consumes the vital Spirits, for which Reason, tho the *Spaniards* at first went over the Mountains into the Kingdom of *Chile*, they have since gone by Sea, or close along the Coast, to avoid the Danger of the Mountain Way, where so many have perish'd, and those who had the good Fortune to escape, were some of them maim'd and disabl'd by the Air, which tho not fierce, is so piercing that Men drop down dead insensibly, or else their Fingers or Toes drop off without any Pain. Thus when *Almagro* pass'd, the dead Bodies lay about extended, without any Corruption, or ill Scent; and long after, a Boy was found there alive, who had

54 *The History of America.*

hid himself in a Cottage, whence he us'd to go out to cut off some of the Flesh of a dead Horse, on which he liv'd, some Comrades he had at first doing so too, till th y all dy'd one by one, and he said he did not care to depart the Place, but die there, as the rest had done, because he had no Inclination to go any whither, or take any Satisfaction. Another who was passing over those Deserts, being oblig'd to stay there at Night, heap'd up the dead Bodies to shelter him against the Wind; all which shews that Cold to be so penetrating, that it overcomes the vital Heat, and being extremely dry does not Corrupt the dead Bodies, Putrefaction proceeding from Heat and Moisture.

THIS Country is remarkable for many burning Mountains, and being subject to Earthquakes. The hot Exhalations rising within the Bowels of the Earth, seem to be the principal Occasion of the former; for those setting Fire to the grosser Matter produce the Flame, Smoke, and Eruptions, and finding no way out, shake the Earth, and make a dreadful Noise, till being reinforc'd by the Air, that Fire rends the very Rocks. (These Earthquakes are most frequent towards the Sea, and it has been observ'd, that the greatest Earthquakes have happen'd between *Chile* and *Quito*, being a thousand Leagues in Length. In *Chile* there was one, that overturn'd Mountains, and turn'd Rivers into Lakes, by stopping their Current, destroy'd whole Towns, killing abundance of People, the Sea broke in for some Leagues, and many affirm, that the Shock was felt three hundred Leagues along the Coast. A few Years after happen'd the Earthquake at *Arequipa*, which almost laid the City in Ruins. In the Year 1586 happen'd that at *Lima*, which ran along the Coast an hundred and seventy Leagues, and fifty up the Inland. Before the Earthquake a dreadful Noise was heard, which provid a good Warning, for the

The HISTORY of *America*. 55

the People ran out into the Streets, Squares, and open Places, and tho it threw down the principal Structures in the City, not above twenty Persons perish'd, and soon after the Earthquake ceas'd, the Sea had the same Motion, as has been mention'd in *Chile*, running furiously almost two Leagues up the Country, and rising twelve Fathoms. The *Indians*, being us'd to Earthquakes, in many Parts built their little Houses with Clay, looking upon it as less dangerous than Brick and Stone. The next Year there was another great Earthquake at *Quito*, and in short, all that Coast is subject to that Calamity, instead of the Thunder and Lightning there is on the Mountains.) The reason why the maritime Countries are subject to these Earthquakes, seems to be, because the Water stops up the Pores, and openings of the Earth, through which it should discharge the hot Exhalations ingender'd in it, and the Moisture condens'd on the Superficies of the Earth, by the Drought of the Sun and Air, drives back the hot Vapours, till taking Fire, they burst out. Some are of Opinion, that when wet Years follow two that have been very dry, there ensue such Earthquakes. In the Year 1581, among the *Chiachapoyas* and at *Chuquiabo*, on a sudden a Piece of the Mountain fell upon a great Part of the Town of *Angoango*, killing many *Indians*, and the Earth that fell ran a League and an Half, choak'd up a Lake, and lay flat for all that Space.

C H A P. II.

Of the Atunlunas, Tindarunas, and Mitayos, of the Tributes and personal Service ; the Description of the Province of Quito.

IT is convenient before we proceed any farther, as we have before declar'd what the *Orejones Miti-maes* and *Yanaconas* were, to explain some Particulars that occur in this History. The *Spaniards* who had given them in Commendam, abusing the former Institution of *Yanaconas*, whom they had discharg'd from their State of Servitude, reduc'd into that Condition such others as were most for their Advantage, as Husbandmen, Handycrafts, and idle Persons, who serv'd sometimes one and sometimes another ; so that the paying all Tributes and Duties fell upon the *Atunlunas*. These Men, under the *Ingas*, became Tributaries at twenty five Years of Age, and so continu'd till fifty, not being oblig'd to pay before or after ; but the Number of *Indians* being decreas'd, they since pay from sixteen to sixty, the Wife bearing as much of the Burthen as the Husband ; because the Women spin and weave Cloth, and help to Till the Land, and perform other Labours. He that has no Wife is call'd *Guacha*, and is hard put to it to pay his Tribute. The *Mitayos Tindarunas*, are Tributary *Indians*, the *Curacas*, or native Lords have set apart to hire them out to work in the Mines, build Houses, and the like, and these are none of their Favourites ; for *Tindarunas* signifies Men that are under Compulsion. These they furnish to serve in their *Mitas*, or Turns, for the Space of two Months, or longer, according to the Custom of every Country. They are call'd *Mi-*

The HISTORY of *America*. 57

ayos, and the Magistrates of every *Spanish* Town order the *Curacas* of their District, to send each of them as many *Indians* as is usual, according to the Extents of their Lordships, to the Market-Place; for the aforesaid Employments, and to look after the Cattel and Harvest. At the City of *Lima*, they give every one of these *Tomayos* a Tomin, and a Quarter of a Peck of Wheat a Day. At *Los Charcas* and *Potosi*, because the Country is richer and dearer, they give two *Tomines* a Day; and at *Quito* they were wont to give six *Tomines* a Month, without Diet. This use of *Mitayos* was brought up, when the King order'd personal Service to be abolish'd, so that they are now pay'd for their Labour, which then they were not. In the Territory of *Guayaquil*, there are *Indians* call'd *Choros*, who carry on their Floats, on the River *Doule*, all sorts of Goods to *Quito*, and other neighbouring Parts, and they cannot work ashore.

WHEN the *Ingas* subdu'd those Provinces, they made Roads thro' them for promoting of Commerce, and for the more Conveniency of Travellers, built *Tambos*, that is Houses, with several Appartments, at every four Leagues distance, or less, to entertain Passengers, ordering the next Towns to place *Indians* there to serve them, with all sorts of Provisions, and every *Curaca* was appointed the Number of *Indians* he was to furnish, who were reliev'd in their *Mitas* or Turns, and therefore call'd *Mitayos*. These supply'd every Traveller with what he had occasion for, by way of Barter, all of them carrying something of what their Country afforded; the Soldiers and Messengers of the *Ingas* had also what they wanted at those *Tambos*. (Besides all those already mention'd, there were *Tamemes*, that is, Porters to carry Burdens.) Another sort of *Mitayos* are oblig'd to furnish Necessaries for Repairing of Bridges and High-Ways, as they were in the Days of the *Ingas*. As to the Tributes, or Taxes, they

are

58 *The History of America.*

are every where moderate, and receiv'd in such Things as the Country produces, and every Person is able to afford. (The personal Service was an unjust Usurpation among the first Conquerors, who were too intent upon their own Advantage and Authority, and on that Account would have brought those People into a sort of Servitude) which the Kings of *Spain* have entirely abolish'd, leaving the *Indians* as free as any of their other Subjects.

I have been said before that *Sebastian de Belalcazar*, founded the City of *Santiago de Guayaquil*, after which his chief Care was to improve that of *St. Francis de Quito*, of which Province this will be a proper Place to give some Account. On the North it extends to *Carusama*, which belongs to the Government of *Papayan*; on the South to *Tiquizambi*, the Boundary of the City of *Cuenca*; on the East to *New Bacza* in the Province of the *Quivos*, and on the West to *Puerto Viejo*, and the Foot of the Mountain being the Marth Land of the South-Sea. The Climate of *Quito* is rather Cold than Hot, insomuch that they sometimes keep Fires in Winter. The Air is clear and serene, the Sun rising and setting very bright, never clouded, but only when it Rains. The Winter is from *October* to *March*, during which Months it commonly Rains, but never Snows, except only on some particular Tops of the Ridge of Mountains. Thus the Country is healthy, and the People live longer there than in *Spain*. In the Year 1558, the Small-Pox occasion'd a great Mortality among the *Indians*; but generally both *Spaniards* and *Indians* dye of Colds or Defluations, at the Beginning and End of the Summer. The chief Medicine here for the Pox and for great Colds is *Zarzaparilla* and *Guayacan*, and it is rare that any one misses of a Cure that drinks the Juice of the said *Zarzaparilla* when fresh. The City of *Quito* is seated at the Foot of the Ridge of Mountains

The HISTORY of America. 59

Mountains that rises at *Puerto Viejo*, on the Coast of the South-Sea, and runs Northward almost to the City of *Cartagena*; to the Eastward of it is the great Ridge of Mountains that runs to *Chile* Southward, and to *Santa Marta*, Northward. On the other Ridge, that lies to the Westward, one League from *Quito*, is one Head above all the rest, being a burning Mountain, that often Smokes, and sometimes makes a great Noise, and casts out Ashes; and on the 17th of *October*, 1566, it cast out Ashes, as if it had been Snow, from two of the Clock in the Afternoon, till ten the next Morning, the Quantity that fell in the City, and its Territory being so great, that it cover'd all the Grass in the Fields, which occasion'd some Cattel to dye, and the rest suffer'd much till the Rain fell. Thirty Days after it, such a Darkness of Clouds hung over the City, passing away to the Eastward, that it put the *Indians* into so great a Consternation that they fled to the Hills, with dismal Cries and Lamentations, saying, the universal Dissolution was come. The Land between the two Mountains is good, fit for riding, tho there are some rising Grounds, yet it was hard to get Stone for building; and at first they made Lath and Plaister Walls, afterwards they found a Quarry of Stone. In the Mountain to the Eastward much Gold has been, and is still found, tho now less, because it is forbid to make the *Indians* work. In the Territory of a Town call'd *Mira*, fifteen Leagues from the City, belonging to the Cazique *Otabalo*, there are Springs of Salt Water, of which they make a sort of grey and bitter Salt, valu'd by the *Indians*; but the *Spaniards* carry theirs from the Sea, as was done in the Time of the *Incas*.

GOOD Gunpowder is made there, and they have Plenty of Saltpetre, occasion'd by the Dampness coming from the Rivers, which in this District are as follows. The River *Guayaquil* has its Springs on the great Ridge

60 *The HISTORY of America.*

Ridge of Mountains to the Eastward, is joyn'd by several others, and is a League and an Half wide at the Mouth, when it falls into the South Sea. The great River of the *Magdalen* has its rise above *Timana*, on the Eastern Ridge of Mountains, runs away to the Northward, till it is lost in the North Sea, near the Town of *Santa Marta*, and near the Source of this River a Branch strikes off from the Mountain, which stretches away near this great River Westward, where the *Paezes* and the *Pijaos* have their Dwellings. The River *Cauca* has its Original in the Western Part of the Province of the *Coconucos*, nine Leagues from *Popayan*, keeps its Course on the West Side of the aforelaid Western Branch of the great Mountain, and falls into *Rio Grande*, nine Leagues below the City *Mopox*, which is in the Government of *Cartagena*. The River call'd *De los Cedros*, or of Cedar Trees, rises in the Territory of *Quina*, appertaining to the City of *Pasto*, at the Foot of the great *Cordillera*, or Ridge of Mountains, having run nine Leagues, is joyn'd by the River *Mayo*, or of *May*, which crosses the Vale of *Putia*, cuts thro' the Western *Cordillera*, or Ridge, and falls into the South Sea, at a Mouth, a League wide. There are also the Rivers of *St. John*, of the *Paripazes*, of the *Piles*, and of *Buenaventura*, all falling into the South Sea, besides nineteen other Rivers, and many Brooks that fall into those already mention'd; and all of them are generally rapid Streams, especially that of *Cauca*. The great River of the *Magdalen* is Navigable for two hundred Leagues, almost as far as *Tocayma*, those of *Cauca*, *Cedros*, *Buenaventura*, and *Guayaquil* are some of them Navigable in Canoes, others in Floats. They commonly swell in *October*, *November*, *January*, and *February*, by Reason of the Rains; their Water is thin, and good to drink, but the Shores are not inhabited. At *Anciqueto*, half a League from the City of *Quito*, is a Lake

The HISTORY of *America*. 61

a Lake a Quarter of a League in Compass, in which there are Geese, Herons, and other Fowl. Ten Leagues from the City, near to *Orabalo*, on the Top of an Hill, is a very deep Lake, a League about; and close by *Orabalo*, is another two Leagues and an Half about. (In the Territory of *Carangue*, is the Pool call'd) *Yagualcocha*, signifying Sea of Blood, where *Guaynacapa* made the great Slaughter of the *Pastos*, tore out fifty thousand of their Hearts, and shed so much Blood that the Lake was dy'd as has been said in speaking of the *Ingas*.

In the hot Part of the Country in this Province, there is a sort of Fruit, call'd *Gnaba*, two Spans long, the hind grey, and within it are Seeds or Kernels, with a white Pulp, sweet and cooling. There are *Guayabos*, that produce Fruit like Apples, with many Kernels, some white and some red, well tasted and wholesome. The Plantans have the Relish of dry Figs, but eaten green their Taste cannot be ascertain'd. *Spanish* Fruit thrives well, but will not keep, for it soon rots. Vines thrive well in some Places, but not in others, and there is always Grass, higher in the hot Parts, than in the Cold, and withers in Summer. There is also much Wheat, Barley, and Maiz, and abundance of Cows, Horses, Sheep, and Swine, the Climate being very proper for them. The Turtle Doves, Sparrows, and other Birds, as also the Deer, do much harm to the Corn. The wild Beasts are Tygers, Leopards, Boars, and Bears. (Of the Country Sheep there are but few, because the *Indians* generally load them; but there are abundance of *Abras*, or *Gallinazas*, a sort of large Crows, very useful for cleansing the Land; and in the Spring there are Multitudes of Swallows, Vulturs, Eagles, Hawks, Partridges, and other Birds, as Turkeys, Pheasants, a sort of Back Birds like those we call by that Name; but the Rivers yield little Fish, for which

Reason

62 *The HISTORY of America.*

Reason they have it from the Sea. Within the District of this City there are small Snakes, Lizards, Scorpions, and Vipers, in the hotter Part, but not very Venomous. In the River *Guayaquil* there are infinite Alligators, and they sleep so sound, when they come ashore to that Purpose, that they do not awake, tho' a Musket be fir'd at them; it is easy to kill them by wounding their Fore-Leg, or Gullet, but if touch'd in any other Part, they run into the Water, and all the rest take the Alarm: Whence it is concluded, that they take the Report of a Gun to be Thunder; they are very Mischievous, and have done much harm among *Spaniards* and *Indians*. A *Spaniard* washing his Hands in a River, an Alligator struck him on the Neck with his Tail, which made him fall into the Water, where the Alligator seiz'd him by the Flank, and carry'd him over the River above the Water. Another Alligator seeing it, came up to take away his Prey, whereupon the first let go his hold, to defend himself, and the Man, tho' almost senseless with the Fright, crawl'd away, leaving the Alligators engag'd, and the *Spaniard's* Wounds did not prove great or deep. In the Territory of *Guayaquil*, there are Bees, that swarm, and make Honey in hollow Trees; they are little bigger than Flies, their Honey and Wax is Ruddy, and tho' well relish'd, is not so good as the *Spanish*.

THE City of *Quito* lies under the Equinoctial, so that when the Sun is on that Line, a Man has no Shaddow. Goods from the Sea are convey'd up the River to the Landing-Place on Floats, and from thence to the City, being forty Leagues, by Carriers. The *Indians* keep Markets, where the *Spaniards* buy what they have occasion for, and had formerly neither Weights nor Measures, but barter'd by guess. Besides Tillage and Breeding of Cattel, the Product and Trade of the Country consists in Abundance of Cheese, made of the Milk of Cows, Goats, and Ews, Cotton,

The HISTORY of *America*. 63

Cotton, Mantles, white, black, and grey Cloth, Blankets, Hats, Serge, Sackcloth, Buskins, Naval Stores, Goat's Leather, pad and war Saddles. Cotton, and white Stuff; there is much Flax, but little of it spun, but there is much Wool, Sugar-Mills, *Spanish* Handycrafts of all sorts. The City has little Land belonging to private Persons, the Fields and Pastures are in common, a great Break, or Slough runs thro' the Middle of it, and there are Bridges in all the Streets. The Land is sandy, but within the Depth of half a Fathom, there is Rock, the Situation not Moist, and *Belalcazar* made Choice of that Situation for the better Defence against the *Indians*, who were numerous, and the *Spaniards* but a few. (At first they built such Houses as they could; now they raise their Foundations three Spans above the Ground, make their Walls of Lime and Sand, with some Peers of Brick, the Door Frames of Stone, and cover them with Tiles. There are in the City three large Squares, before the Cathedral, and the Monasteries of *St. Dominick* and *St. Francis*; the Streets are wide and strait, containing above four hundred Houses, the Number still increasing.) The Cathedral is a good Structure, large, and has three Isles. The Monastery of *St. Dominick* built out of Arms, is a sumptuous Structure. There is a Town-House, a Court of Justice, a Goal, and other publick Edifices. The Houses of the better sort, and there are many of them, have generally two or three Appartments, with a Court, Garden, and Back-Yard. The Materials are to be had near by, the remotest at three Leagues Distance, carry'd on Carts, the Custom of Loading Men being entirely suppress'd; only at the Loading of Goods from the River *Guyaquil*, some *Indians* of their own free Will get their living that way; for no Endeavours have been able to prevail with them to follow any other Employment, as Porters carry Burdens in all Parts of *Europe*. The City is well furnish'd with all sorts of Arms,
and

64 *The HISTORY of America.*

and there are Tambos, or Inns, at five or six Leagues distance from it every way, well supply'd with Provisions, at reasonable Rates, according to the Price set by the proper Magistrates. The first Bishop *Don Garci Diaz Arias*, began to build the Cathedral, and it was finish'd by the Bishop *Don Fray Pedro de la Ribera*, the King having order'd, that the City should defray one third of the Expence, the *Indians* of its District another, and his Majesty the other. There are also two Parish Churches, call'd *St. Blase* and *St. Sebastian*; the Bishop's Palace stands in the Square, close by the Cathedral, which is well furnish'd with Vestments for the Divine Service, and has nothing assign'd for Repairs, but when any thing is defective, the Inhabitants meet, and rate themselves, without begging any Alms. Besides the Monasteries of *Dominicans* and *Franciscans*, before mention'd, there is one of *Mercenarians*, and in all of them there are *Indian* Friars, who live very religiously. Several Languages are spoken round about this City, but that of *Cuzco*, which was introduc'd by the *Ingas*, is understood by all, being easily learnt, especially since Rules have been found for that Purpose. In this Territory there are above fifty thousand Tributary *Indians*, and the Number daily Increases, because they live very ealy.

THESE Natives dwell together in Clans, or Tribes, are fond of their native Country, which they never forsake, unless ill us'd by their *Caziques*; they are of a good Stature and Disposition, learn any Handycraft that is taught them; (not very strong, but slothful, lovers of Novelty, inconstant, and giving to drinking, cunning in their Dealings, but must be sometimes compell'd to work, to maintain their Wives and Children, many of them living to ninety or an hundred Years of Age. Those who live nearest to the City are more polite, as is usual in other Countries, thein

The HISTORY of America. 65

their Habit is a short Tunick, without Sleeves, as wide above as below, their Arms and Legs naked, with a square Mantle, a Yard and three Quarters every way, which serves instead of a Cloak; they wear their Hair long, and that it may not hang in their Eyes, tie a String about their Heads. The Caziques and prime Men, as also the *Tanacunas* wear Hats, were formerly wont to have *Ojotas*, which only sav'd the Sole of the Foot, but now they use *Alpargates*, or Buskins. Their Bed is a Mat made of thick Rushes, laid on Straw, and they cover themselves with two Blankets. Their Jewels or Ornamentss are Necklaces of *Chaquira*, a sort of small Beads, or of Gold or Silver, as also red Beads, and some of white Bone, with Bracelets of the same. The Houshold Stuff consists in a Grindstone for their Corn, Pottage-pots, and little Jars for their Liquor, which they call *Azua*, with oval drinking Cups, which hold above a Pint. Enough has been said of their Religion, when Heathens; the old Men were difficult to be brought to embrace Christianity at first, as being hardned by their Education, but now they are all converted. The greatest Festival among them is a general meeting of all the Neighbourhood, which lasts five or six Days, during which time they do nothing but drink, sing and dance, which tires them to such a degree, that they must have two Days to rest them. The Cazique was the Person most respected among them, and next to him the bravest Man, and he that till'd his Land best, because he spending the Product in treating the rest, was most belov'd. The Measure of Time is by Moons and half Moons; the *Cazique's* House is the best, where they assemble to their drinking Festivals; the other Houses are small, about forty or fifty foot in length, with Mud Walls thatch'd, where they lay up nothing but what is absolutely necessary either for themselves, or for tillage, or for such Handycrafts as they practise.

66 *The History of America.*

The Lands are divided among them, as they were formerly by the *Ingas*, no Alteration being made therein; and when any Controversy happens about them, it is immediately decided upon the Spot.

C H A P. III.

The Discovery and Planting of Popayan; of the Governments of Los Quixos, or Canela, and of Guarfongo, or Juan de Salinas; the Discovery of the New Kingdom of Granada.

IT was usual among the Commanders, who had subdu'd one Province in the *West-Indies*, to endeavour to extend into those that were the next Borders, and accordingly *Sebastian de Belalcazar* having settled the Affairs of *St. Francis de Quito*, and its Territory, and sent some small Parties to discover what was about it, being inform'd that two Brothers, call'd *Calambaz* and *Popayan*, possess'd a large Province of a fertile Soil, and rich in Gold, to the Northward, thought it expedient, as he had found a way from *Quito* to the South-Sea, at the Bay of *St. Matthew*, to find out another to the North-Sea, and in order to it to begin with that Country of *Calambaz* and *Popayan*, notwithstanding all the Difficulties that appear'd in that Enterprize. Having made the necessary Disposition, he set out from *Quito*, with three hundred *Spanish* Horse and Foot, without that Multitude of *Indians*, which other Commanders had been wont to take with them, having warn'd his Soldiers to furnish themselves with Arms and Cloathing, leaving all that was cumberfom, and only for conveniency, which he look'd upon as superfluous for men who were to be inur'd

The HISTORY of *America*. 67

injur'd to Fatigue, and whose Success depended on their Diligence and Industry. In this manner he march'd without any Opposition, as far as *Otabalo*, the first Place in the present Government of *Popayan*, and as soon as past that Place, the Caziques of the *Pastos* and *Parias*, who had been inform'd of his coming, met him with their Forces, refusing to give ear to any Proposals, or to accept of Presents, so that the *Spaniards* were oblig'd to trust to nothing but their Valour and Industry, being soon reduc'd to want of Provisions, all which those People had convey'd away. They march'd several Days, continually skirmishing with the *Indians*, and gaining difficult Passes till they came to the Capital of the Province, being the Residence of the Lord of *Popayan*. There *Belalcazar* resolv'd to rest his Forces, perceiving that there were many good Towns in the open Country, between that Place and a Branch of *Rio Grande*, being fourteen Leagues distant, all full of fine Meadows, Corn-Fields, Groves of Fruit-Trees, and particularly *Agua-cates*, which are very delicious, many Rivers that come down from the *Andes*, whose Water is very good crossing the Country, in some of which very pure Gold has been found. Having met with a convenient Place, being a flat Eminence, which seem'd to be healthy, he resolv'd to settle there, tho' he had little rest allow'd him by those war-like *Indians*. He frequently sent Parties abroad to view the Country and bring in Provisions, and thus he discover'd the Territories of *Xamundi*, the *Timbos*, who had much Gold, the *Aguales*, *Guamba*, *Malnasa*, *Polindera*, *Palace*, *Tembio*, and *Colaza*, (all of them war-like People, and Man-eaters, having much low Gold, and liking the Country that extends as far as *Cali*, being twenty Leagues in length, he caus'd that also to be discover'd. However these Excursions were not perform'd free-cost, the *Indians* every where fighting desperately,

68 *The HISTORY of America.*

and endeavouring to expel those Strangers either by open Force, or want of Provisions, all which they withdrew, and conceal'd.)

Belalcazar being in this Country, thought it proper to find out the Source of the great River of the *Magdalen*, which was generally believ'd to fall into the *North-Sea*, and he suppos'd the Country about its Springs to be very Populous. He found it rise above *Popayan* from two Branches, the one five, and the other fourteen Leagues distant from the City, and yet those two Sources are forty Leagues from each other, and there began certain Vales form'd by the *Cordillera*, well Inhabited by the *Coconuco Indians* and others. From the Country of the *Coconucos*, where one of the Branches of that River Springs, runs a little Brook, that stretches through the wide Vale of *Cali*, where all the Waters of the two *Cordilleras*, or Ridges of Mountains meet, so that when it comes to *Cali*, it is as large and rapid, as the River *Guadalquivir* at *Sevil*. One of the greatest Difficulties *Belalcazar* had to struggle with in those Parts, was the Variety of Languages, which requir'd so many Interpreters, and sometimes it happen'd that three were employ'd to understand what one said. *Belalcazar* observing the Extent of those Provinces, and their Distance from *Quito*, resolv'd to build a City there, and to that effect labour'd to pacify the *Indians*, and though some concluded a Peace they did not observe it, but soon revolted, and convey'd away their Provisions, which reduc'd the *Spaniards* to great streights. Idols were found in some Parts of those Provinces, but no peculiar Places of Worship; however they talk'd with the Devil, and did many Things by his Advice. Many of them had no full Knowledge of the Immortality of the Soul, tho' they believ'd that their Forefathers came to life again; and some fancy'd that the Souls of such as dy'd went into the Bodies of those that

The HISTORY of *America*. 69

that were born. They paid much honour to the dead, burying them with their Wives and Servants alive, besides Wealth and Provisions, as was practised in *Peru*. In some Parts they burnt them to Ashes, and in others parch'd them up at the Fire. They went naked and bare-foot, wearing nothing but little Mantles, but had notable Jewels or Ornaments, both Men and Women, and they had Numbers of Southsayers and Wizards.

Belalcazar was very well pleas'd with that Situation he had chosen, concluding it to be healthy, because it is all the Year like the Month of *May*, the Nights and Days being almost equal, as lying only forty Leagues to the Northward of the Equinoctial, so that the Increase or decrease is not above ten Minutes, besides that a good River run through it; all that he mislik'd was that it rain'd there more than in other Places, and there was much Thunder and Lightning. The *Indian* Wheat there is the best in *America*, and the *Spanish* grows twice a Year besides there is abundance of Flesh of all sorts, as black and white Cattel, Goats, and Swine, and Variety of Native and *Spanish* Fruit. The Territory of that Government at this Time extends two hundred and twenty Leagues North and South from the Borders of the Province of *Quito*, to those of *Cartagena*, and an hundred in breadth to the Eastward, from the *New Kingdom* of *Granada* to the South-Sea, wherein there are fourteen *Spanish* Towns, part of them under the Jurisdiction of the Court of the said *New Kingdom* of *Granada*, and the rest under that of *Quito*; the too much Rain hinders the Country abounding more in Corn, but it is rich in Gold Mines. The Towns in it are, the City of *Popayan*, where the Bishop resides, in 2 Degrees and Half of North Latitude, the Towns of *Santa Fe de Antioquia*, *Santiago de Cali*, *Caramanta*, *Santiago de Arma*, *Santana de Anserma*, *Guadalajara de Buga*, *Timana*, *San Sebastian de*

70 The HISTORY of *America*.

la Plata, Almaguer, San Juan de Truxillo, Madrigal, or Chiapanchica, Agreda, or Malaga, San Juan de Pasto, and San Sebastian de los Paezes. These Indians were so inhuman, that Fathers have been known to eat their Children, Husbands their Wives, and Brothers their Sisters, and they had publick Shambles of human Flesh

To omit nothing that falls under the Jurisdiction of *Quito*, we will proceed to the *Quixos, Canela, and T-guarfongo, or Juan de Salinas.* Belalcazar sent several Commanders to discover the Great River of the *Niagda-len*, and other adjacent Parts, and among them that cross'd the great *Cordillera*, or Ridge of Mountains, was Captain *Gonzalo Diaz de Pineda*, who enter'd the Country of the *Quixos* and *Canela*, and said there were most wealthy Provinces beyond it, which afterwards mov'd *Gonzalo Pizarro* to penetrate into those Parts, where he got nothing, but endur'd many Hardships, as shall be mention'd in its Place. Afterwards in the Year 1557, the Marquels *de Canete*, sent *Giles Gonzalez de Avalos* to subdue the *Quixos*, and make Settlements there, the same lying to the Eastward of *Quito*, and on the South of it is the Government of *T-guarfongo*, otherwise call'd *Juan de Salinas*; on the North of it is *Popayan*, and on the East the Countries of *Dorado*; the Latitude not one full Degree North, the Length about forty Leagues, and the Breadth under twenty. All the Country is very hot, and rainy, rough, yeilding little Corn, but has some Trees like Cinnamon, which eaten in Powder has the same Relish, but loses the Taste any other way: In other Particulars it much resembles the other Parts of *Peru*; the Governour is appointed by the Vice-Roy, and there are in the Province four Spanish Towns. The first is *Baeza*, founded by *Giles Ramirez Davalos*, a Native of the City of *Baeza* in *Spain*, in the Year 1559; sixteen Leagues S. E. from the City of *Qui-*

The HISTORY of *America*. 71

to, where the Governour resides. The next *Avila*, to the Northward of *Archidona*, which is the third, and the fourth *Sevilla del Oro*. The whole Government is in the Diocese of *Quito*, the Natives readily embrac'd Christianity, have a Language of their own, and use that which is universal throughout *Peru*; their Habit, Religion, and Manners, were formerly like those already mention'd. They were troublesome to subdue, and revolted several Times, but are now altogether peaceable, and sensible of their Happiness.

To conclude with the Jurisdiction of the Court of *Quito*, there is the Government of the *Pacamoros*, or *Bracamoros*, and *Ynarsongo*, otherwise call'd of *John de Salinas*, extending an hundred Leagues Eastward, commencing twenty Leagues beyond the City of *Zamora*, which is the very Ridge of the *Andes*, and the same Extent North and South, like the rest for Product, and has yielded much Gold; there are in it four *Spanish* Towns founded by Captain *John de Salinas de Loyola*, when he was Governour; first the City of *Valladolid*, in seven Degrees of North Latitude; twenty Leagues S. E. from the City of *Loxa*, beyond the Ridge of the *Andes*; secondly, the City of *Loyola* or *Cumbinama*, about sixteen Leagues to the Eastward of *Valladolid*; thirdly, *Santiago de las Montañas*, fifty Leagues from *Loyola* to the Eastward, in whose Territory more Go'd is found than others, and it is very fine, but not equal to that of *Carabaya* in *Peru* and *Valdibia* in *Chile*, for this sometimes is above twenty three Carats and an Half.

It will be proper before he is quite forgot, here to observe that *Ferome de Ortal* before spoken of at *Maracapana*, attempting to carry on the Discoveries up the Inland, and being a Man of little Conduct, all his Men but ten mutiny'd and forsook him, going away to *Venezuela*, where *Nicholas Federman*, Commanded, who receiv'd them. *Ortal* and his ten Companions

72 The HISTORY of *America*.

nions made their way to the strong House he had built on the Sea Coast, call'd St. *Michael de Neveri*, but being inform'd that *Antony Sedeño*, whose Men he had before disarm'd and strip'd, was landed with more Forces, he durst not stay in that Place, and therefore sail'd away to the Island of *Cubagua*, leaving the said *Sedeño*, in Possession of the Country. He made an In-road several Legues from the Sea, in a very disorderly manner, permitting his Soldiers to commit all Sorts of Insolences, which so far provoked the Natives, that drawing together, they engag'd him with much Resolution, but they being routed with a very great Slaughter, *Sedeño* enter'd their Town, where he found much Gold, and many Women and Children, whom he sent to *Cubagua*, where Avarice prevailing, the King's repeated Orders for the Liberty of the *Indians* were not regarded, and those People cruelly reduc'd to Slavery. The Tygers were so flesh'd on the Carcasses of the *Indians* slain in the Battel above mention'd, that their Numbers being very great, the *Spaniards* were not safe, for they would by Night, without making any Noise, break into the Huts where they lay, and carry Men off into the Woods, where they were devour'd in a Moment; and there was no security but by keeping Fires, and defending themselves with long Spears, when those ravenous Creatures assaulted them.

To proceed, now we are upon the Coast of *Santa Marta*, the Adelantado of the *Canaries* having provided all Things for carrying on the Discoveries along *Rio Grande*, or the great River of the *Magdalen*, appointed *Gonzalo Ximenez de Quesada* to Command in that Expedition, and to march by Land with above six hundred Foot, and an hundred Horse. Several Vessels were also fitted out to sail up the same River, but being disperfed in a Storm, some of them arriv'd at *Cartagena*, where the Men refitted themselves, and
went

The HISTORY of *America*. 73

went away to *Pern*. The other Vessels that return'd were sent up the River after *Ximenez*, who was marching along the left Bank of it, enduring incredible Hardships, without any muttering among his Men, because he was a Man of singular Discretion to manage them, and Partaker in all their Labours and Dangers, never sparing himself. When he had held on his way some Months, and pass'd an hundred Leagues farther than any of those that had been a Year from *Santa Marta*, whilst he was refreshing his Men in a Town call'd *Tora*, or *Pueblo de los Bracos*, that is, the Town of the Arms or Branches, because so many Rivers meet there, being about an hundred and fifty Leagues from the Sea, the Vessels sent up the River join'd him, to the unspeakable Satisfaction of all the Men, who then concluded their Enterprize would prove Successful, *Ximenez* assuring them that it could not fail of being so. The Winter coming on, he resolv'd to take up his Quarters in that Place, and the more because the River overflow'd, and there was no travelling along it. He therefore sent the Brigantins to discover, which advanc'd twenty Leagues, and return'd as they went out, all the Country being so mightily overflow'd, that they could see nothing but Water. Before they came to *Tora*, they perceiv'd that all the Salt in those Parts was carry'd from the Sea, and Coast of *Santa Marta*, by way of Barter, and went up above seventy Leagues, being so dear that only the prime *Indians* could afford to eat it. Beyond that Part where the Salt of the Sea reach'd, there was another Sort like Sugar-Loaves, and the higher they went the more plentiful it grew, which shew'd that it was brought down the River, as the other sort went up it, and thence there was Reason to conclude that there must be a very populous Country higher, the Trade of Salt being so great, and the *Indians* told
the

74 *The HISTORY of America.*

the *Spaniards*, that the Merchants who brought it said, there was extraordinary Wealth where it was made.

Gonzalo Ximenez, and *George Federman* coming in Time to meet in the *New Kingdom of Granada*, it is unavoidable to intermix their Progress, and therefore it is here requisite to say something of what was done by the Lieutenant of the latter. That Lieutenant was *Nicholas Federman*, who being inform'd, that some Men belonging to the Province of *Santa Marta*, had enter'd that of *Venezuela*, and were in the Territory of the *Coronados* halted thither, and found that they had done much Harm, which had caus'd the *Indians* to Revolt, and though a Party he sent against them, had disarm'd those Intruders and taken their Captain, he sent them all away freely to their own Government. He had Orders to settle a Colony at *Cabo de la Vela*, but did it not, because the Country about it is Champion, without Wood, dry and barren, having no River that falls into the Sea, the Natives feeding on Fish and Venison, their Bread made of a mild Sort of Seed, and there being no Mayz, their Beds consisting of Deers Skins laid on the Ground, and there was no Appearance of any other than Seed Pearl. (*Federman* having two hundred Horse and Foot, set out in *June 1535*. towards *Rio Grande*, the Fame being spread Abroad that there was much Wealth in those Parts. In order to it he pass'd the Lake of *Maracaybo*, and enter'd upon the Vale of *Tucuyo*, which stretches from North to South a League and Half in length, and half a League in breadth, enclos'd with Mountains on all Sides, taking its Name from a River that runs by. That District being thought fit for building a Town, one was afterwards founded there by the licenciate *Carvajal*, being healthy, leading to many Mountains, and abounding in Provisions. It is fifty Leagues from the Sea, seventy from *Leon*, in the Province of *Caracas*, eleven from *New Segovia*, fourteen

The HISTORY of America. 75

fourteen from *Portillo de Corrora*, and twenty from *Yruxillo*. In all this Territory there were no Lords, or Caziques, they paid Tribute to none, and they only adher'd to the greatest Men, to get Meat and Drink; in other Respects they were like the rest of the maritime Provinces, convers'd with the Devil, had many Wives, without any regard to Proximity of Blood, and were much given to smoaking Tobacco. There were continual Wars between those that spoke different Languages, to carry off each others Wives and Children; their Weapons the same that have been often mention'd, the Men put their Genitals into a Gourd, the Women had some a Clout, others a large Leaf of a Tree, and others nothing to cover those Parts. Now they have Sugar-Mills, sow Cotton, and most Things of the Growth of *Spain*, are all cloath'd. There are many Lions and Tygers, and such a Multitude of Deer, that a *Spaniard* ranging about with Horses, *Indians*, and Dogs, has been known to kill five hundred in two Months, in some of which the Bezoar-Stone is found. There are Gold Mines, but not much regarded, for want of Men, the *Spaniards* breeding abundance of Kine, Sheep, and Horses. *Federman* at this Time also discover'd *Bariquizemeto*, near a River so call'd, because when disturb'd it is of an Ash-colour, where the City of *Segovia* was afterwards founded. When he had Winter'd at *Tucuyo*, he proceeded on his Discovery on the 13th of *December*, designing to cross the Mountains, tho' contrary to the Orders receiv'd from *George Spire*, which were to follow him, and, tho' he met with many Difficulties, as well from the bad Ways, as the Opposition of the *Indians*, he at length arriv'd in the *New Kingdom of Granada*.

Gonzalo Ximenez, who was intent upon the same Enterprize, lay long at *Tora*, as has been said, sending out Parties to extricate himself from that Place, where he had been enclos'd by the overflowing of the River,

76 *The HISTORY of America.*

ver, and in the End one of those Commanders return'd with an Account that he had run twenty five Leagues up another River, and found some Habitations, tho' not many, Tokens of a Road to the Mountains, and a little Salt among the *Indians*. Upon this Advice *Ximenez* went himself, with most of the Men, but he falling sick at the Place where the other had been before, two Captains advanc'd with twenty five Men, march'd twenty five Leagues over woody Mountains, and came into a Plain Country in which were great Towns, and good Tokens of Plenty. *Ximenez* upon this Information, having brought away all that had been left at *Tora*, set out with such as were best able, their Number being much decreas'd through the Hardships they had endur'd. Thus he cross'd those vast and rugged Mountains, call'd of *Opon*, fifty Leagues over, and though late, came into the Plain, with only an hundred and seventy Horse and Foot, and finding those great Loaves of Salt, before spoken of, he enquir'd where it was made, and the *Indians* admiring to see those strange Men, shew'd him a Salt-Water, from which they had it. Here he had good Store of Provisions in Exchange for Hawksbels, Sizars, and other Baubles, which made him stay the longer, to recover his Men, for there was much *Indian* Wheat, Venison, and excellent Fruit. This Plenty, the good Buildings and Multitude of People being Proofs that the Country was good, he advanc'd one Days March farther, near to a Province subject to a great Lord, whose name was *Bogota*, who having heard of those strange People, was ready, with great Numbers of his Subjects to oppose the *Spaniards*. *Ximenez* thinking it requisite to establish a Reputation in those Parts, boldly charg'd that Multitude, who came on with their usual Cries; but as soon as they felt the sharp Edges of the Swords, the Points of their Spears, and the Force of the Horses, turn'd their Backs and fled.

The HISTORY of *America*. 77

hed. This Lord *Bogota* was the greatest in that Region, keeping many other great Men in such subjection, that they rather fear'd than lov'd him, and the *Indians* said, he had an House of Gold, with a large Quantity of Emeralds; but they perceiving the *Spaniards* much coveted that Metal, always magnify'd the Wealth, though it was really great in it self. At this Time *Bogota* had finish'd a Town, the Houses whereof were well built, enclos'd with Bundles of Reeds, in very comly Order, and a Palace for himself, which was a sufficient Specimen of his Grandeur, for it had ten or twelve Gates and Posterns, with several Returns of Wall at each of them, and about it were two Enclosures at a considerable distance from each other.

THE *Spaniards* being Quarter'd in this Town found Provision enough, and many Sides, and large Pieces of Venison, dry'd with Salt. The next Day twelve *Indians* came, wrap'd up in black Mantles, with black Caps on their Heads, bringing Venison from the Lord, and a little Gold, saying, they were come to celebrate the Obsequies of those that had been kill'd in the late Engagement. Then retiring into a Place of Worship, they sung about two Hours and an Half, in a doleful Tune, the *Spaniards* being intirely Ignorant of what they said, because their Interpreters did not understand that Language. By them *Ximenez* sent to advise the Lord to be his Friend, otherwise he would burn his Town, yet he did not comply. From thence he march'd to *Chia*, the usual Residence of *Bogota*'s eldest Son, which he found abandon'd, however, some *Indians* came and brought Provisions and Mantles, which was suppos'd to be done out of Curiosity, for the Lord put some of those he could take, to Death, others he bastinado'd, and others having torn their Mantles, and hung them about their Necks, which among them is a great Disgrace, he turn'd out, bidding them

78 *The HISTORY of America.*

go to the new Men to revenge them, as they did; and *Ximenez* commanded Captain *Cardoso* to take Guides that knew the Country, and repair with them to a Place, where abundance of Natives were, who had abandon'd their Dwellings, and surprize them at break of Day, which was perform'd so effectually, that he took about three hundred Men, Women and Children, and carry'd them to the Camp, where they prov'd of much Use, the *Spaniards* having none before to serve them; besides, some were sent to advise *Chia* to appear, and be peaceable; but neither he nor *Bogota* would comply, for which Reason it was resolv'd to surprize them in the Morning; and as they were upon their march a Cazique call'd *Subausaque*, met them, with a Present of Flesh and other Things, and then went away; ever after sending Provisions to the Forces, tho' he durst not appear abroad, for fear of *Bogota*, who was reputed to be very Cruel; however, he was afterwards the best Friend the *Spaniards* had, who in all those Towns found Gold and Emeralds.

C H A P. IV.

The Progress of Gonzalo Ximenez in the New Kingdom of Granada; he Belalcazar and Federman meet there unexpectedly; they go down Rio Grande, and thence into Spain; Account of that Discovery.

C*Hia* and *Bogota* refusing any Accommodation with the *Spaniards*, as has been said, *Ximenez*, resolv'd to lose no more Time; but sent the Captains *Céspedes* and *St. Martin*, with fifty Horse and Foot, to seize the latter who the spies said was three Leagues off. These Commanders, tho' they us'd their utmost Diligence, could

The HISTORY of *America*. 79

could not find him, and return'd with about two hundred Men and Women they took in another Town. Notwithstanding that *Indians* came in daily, bringing Gold, Emeralds, and Provisions to Barter with the *Spaniards*, these were continually upon their guard, because the others had in the Night set fire to some of their Quarters, and the Houses being all thatch'd, if they had not been very watchful, they might all have perish'd. *Ximenez*, being far advanc'd into *Bogota's* Country, order'd the Captains *Céspedes* and *St. Martin*, with thirty Men each, to march on several Ways to see what was beyond it; who returning said, They had fallen into a Nation, call'd *Panches*, which encompass'd most of *Bogota's* Lands, being parted by only a little woody Mountain, tho' they us'd different Weapons, and were continually at War. By this Time the Interpreters began to understand one another better, and the *Indians* perceiving that the *Spaniards* were fond of Gold and Emeralds, carry'd them greater Quantities of both, and offer'd to shew the Place where those Stones were found, to the end that the love of them might draw those People out of their Country. *Ximenez* understanding which way the Country of the Emeralds lay, remov'd to the Vale that was afterwards call'd *De la Trompeta*, and thence sent Captain *Valenzuela*, with a good Party, to view what the *Indians* talk'd of, which he did, and with much Admiration found the Mine, about fifteen Leagues from the Vale *De la Trompeta*, on an high and bare Mountain, being a League in Circumference, and in the Earth there were Veins of a sort of clammy Clay, of a sky Colour, within which are the Emeralds, as perfectly Octogonal, that Lapidaries could not make them more Exact. They come out whitish and greenish, and by Degrees turn to their natural Colour. Some are found in Clusters together, and others single.) *Samaduco* was Lord of that District, and

80 *The History of America.*

and others as well as his Subjects dig'd those Emeralds, at certain Seasons of the Year, when they offer'd great Sacrifices, bartering them away for Gold, Cotton Cloth, and a sort of Beads, much valu'd among them; and tho' these Emeralds are very fine, those found in the Country about *Puerto Viejo*, have been more valu'd.

WHILST the *Spaniards* lay in the *Vale De la Trompeta*, several Parties going abroad, return'd with *Indians*, and among them Captain *Cardoso* brought two, who offer'd to shew where the Lord *Tunja* lay, being a Man of great Fame, and particularly for his Wealth. *Cardoso* went in quest of him, and the *Indians* carry'd him about fourteen Days to perform one Days Journey, which was thought to be done to prevent *Tunja's* receiving any Intelligence. (Being come about Sun setting to the Place where he was, they on a sudden beset his House, took him, and searching about, found a great Quantity of Gold, Emeralds, Cloth, and Beads, wherein his Treasure consisted. The Night was not spent in idleness, the *Indians* labouring on all Sides to rescue their Lord, and the *Spaniards* maintaining their Ground; but when Day appear'd, and the *Indians* saw the Number of their dead and wounded, they drew off, yet return'd again before Noon in great Numbers, and with much Fury gave the onset, which prov'd as unsuccessful as the former. The *Spaniards* amaz'd at the mighty Wealth they had found, tho' not satisfy'd, offer'd *Tunja* his Liberty and their Friendship, if he would give them the rest of the Treasure he was said to have hid, which he promis'd to do, but it never came to Hand. Captain *Valenzuela* having reported, that from the Top of the Emerald Mountain he had seen vast Plains, which extended as far as the Sight could reach, *Ximenez* went himself to view the Emerald Mines, and order'd Captain *St. Martin* to go down into those Plains, said to be desert, which tho' he endeavour'd,

The HISTORY of America. 81

your'd, he could not perform, by reason of the Thickness of the Woods, and the many Rivers, and other Obstacles he met with, which oblig'd him to return to *Ximenez*, taking *Tunja* along with him, who was not look'd upon to be so unpolish'd as *Bogota*, and had many Towns under him, where they valu'd themselves upon their Gold and Emeralds, using their Riches in their Funerals. The Interpreters growing daily more expert, better Information was gain'd concerning the Country, so that a few Days after Intimation was given of two other Caziques, *Sagamoso* and *Duitama*, who were three Days Journey from them. *Ximenez* march'd thither himself, but miss'd of *Sagamoso*, who had withdrawn himself, and was in Arms, having been acquainted that the *Spaniards* were coming. *Ximenez* having been disappointed of *Sagamoso*, return'd thro' the Territory of *Duitama*, where in some Places of Worship he found the Value of forty thousand Pieces of Eight in Gold, besides Emeralds, and some Part of the Gold was made into Crowns, Eagles, and other Creatures. *Duitama*, with his Men several Times furiously attack'd the *Spaniards*, but at length retir'd with loss to a strong Post, where *Ximenez* not thinking fit to molest him, return'd to *Tunja*, weigh'd all the Gold and found 191294 Pieces of Eight in fine Gold, and of the low 37283, besides 1815 Emeralds great and small. A powerful Lord, neighbouring upon *Tunja*, who valu'd himself upon his Bravery, threatned the *Spaniards*, and sent to bid them depart the Country, or else he would kill them, and make Shields of their Horses Skins, and Beads for his Women of their Teeth, and accordingly when they least expected it, he came upon them with a Multitude of Men, arm'd with Pikes made of very hard Wood, thirty Spans long, Swords of the same, Darts, and Slings, and they advanc'd in such good Order, that had they not halted in a Plain, for want of con-

VOL. V. G sidering

82 *The HISTORY of America.*

sidering the Harm the Horses would do them, they might have brought the *Spaniards* into jeopardy. The Fight lasted long, those *Indians* omitting nothing that became bold Men, but were at length oblig'd to give way, by reason of the great Havock the Horsemen made among them.

Ximenez being inform'd that the Lord *Bogota* was withdrawn to one of his Country-Houses, and judging it absolutely necessary to secure so great a Man when he had been perfectly acquainted with all Particulars relating to that Place, attack'd it at Break of Day, yet not so secretly but that the *Indians* had time to Arm and stand upon their guard, *Bogota* himself being among them, who, being sensible of his danger, slipp'd out the way that was least observ'd, two Soldiers who knew him not, letting him pass, to take away a rich Mantle he had on, tho' he was struck with a Sword, and so bleeding he got into the Wood unobserv'd. The *Indians* making diligent Search for him, perceiv'd that those great Fowls they call *Auras*, which eat all sorts of Carion, made toward the Wood, and guessing at the meaning of it, follow'd them, and found *Bogota* dead, which was not known to the *Spaniards* then. As soon as he was dead, another Cazique call'd *Sagipa*, possess'd himself of all the Dominion, on whom *Ximenez* prevail'd to embrace his Friendship, upon Condition, that he should assist him in his Wars against the beastly *Panches*, who were Man-eaters, which was done, tho' these *Panches* came out in great Numbers to oppose them; they burnt two of their Towns, killing many of them, which was very pleasing to *Sagipa*, and yet when return'd from the War, he kept himself at a distance, whereupon *Ximenez* sent for him, and tho' with an ill Will, he came. *Ximenez* told him, he knew *Bogota* had been an utter Enemy to the *Spaniards*, and since he had seiz'd all his Treasure he should give it him, and he would demand nothing of what was his own. He demanded time,

The HISTORY of *America*. 83

and having produc'd only four thousand Pieces of Eight, the Men compell'd *Ximenez* to put him on the Rack, to discover the rest, which was done so inhumanly, that he dy'd without answering their Expectation.

AT the same Time that these Discoveries were made by *Ximenez*, *Federman* was carrying on his from *Venezuela* and *Belalcazar*, from *Quito*, all of them directing their Course by several Ways, to the same Place. In all this while the Adelantado of the *Canaries*, who had sent *Ximenez* upon the Expedition, had heard no News of him, nor sent him any Supplies, concluding he had perish'd, with all the Men, and in this Perplexity he dy'd; and the licenciado *Gallegos*, who had been left with the Vessels at *Rio Grande*, being much distress'd, return'd to *Santa Marta*. *Ximenez* having in vain attempted to find a Passage over the Mountains to the vast Plains he had been told of, took a great Compass through the Country of the *Panches*, reducing some of them by fair Means, and others by foul, when being well pleas'd with the Country he had discover'd, he call'd it the *New Kingdom of Granada*, containing the Dominions of *Bogota* and *Tunja*, because he was a Native of the City of *Granada* in *Spain*, and then apply'd himself to found a City in the Province of *Bogota*, calling it *Santa Fe*, or St. Faith. Being thus employ'd, and having divided the Lands, he resolv'd to come himself into *Spain* to give the King an Account of his Discoveries, and the great Kingdom he had subdu'd. In order to it he found out a new Way to *Rio Grande*, through the Country of the *Panches*, to avoid repassing the Mountains of *Opon*, which would have been an intollerable Fatigue. (Whilst he was preparing to return, he sent his Brother *Ferdinand* to take a view of the snowy Mountains, where he had been told there was People serv'd in Gold and Silver. *Ferdinand* having march'd six Days, was told

84 *The HISTORY of America.*

by some *Indians*, that there were Christians, both Horse and Foot on the other Side of the River, and not being able to imagine from thence they could come, he cross'd the River with some few Men, and soon understood that they came from *Quito*, under the Command of Captain *Belalcazar*, who being also inform'd, that there were *Spaniards* on the farther Side of the River, pass'd it with an hundred and thirty Men, and understanding that they were settled at *Bogota* march'd thither. When he was within six Leagues of that new Colony of *Santa Fe*, advice was brought that another Party of *Spaniards* had been seen towards *Pasca*, which is to the Eastward, on the great Plains that could not be come at and that they had many Horses. Some Persons were sent to enquire who they were, and brought word, that they came from *Venezuela*, under the Command of *Nicholas Federman*, who directing his Course towards *Pana* through vast Plains, struck to the Southward towards some great Mountains, and crossing very large Deserts, turn'd again to the Northward, and fell into *Pasca*, where hearing that there were Christians in the Country, he hastened to refresh his Men, who were very much fatigu'd and spent, for which he found good Conveniency there, having only an hundred and fifty Men left of those he brought from the Province of *Venezuela*. These three Parties were now within six Leagues one of another, and it was fear'd that they might fall at variance about the Possession of the Country, each of them claiming a right to it; but *Gonzalo Ximenez* discreetly reconcil'd those Matters, giving *Federman* a good Quantity of Gold, and a Tract of Land, and offering to refer all farther Pretensions to the King, if he would go with him into *Spain*; and *Belalcazar* readily came into the same Measures, as desiring not to return to *Quito* without the King's Commission. Having concerted that the Men who came from *Venezuela* should remain in that new Kingdom, and that half

The HISTORY of *America*. 85

half of those who came with *Belalcazar*, should go back eighty Leagues to settle a Colony in the Vale of *Neiva*. The Commanders began to prepare for their Voyage into *Spain*, and to build Brigantines to carry them down the River, no one of them to submit to the other, and each of them hoping to obtain his Pretensions at the Court. *Ximenez* having now four hundred Foot, and fifteen hundred Horse, resolv'd to build two other Towns, for the better security of the Kingdom; the one at *Tunja*, under that same Denomination, twenty two Leagues from *Bogota*, the other at *Velez*, somewhat above thirty Leagues from *Santa Fe*, and twelve from *Tunja*, being the Entrance into the new Kingdom, the way he went. (All Things being concerted and adjusted, and two Brigantins finish'd, the three Commanders, with about thirty other Persons sail'd down *Rio Grande*, and from thence to *Cartagena*, where they got a Passage into *Spain*, to sollicite their Affairs, and there we will leave them to give a short Description of this Discovery.)

THIS *New Kingdom of Granada*, which Commences beyond the Mountains of *Opon*, is all a Champion, with great Numbers of People, inhabiting distinct Vales, and all encompass'd by the *Indians* call'd *Panches*, who were Man-eaters, but the Natives of this Kingdom were not. The Country of the *Panches* is hot, the new Kingdom cold, or at least very temperate, and as the others are call'd *Panches*, so those of *Bogota* and *Tunja*, bear the Name of *Moxcas*. The length of this Kingdom is about an hundred and thirty Leagues, the greatest breadth thirty, and in some Parts under twenty; the Latitude mostly in 3, 4, and 5 Degrees Northward, divided into two Provinces call'd *Bogota* and *Tunja*, which were the Names of their Sovereigns, both of them Powerful, but (*Bogota*) the greatest, being able to bring sixty thousand Men into the Field, and the other forty thousand. They were always at

86 The HISTORY of *America*.

variance with their Neighbours the *Panches*, especially those of *Bogota*, whose Country is rich, but that of *Tunja* much more in Gold and Emeralds. When the *Spaniards* first enter'd this Kingdom, the Natives were in a great Consternation, looking upon them as the Children of the Sun and Moon, whom they ador'd, saying, they ingender'd like Man and Woman, and had sent those their Children from Heaven to punish them for their Sins, and therefore they call'd the *Spaniards Uchies*, a Name compounded of *Ufa*, signifying the Sun, and *Chia* the Moon. Thus they were wont to fly up to the highest Mountains, casting down from thence their sucking Babes for them to devour, believing by that means they should appease the Wrath of Heaven, but above all they dreaded the *Horses*. Afterwards conversing with the *Spaniards*, they began to be less afraid, and perceiving they were Men like themselves, resolv'd to make trial of them, whereupon ensu'd several Engagements with the *Bogotas*, the *Tunjas*, and the *Panches*, till finding no Remedy they submitted; tho' there was more Difficulty in subduing the last of them, as being fierce, and their Country rugged, where the *Horses* could do least Service. The People gave hideous Cries when they fought, casting Darts out of Slings above their Heads, their Wooden Swords two handed, their Spears very long, with sharp Points, harden'd at the Fire. It was their Custom to carry with them to Battel the dead Bodies of their bravest Men, to serve for an Example to others, certain Men appointed for that Purpose bearing them, all their Bodies daub'd with a sort of Bitumen that never came off. The *Panches* went stark Naked, except their Privities, using Bows besides the other Weapons above mention'd, (and large Bucklers, cover'd with Skins) of Beasts that defended the whole Body from Head to Foot, and in the hollow of the Lining all the Weapons mention'd, which they

The HISTORY of *America*. 87

they take out to fight, and hang the Buckler at their Back, for it is light, and sometimes it hangs before to cover them. They fight silently, and always treat of Peace by means of the Women.

ALL the People of this Kingdom are well shap'd, the Women have good Faces, not so tawny, or ill Featur'd as others in those Parts; they wore black, white, or colour'd Mantles girt about their Bodies, reaching from their Breasts to their Feet, and others over their Shoulders, instead of Cloaks; on their Heads Garlands of Roses and other Flowers, made of Cotton of several Colours. Some prime Women had Cotton Caps, all their Cloathing being of the same, and some of them Net Coifs. The Cold is not prejudicial, yet fire is agreeable, which Temperature lasts all the Year; for tho' there is a Summer, when the Earth is dry, the difference between it and Winter is not great. The length of the Day and Nights is equal, as being so near the Equinoctial; the Country the healthiest in the World; the Houses are of Timber, thatch'd, and those of the great Men built after a strange Manner, like Castles with several Inclosures about them, like a Labyrinth, having large Courts, with Mouldings and Painting. They eat *Indian* Wheat, Yuca, Pignuts, which they call *Tomas*, and Turneps, call'd *Cubias*, which they dress with Mear, and reckon them very Nourishing. They make a vast Quantity of Salt, and drive a Trade with it into several Parts, especially over the Mountains of *Opon*, to *Rio Grande*. The Flesh they had was Venison in great Plenty, and *Fricos*, like Rabbits at *Santa Marta*, call'd *Curies*, of which there are infinite Numbers. Birds are not so numerous, some Turtle Doves, and Ducks in the Lakes, in which and the Rivers they take excellent Fish.

IN Point of Morality these *Indians* were rational enough, punishing Crimes, and particularly Murder,

88 *The HISTORY of America.*

Theft, and Sodomy, from which they are clear, and there are many Gibbets along the Roads. They us'd to cut off Hands, Noses, or Ears, for other smaller Offences, and there were Penalties of Dishonour from the greatest Men, as tearing their Garments, and cutting off their Hair. The Subjects pay great Veneration to their Lords, never looking them in the Face, tho' they discourse with them familiarly, and they come into the Place where the Lord is, backwards. In their Marriages they utter'd no Words, nor perform'd no Ceremonies, but only took the Woman and carry'd her Home, having as many Wives as they could keep, and the Lord *Bogota* had above four hundred. Matrimony was prohibited within the first Degree of Consanguinity, and in some Places within the second. The Sons did not inherit, but the Brothers, and if there were none living, the Sons of those that were dead. Their Time was regularly divided into Months and Years. The first ten Days of the Month they fed on an Herb, call'd *Hayo* on the Sea Coast, which is very Nourishing and Purging; the next ten they till'd their Grounds, and minded other Affairs, and the last ten they spent in their Houses among their Wives, not living in the same Appartment with them, but the Man in one, and they all in another. They kept those who were to be Rulers or Commanders, whether Men or Women, lock'd up for several Years, when they were Children, some of them seven Years, and this so close, that they were not to see the Sun, for if they should happen to see it, they forfeited the Lordship, eating certain Sorts of Food appointed, and those who were their Keepers at certain Times went into the Retreat, or Prison, and scourg'd them severely. When this Penance was over, they bor'd their Ears and Noses to wear Gold in, which was a great Honour, they also wore Plates of it on their Breasts, Caps like Miters on their Heads, and Bracelets on their Arms. They

Tartar

Chinese

Tartar

The HISTORY of *America*. 89

They were generally extraordinary fond of singing and dancing and have an indifferent talent for mechanick arts.

As to Religion they were very observant of it, and besides the Temples in the Towns, had others abroad in the Country, and abundance of little Chapels or Hermitages on the Roads, and in Woods, with much Gold and Emeralds in them all. They there offer'd Sacrifice with Blood, Water, and Fire, kill'd many Birds, shedding the Blood about the Temples, and hanging them up, sprinkling the Place with Water, which was also a Sacrifice, and threw Sweets into the Fire. They had particular Prayers for all Occasions, which they sung, but did not Sacrifice human Blood, unless some Boy were taken in War, whom they kill'd in the Temple with loud Cries. The Priests were Children they bought thirty Leagues from thence in the Province of the *Mojas*, at the House of the Sun, who the *Indians* thought did discourse with the Sun, held them in great Veneration, making very much of them, till they were grown Men, when they kill'd them and offer'd their Blood in Sacrifice. But if any one of them had happen'd to touch a Woman, he was free from being Sacrific'd, alledging that their Blood was not pure enough for that use, nor a Propitiation for Sin. A Month before going to War, they sung Day and Night, except whilst they went to eat, praying to the Sun, the Moon, and other Idols, for victory, repeating the Causes that induc'd them to War, and if they return'd Victorious, thanks were return'd in the same manner during some Days; but if defeated, they spent as much Time bewailing their Misfortune. They had Consecrated Woods and Lakes, where they Sacrific'd, and were not to fell any Tree, nor take Water, but bury'd Gold and Jewels in those Woods, or cast it into the Lakes, as an offering, and never after touch'd it. The Sun and Moon were look'd upon the

Apollo & Diana

90 *The HISTORY of America.*

the universal Creators, besides which, there was a Multitude of Idols to intercede with the Sun and Moon, and the Temples were dedicated to those Idols. There were also Idols of Gold in the Houses, and those who could not attain to it, had them of Wood, putting what Gold or Emeralds they could get into the Hollow of the Belly; being about half a yard in length, and so great was their Devotion, that whithersoever they went, the Idol was carry'd, holding it with one Arm and fighting with the other in their Battles; but those of *Tunja* were the most religious of all. The dead were bury'd very tight bound up, first taking out their Entrails, and putting Gold and Jewels into the Belly, with others about their Bodies, shrouded with their finest Mantles, and so carry'd them to Chappels appointed for that Purpose, where they were left for ever, from which Bodies the *Spaniards* at first got much Treasure. Others were cast in deep Lakes, with Coffins, and Gold and Jewels in them. They had some confuse Notion of the Immortality of the Soul, saying, that those who had been good here, afterwards enjoy'd much rest, and the wicked endur'd much, being often scourg'd. Those that dy'd for their Country, tho' they had been wicked, were thought to have Repose among the Virtuous, and therefore Men dying in War, and Women in Child-bed went directly into Bliss, for their good Will to the Publick.

LITTLE can be said of the Morality of the *Panches*, as being a Nation so brutish, that they worshipp'd nor regarded nothing but their Pleasure and Vices, nor valu'd any thing but Eating and Diversion especially if they could get human Flesh, and to that Purpose alone they made Inroads into the Kingdom. Most Part of this Country is fruitful, tho' there is some Barren, for in conquering a Province on the Frontiers of the *Tunjas*, the Inhabitants were found to feed

The HISTORY of *America*. - 91

feed on Pisimires, whereof there was Plenty, and being bak'd, they serv'd instead of Bread, some being large, some small, and kept in Yards, where they bred. This noble Kingdom was discover'd, and the three Cities aforesaid founded in it, by the Licenciado *Gonzalo Ximenez de Quesada*, who shew'd himself very discreet both in War and Peace, for which his Name deserves to be honour'd. He was born at *Granada*, and Son to the Licenciado *Ximenez*, and the Lady *Elizabeth de Quesada*. The conquest was carry'd on in the Years 1536, 1537, 1538, and 1539.

C H A P. V.

The strange Adventures of some Spaniards left in Florida, after the unfortunate Expedition of Panfilo de Narvacz, with many Particulars of that Country.

IT is now Time to give an Account of what became of the small Remnant of the Men *Panfilo de Narvaz* unfortunately carry'd into *Florida*, in the Year 1526, where most of them perish'd, only some few being left in the Island of *Malhado*, or Ill-Luck, so call'd for the Miseries they there endur'd. Those few *Spaniards* having escap'd being destroy'd by the *Indians*, who look'd upon them as the Cause of a general Distemper in the Stomach, that then prevail'd among them, and being perswaded, that as there were some among themselves that pretended to work Cures by blowing and stroaking the Parts affected, those Strangers might do the same, they thereupon oblig'd them by Threats to practice that way of Healing, an *Indian* alledging, that since there was a Virtue in Stones, there must of necessity be more in Men, and perhaps this was a particular Providence. The *Spaniards*

92 *The HISTORY of America.*

ards being thus compell'd to it began to practise upon their Patients, blessing them in the Name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost, breathing on them, and saying the Lord's Prayer, and the *Ave Mary*, begging of God to heal the Patient, and to inspire those Barbarians to use them well, whilst they continu'd there. It pleas'd the Divine Goodness, that all the People on whom they made the Sign of the Cross, as has been said, recover'd, for which Reason they gave them Part of what they had, tho' both *Indians* and *Spaniards* were in great Want, which oblig'd them to part, that they might subsist the better; but coming again together, some Months after, they were fourteen in Number, and *Cabeza de Vaca*, being alone with his *Indians*, twelve of them repair'd to him, the two others not being able, because of their great Weakness; and by the way those twelve met one more, and so proceeded farther, because *Cabeza de Vaca* did not come out to meet them. He did not follow them, as was said, because he was then sick, tho' it was not suspected, that he imagin'd so many together could not do well, and therefore he went away to the *Charruco Indians*, where he was in a better Condition, for he play'd the Doctor, and turn'd Merchant, and they wanting many of those Things which he brought them, by reason of the War, he was well entertain'd and travell'd many Leagues up the Inland, and along the Coast with his Commodities, being Sea-Snails, Shells much us'd among them, and other such Things, in Exchange for which he carry'd Deer Skins, Vermillion to paint their Faces and Hair, Flints to point their Arrows, Reeds to make them of, a sort of Glew, and Tufts of Deers Hair, dy'd red. *Cabeza de Vaca* lik'd this way of living, because he was well entertain'd, and always travell'd Southward, to gain Ground, and get out of that Country, and enjoy'd his Liberty, tho' naked and
alone,

The HISTORY of *America*. 93

alone, enduring much Hunger and Cold, for the Space of six Years he was there, having stay'd so long to bring away his two Comrades, *Oviedo* and *Alanis*, who had been left in the Island; but the latter of them dy'd, and the other detain'd him, saying, they would depart in the Spring, which kept him, till at last they set out. Being come to a Creek that is a League over; and by them suppos'd to be the same which they call *Del Espiritu Santo*, or of the Holy Ghost, they were inform'd by some *Indians*, that farther on they would find three Men like themselves, whose Names they told, as also that the *Indians* before them had kill'd *Orantes*, *Valdivieso*, and *Huelva*, for having remov'd from one House to another; and other *Indians* where *Orantes* was, had kill'd *Esquibel* and *Mendez* on Account of a Dream they had as they were wont to do by their own Sons, and to cast some of their Daughters to the Dogs, as soon as born; they added, that the living were very ill us'd, the Boys, who were very unlucky, beating, kicking, and scoffing at them. At the same Time they threw much Dirt at those two *Spaniards*, and cudgell'd them, for which Reason *Oviedo* went back with some *Indian* Men and Women, that had bore them Company, and *Cabeza de Vaca* stay'd there, and they two never met again.

Two Days after what has been related, the *Indians* *Orantes* was with, came to this Place to eat Nuts, on which they fed two Months in the Year, and some Friends went to see *Cabeza de Vaca*, who had been hid by his Favourers. It was a great Satisfaction to them to meet, and no less Trouble to see themselves naked amidst so many Miseries, and having consulted together, they agreed to go farther on; but first to stay some Months till the Nuts being spent the *Indians* remov'd to another Place, to eat *Tunas*, because, if they thought they would go away, they would kill them.

94 *The History of America.*

them. All the rest belonging to the Fleet above mention'd had perish'd, some ston'd to Death, and others drown'd, which was the Fate of *Panfilo de Narvaez*, as *Figueroa*, who was present, told *Cabeza de Vaca*. Being among those *Indians* of the *Tunas*, they endur'd Hunger; because there were not enough for them all. In that Country there were grey and black Cows, with long Hair no bigger than those of *Barbary*, and their Flesh coarser than *Spanish* Beef. When the Time they had agreed on for making their Escape was come, the *Indians* had a Scuffle on Account of a Woman, and parted, as those poor Christians were forc'd to do, not being able to meet again till the next Year, when they were again separated by the *Indians* the very Day they were to have fled, and yet they concerted to come together again the first of *September*, being the full Moon. The 13th the two came, and *Orantes* the 14th, when they took their Flight. Being come to the *Indians Auares*, they were well receiv'd and Fed, those People being inform'd, that they perform'd Cures. The same Night three *Indians* came, who were troubled with Pains in their Heads, desiring *Castillo* to cure them, and as soon as bless'd they were well, and carry'd him *Tunas* and Venison, reporting abroad the Cure that had been made, whereupon many such Persons came, bringing so much to eat, that they knew not what to do with it, and the *Indians* for Joy of those Cures order'd a Dance. The *Spaniards*, who had thought to have proceeded further, being inform'd that the Country was Desert, the *Tunas* being all eaten, and that it was excessive Cold, agreed to stay and Winter among those *Indians*, who went five Days Journey to feed on a sort of Fruit, call'd *Xeros*. When they had settled their Dwellings near a River, many *Indians* came with five sick Persons for *Castillo* to cure them, he bless'd and all pray'd to God to heal them, since that

was

The HISTORY of *America*. 95

was the only means for them to subsist, and the next Morning they were all in Health, to the great Astonishment of the *Indians*, for which those Christians return'd Thanks to God, confiding that he would deliver them out of that Misery.

THE *Spaniards* departed that Place and came to the *Indians* call'd *Maliconas*, *Susolas*, and *Atayos*, among whom their Cures were already known, so that many sick Persons were brought, but *Castillo* being a Man that fear'd God, despair'd of being able to do any good on Account of his unworthiness; which oblig'd *Cabeza de Vaca* to repair to a Place where many sick Persons were, one of them in a dangerous Condition, and took along with him *Orantes* and the Mulatto *Estevanillo*. They found the aforefaid sick Person almost dead, many lamenting him, the House pull'd down, which was a Sign of Death, his Eyes turn'd in his Head, and no Pulse. *Cabeza de Vaca* took off a Mat he had on him, and pray'd to God to restore him, and the rest that wanted it, to Health, and when he had been several Times blest'd and breath'd on, they carry'd him his Bow and presented it to him, with a Frail of *Tunas*, conducting him to cure others, and so those *Spaniards* return'd to their Quarters, being afterwards inform'd by the *Indians* their Friends, that the dying Man got up, spoke, and had eaten with them, and that all the rest were in perfect Health, which was so wonderful, that nothing else was talk'd of through all the Country, others coming to be heal'd and bringing Presents of their Provisions. According to the Account kept by the Moons, they stay'd eight Moons with those *Auares*, neither *Orantes* nor *Estevanillo* having yet perform'd any Cures, but they were so often importun'd to do it that they were forc'd to comply, being call'd the Children of the Sun. Being intent upon holding on their way, they fled one Days Journey from thence to the
Malicones,

96 *The HISTORY of America.*

Malicones, to feed among them on a sort of small Fruit that lasted twelve Days, till the *Tunas* were ripe, whither the *Arbadaos* that were sick resorted. Having endur'd much Hunger there, they were directed to other *Indians* that spoke the same Language, and to add to their Sufferings, they lost their way, and it rain'd very much, which was no small Vexation to them that were stark Naked. Resting that Night in a great Wood, they roasted many *Tunas* to feed on, and in the Morning going to seek out the way they had lost, met with a Number of Women and Boys, who all ran away to call the Men, who with much Admiration came to the *Spaniards* and conducted them to a Village of fifty Houses, where they gaz'd on them with fear, and when somewhat recover'd from their Fright, touch'd their Faces and Bodies, and then themselves, after which the sick were brought, and when cur'd, they freely forbore eating, to give it to them, and were very sorry that they would go away. It was the Custom among all the *Indians* from the Island of *Malhado* to this last Place not to lye with their Wives, from the Time they appear'd to be with Child till two Years after they were deliver'd, and to give suck till twelve Years of Age, which they said was on Account of the great want of Provisions, and they were sometimes three Days without eating. If Man and Wife could not agree it was usual to part and take another, but not if they had Children. None ever parted Men fighting but the Women, nor did they use the Bow in private Quarrels, but only their Fists or Cudgels. They are all Martial Men, and as vigilant against their Enemies as the best in *Europe*. They dig Ditches, and throw up Trenches, make Loop-holes, lay Ambushes, use extraordinary Stratagems, for the most part killing one another by surprize in the Night, being very cruel, are ready upon any Alarm, watch their Opportuni-

ties

The HISTORY of *America*. 97

ries to take Revenge and make all Advantages of the Failings of their Adversaries. Their way of Pickeering is wonderful, skipping from one side to another, and shoot stooping to avoid being observ'd. There is among them great Variety of Languages and Dwellings

THE *Spaniards* coming to another Town, the Inhabitants carry'd their Children to touch their Hands, giving them Meal made of a certain Fruit like Carobs, that was eaten with Earth, and was sweet and agreeable, whereof they gave them some Entertainments, with dancing. Departing thence, they arriv'd at a Town of an hundred Houses after passing a great River, with the Water up to their Breasts, the People advancing to meet them with Shouts, clapping their Hands on their Thighs making a sort of Musick with hollow Gourds and Stones in them, carrying them to their Houses, without suffering their Feet to touch the Ground, abundance of People flocking to be bless'd. The next Day they he'd on their Way, all the People bearing them Company; and being come to other *Indians* found a good Reception, had much Venison brought them, and all the sick that came to be cur'd went away sound. The same happen'd among the next *Indians* they came to, where there was so much rejoicing, that they could not sleep. Another Custom they observ'd among those People, which was, that the *Indians* who went with the *Spaniards*, plunder'd the Houses where they came, and *Cabeza de Vaca* and his Companions being much concern'd at it, those who had lost their Goods comforted them, bidding them not to be troubled, for they would farther on repay themselves among others that were very rich. Here they began to see Mountains which they thought ran from the North Sea, they made towards them, and the *Indians* pillag'd what they found.

98 *The History of America.*

and when the Strangers were gone, the Natives presented the *Spaniards* with what they had hid, being Beads, Vermillion, and some little Bags of Silver. At this Place they agreed not to make towards the Mountains, because they were near the Sea Coast, where the People are ill-natur'd, whereas up the Inland they are more courteous. Many Men and Women loaded with Water bore them Company, their Authority being so great, that none durst drink without their leave. The *Spaniards* refusing to travel along the Mountains, the *Indians* turn'd back, and they proceeded along a River and found two Women, who gave them Meal of *Indian* Wheat, and about Sun-setting came to a Village of about twenty Houses, the Inhabitants lamenting, as knowing that the *Indians*, who came with them, would plunder what they had; but seeing them alone, they rejoyc'd. The next Morning when they were about to depart, the *Indians* of the Town behind them appear'd and pillag'd the Place, saying, that those Strangers were the Children of the Sun, and cur'd the sick, tho' they were able to destroy them, and therefore they should respect them, and go along to plunder the next Town, according to Custom. They travell'd three Days with those People, who conducted them to a Place of many Houses, sending some before to give an Account of what the others had said of the *Spaniards*, adding much more of their own Invention, being fond of Novelty, and addicted to lying, especially where any Interest is expected. The *Spaniards* were well receiv'd, the stranger *Indians* plunder'd as much as they could, and return'd. *Cabeza de Vaca* and his Companions advanc'd above fifty Leagues along the Side of the Mountain, and in a Town of forty Houses found a large Copper Hawksbell, with a Face represented on it, very much valu'd, which those Peo-

The HISTORY of America. 99

ple said they had of their Neighbours. Travelling seven Leagues over a Mountain, where the Stones were Iron-Ore, at Night they came to some Houses seated on the Bank of a River, where the prime Men came out to receive the *Spaniards* with their Children on their Backs, giving them little Bags of fine Sand, and pounded Antimony, with which they daub their Faces, as also Beads, and Mantles of Nears-Leather. Their Food was *Tunas* and Pine-Apple Kernels, better than those in *Spain*, but small, as are the Trees.

IN this Place they brought *Cabeza de Vaca*, a Man that had been wounded in the Side with an Arrow, the Point whereof, he said, reach'd to his Heart, which put him to much Pain; and he was very sick. *Cabeza de Vaca* with a Knife rip'd open his Breast, and though with much Difficulty, drew it out, and stich'd it up; but the Blood running, he stopp'd it with the Scrapings of a Cow's Hide. The Point of the Arrow, which was of a Deer's Bone, was sent about all the Country, and there was much dancing; and the next Day he cut the Stitches, and the Man was sound, saying, he felt no Pain. This Cure gain'd the *Spaniards* so much Reputation, that they could do what they pleas'd. Those People show'd the Hawksbel, and said there were many Plates of that Metal bury'd in the Country from whence they had it. From this Place they proceeded through so many Nations, that it is impossible to mention them all, and all the way they Plunder'd one another, all being well satisfy'd. The *Spaniards* had always so much Company, that they knew not how to turn themselves, and all the way they kill'd Deer, Hares, Stock-doves, and other sorts of Birds, with their Arrows and Staves, which they presented to the Christians, without touching them till they begg'd leave. Sometimes there were above four

H 2

100 *The HISTORY of America.*

thousand Persons with them, which was very troublesome, because none would eat or drink till they had blest and breath'd upon it, and thus they travell'd above thirty Leagues, till they came to another sort of Reception without Plundering, tho' they offer'd all they had, and it was divided among those that return'd Home, and those who went on attending the *Spaniards*, by that means recover'd what they had presented of the others that were farther on. They travell'd above fifty Leagues through desert craggy Mountains, enduring much Hunger, till they came into Plains, where they had a kind Reception, and abundance of Goods were given to those that were to return Home. The People farther on being their Enemies, they sent two Women to give them Notice that the Christians were coming, it being usual among them, tho' they be at War, for the Women to Trade. No People coming out to meet them, the *Spaniards* were for striking off to the Northward; but the Women said, there were wicked People that way, and no Meat nor Water to be had. The *Spaniards* being angry, they said, they would go whithersoever they commanded, tho' they were sure to perish, and many falling sick, eight Men dy'd, which struck such a Consternation through the Country, that they thought they should dye as soon as they saw the *Spaniards*.

So great was the dread conceiv'd by those People, that they intreated the *Spaniards* not to be angry, imagining that they were the cause why the Sick dy'd, whereupon *Cabeza de Vaca* and his Companions, apprehending that the Distemper would carry off too many, earnestly pray'd to God to put a stop to it, and the Sick began to recover. Three Days Journey from this Place they halted, and the next Day *Orantes* and *Esquivanillo*, guided by a Woman Slave, went to a Village where her Father liv'd,
and

The HISTORY of *America*. 101

and saw the first Houses that were any thing regularly built. Returning thence to *Cabeza de Vaca*, they acquainted him with it, and that those People did eat Kidney Beans, Pompions, and *Indian* Wheat. Being come to this Town, they dismiss'd the *Indians*, giving them what they had, and there began another Custom, for they came not out to meet the *Spaniards*, but expected them sitting in their Houses, hanging down their Heads, their Hair before their Eyes and all their Goods laid in an Heap in the Middle of the House, presenting them with good Leather Mantles, and all they had. The People were well shap'd and industrious, easily to be understood, and answering to the Purpose, whom they call'd *De las Vacas*, or of the Cows, because they kill'd many up the River. The Women cover'd themselves with Deer-Skins, as did the Men that were not fit for War, and staying there two Days, they got Information of the way they were to follow; being told, that up a River to the Northward they would find many Cows to feed on, and to the Westward there was Mayz. They agreed to hold on that way hoping it would lead them to what they desir'd, and cross'd the Country in thirty four Days Journey, till they came to the South Sea, having endur'd much Hunger, passing through a Nation that feeds on the Dust of Straw, one third Part of the Year, as they were forc'd to do, being there at that Time. After the aforesaid Number of Days they came to settled Houses, where there was Plenty of Corn, Pompions, and Kidney Beans, and the People wore Cotton Mantles, those who had attended the *Spaniards* returned Home well pleas'd, loaded with those Things. They travell'd above an hundred Leagues through that Country, blessing God for having brought them into a Country where there was so much Store of Provisions,

102 *The HISTORY of America.*

for the Natives did eat much Venison and other Game, and presented the *Spaniards* with Mantles, Beads of Coral, taken out of the South Sea, Turkey Stones, and four or five Points for Arrows made of Emeralds, which they said they had of another Nation in Exchange for Plumes and Feathers of several Colours.

In this Country the Women were more modestly clad than in others they had seen, were shod, and all in general, well or sick came to be bless'd, believing those Christians to be Men come from Heaven, for which Reason they had much Authority among them, for they talk'd and eat little, and did not show that they were tir'd, for to say the truth they were sufficiently try'd among so many Nations, and it pleas'd God that all understood them; tho' they knew but six Languages, which, if Providence had not preserv'd them, would have been of little use, where there was such great Variety of them. All the way they travell'd those who were at War made Peace, that they might have the Opportunity of going to see the Christians, and thus they left them all in Amity, declaring every where, that they worshipp'd one only God, who had created Heaven and Earth, the Sun, Moon, and Stars, and all other Things, from whom all Blessings proceeded; that they ought to hurt no Body, nor take away the Goods of others, with such like Instructions, which were well receiv'd. These *Spaniards* believ'd that the Country along the Coast was well Peopled, and abounded in Provisions, because the Natives sow'd Mayz and Kidney Beans thrice a Year, and in one Town they found the People had Arrows poison'd with the Juice coming from a sort of Fruit, or of the Tree that bears it. There they stay'd three Days, and in another a Days Journey farther, fifteen, because of the great Flood in the River, and there *Castillo* saw about an *Indian's* Neck a Buckle belonging

The HISTORY of *America* 103

ing to a Sword Belt, and an Horseshoe ty'd to it. Asking the *Indian* where he had them, he answer'd, they came from Heaven, asking again, who had brought them, he said some Bearded Men that came from Heaven to that River, with Horses, Spears, and Swords; and desiring to know where those Men were, it was answer'd, that they were gone to the Sea, where they and their Spears plung'd under the Water, and afterwards, towards Sun-set, they saw them above it again. They joyfully return'd Thanks to God for having heard some News of Christians, and hasten'd on their Journey, to find them the sooner, receiving better Information the farther they went, telling the *Indians* that they were going to bid those Men not to kill, or make Slaves of, or do them any harm, at which they were much rejoyc'd. They then pass'd through much Land destitute of any Inhabitants, tho' it was fruitful and agreeable, the *Indians* being fled to the Mountains for fear of the *Spaniards*, and at length came to a Town on the Top of an Hill, whither abundance of People were withdrawn, who presented them with above two thousand Load of Corn, which they gave to the poor, hungry People that had conducted them thither, and going on, many resorted to them, and Tokens appear'd of the Places where *Spaniards* had lain. They return'd Thanks to God, believing their miserable Captivity to be near an End, and *Cabeza de Vaca* advancing with *Estevanillo* and eleven *Indians*, overtook four *Spanish* Horsemen, who were much surpriz'd to hear a Man in that strange Garb, speak their Language. They gaz'd on him a long Time, without asking any Questions or speaking a Word; he desir'd them to conduct him to their Commander, as they did, and it was *James de Alcaraz*, who told *Cabeza de Vaca*, that they were in *New Galicia*, and thirty Leagues from the Town

104 *The History of America.*

of St. *Michael*. *Castillo* and *Orantes* then came with above six hundred of those that had fled on Account of the War, who call'd others, and they came readily, returning peaceably to their Houses, and sowing the Land. The four *Spaniards* having taken leave of the *Indians*, and return'd Thanks for the Fatigue they had undergone for their sake; when they had travell'd twenty five Leagues farther, arriv'd very Hungry and Thirsty at *Culiacan*, where *Melchior Diaz* was Caprain and Alcalde of the Province, who receiv'd them with singular Humanity, giving Thanks to God for having deliver'd them from so long and miserable a Captivity, praying them to appease the *Indians* of that Country, who were in Arms, which they undertook, sending other *Indians* to call them, upon whose Perswasions three Caziques came with about thirty *Indians*, bringing Presents o^r Feathers and Emeralds. *Cabeza de Vaca* asking them, in whom they believ'd, they answer'd, in one they call'd *Agnar*, who they suppos'd was Lord of all Things, residing in Heaven, and gave them Rain when they pray'd for it, which they had learnt of their Fore Fathers. He told them, that *Agnar* was God the Creator of Heaven and Earth, according to whose Will all Things were disposed, and that after Death he rewarded the Good and punish'd the Wicked; that they should believe this, return to their Houses, live in Peace, build an House to worship God as the Christians did, and when any of them repair'd to their Towns, they should come out to meet them with Crosses in their Hands, and not with their Bows and Arrows, and then they would be their good Friends, use them well, and teach them all the rest they ought to know, to the End that God might reward them in the other Life, all which they promis'd to do.

THE

The HISTORY of *America*. 105

THE four *Spaniards* then went on, with some few *Indians* towards the Town of *St. Michael*, the People by the way, who were peaceable, coming out in great Numbers to meet them, with Presents, whom they perswaded to become Christians, since they were Subjects to the Crown of *Spain*, they receiving them lovingly, and praying that their Children might be Baptiz'd. A few Leagues from thence they were overtaken by *Alcaraz*, above mention'd, who said, that all the Country they had found Desert, was then well peopled and peaceable, and the *Indians* going to sow their Lands. These Christians judg'd that the distance from Sea to Sea, where they had cross'd might be about two hundred Leagues, as they declar'd in the Town of *St. Michael*, where they made Oath of the Truth of all that has been here related, before a Notary, on the 15th of *May*, this Year 1536, and having rested there fifteen Days in order to proceed an hundred Leagues to the City of *Compostela*, where *Nuño de Gu man* then was, he there receiv'd them kindly, and cloathed them, in order to go on to *Mexico*, where they arriv'd on the 22d of *July*, and found all courteous Entertainment from the Vice-Roy Don *Antonio de Mendoza*. At *Mexico*, *Cabeza de Vaca* and *Orantes* parted from *Castillo*, and *Estevanillo* went away to *Vera Cruz*, whence they pass'd over into *Spain*, the following Year 1537. Of *Cabeza de Vaca*, we shall have more Occasion to speak hereafter.

1536

T H E



THE
General HISTORY
Of the vast CONTINENT and ISLANDS of
AMERICA, &c.

DECAD. IV. BOOK IV.

CHAP. I.

A Word concerning the Provinces of Honduras and New Galicia; the Ad-lantado Almagro returns from Chile to Cuzco.



THE Spaniards that had been left at Honduras by Andrew de Cerezedo, being reduc'd to the utmost Misery, sent to intreat the famous Peter de Alvarado, who had gain'd so much Renown under Cortes in the Conquest of Mexico, and was then Governour of the Province of Guatimala, to come to their Relief, which he did, with all possible Expedition; and coming to Naco,

The HISTORY of *America*. 107

Naco, was receiv'd with much Joy, and the Government resign'd into his Hands, after which he founded the Town of *Gracias a Dios*, or Thanks be to God, so call'd, because the Men having endur'd much in Travelling over barren Mountains, when they came into that Plain, said, Thanks be to God that we are come into a good Country. This prov'd a good Situation, for soon after several rich Gold Mines were found, within four or five Leagues of it, which drew abundance of People, and the Colony thrrove. *Alvarado* founded another Colony at Port *(avallos*, and having brought all Things into good Order, sail'd away into *Spain*.) Soon after he was gone, *Francis de Montejo*, who had been oblig'd to quit *Yucatan*, as has been said in its Place, having receiv'd the King's Commission to that Effect, went and took upon him the Government of *Honduras*, which *Alvarado* had with so much Trouble and Expence set upon a good Foot, when that Province was upon the Point of being lost.

At the same Time a Judge was sent to try *Nuño de Guzman*, Governour of *New Galicia* for the many and heinous Crimes laid to his Charge, and tho' that Judge sent him Prisoner to *Mexico*, whence he was convey'd into *Spain*, he there found Favour enough to get off, without any Satisfaction made for the Wrongs he had done. Orders were now sent to Don *Antonio de Mendoza*, Vice-Roy of *Mexico*, to use all possible Means for the converting and civilizing of those *Indians*, all which the said Vice-Roy, being a Person of singular Discretion and Piety, took Care should be put in Execution, and met with all the Success that could be expected, abundance of virtuous religious Men being sent over to instruct those People, who incessantly labour'd in that Function. Some of them having learnt the Language to Perfection, compos'd Catechises and other

108 *The History of America.*

other Tracts fit for those People, and many of their Children began to be educated among the *Spaniards*, and taught the *Latin* Grammar, for which proper Persons were appointed, and maintain'd at the King's Expence. Having hinted at these Things, we must now return to the Affairs of *Peru*, which were the greatest Transactions then in those Parts.

THE Adelantado Don *James de Almagro* having rested at *Copia*, because there was Plenty of Provisions, remov'd to another Vale call'd *Opiapo*, in which, and in another call'd *Coquimbo*, they found all he had Occasion for: whence he advanc'd an hundred Leagues into *Chile*, and came to the chief Town then nam'd *Conconicagua*, where abundance of the Country People expected him, and among them a *Spaniard*, who upon a Point of Honour was gone where he might not be known, because *Pizarro* had affronted him. *Almagro* being well inform'd of the Nature of the Country, repented his having undertaken that Journey, and would have return'd to *Peru*, but for the sake of his Reputation; however, being desirous to do the King Service, and to satisfy the Soldiers, he sent a Captain with eighty Horse and twenty Foot, to make Discoveries as far as he could, who return'd with a very bad Account, as did others commanded out after him upon the same Errand. The Wealth that had been expected not appearing, all advis'd *Almagro* to return to *Peru*, and enjoy the Government the King had granted him, fixing the Boundaries with that of *Pizarro*, and some told him, that if he should happen to dye there, he would have nothing left him but the Title of *Don*. So pressing were those People to return to the Enjoyment of the Comforts they had found in *Peru*, that he was much perplex'd, and tho' he would willingly have made some stay in *Chile*, and founded at least two Colonies, they importun'd him

The History of America. 109

so much that he was oblig'd to turn back to the great Detriment of the People of those Nations. The more to induce him to return to *Peru*, his Friends urg'd, that since the King had conferr'd on him the Government of *New Toledo*, he should take Notice that *Cuzco* was within his Limits, because they knew he was desirous to live in that City. (Setting out accordingly on their Return, so took another Way, to avoid the snowy Mountains, and discover'd the Desert of *Atacama*, being all Sand for ninety Leagues, with little Water in it, and very little Green, unless in four or five Places, which occasion'd the Death of many Men and Horses.) As soon as pass'd the Desert they heard of the War *Mango Inga* made at *Cuzco*, and that all the Country was in Arms, which inclin'd *Almagro* to make the more haste back, to relieve the *Spaniards* in *Cuzco*, and accordingly they made no halt till they came to *Arequipa*, which is seventy Leagues from *Cuzco*, where they were well receiv'd and rested some Days.

THE Desert of *Atacama* divides the Kingdom of *Peru* from that of *Chile*, to which there are two Ways, the one over the Mountains, and the other through the said Desert, which, as has been said, is near an hundred Leagues over, and dry, impassable at some time in the Winter, by Reason of the great Snow that falls, in which Travellers perish; and in the midst of it is the River of Salt, the Water whereof is so brakish, that it presently grows thick in the Hand, or any Vessel, and the Banks are all cover'd with Salt. There are few of the wild Sheep call'd *Guanacos* in this Desert, for they do not increase by Reason of the want of Grass and Water. The Mountain way is more tedious, and Desert, there being no passing the *Cordillera*, or great Ridge of Mountains without much Danger from the cutting Winds

110 *The HISTORY of America.*

Winds and Snows, which perish Men, when the Passage is not undertaken in the proper Season, the Air being so sharp, that it penetrates the very Bowels.

Almagro having rested his Forces some Days at *Arequipa*, march'd for *Cuzco*, and in regard that he had formerly contracted Friendship with *Mango Inga*, sent him word, that he wonder'd at his Revolt, desiring him to be peaceable, and he would soon be with him; and asking what had induc'd him to act as he did. The *Inga* answer'd, he rejoyc'd at his Return, and sent word of the Motives he had for taking Arms, complaining that no Respect was paid him in *Cuzco*, and that tho' he had given *Ferdinand Pizarro* much Gold, he still importun'd him for more, in such pressing Manner as had oblig'd him to withdraw; but still desir'd to be at peace with him, looking upon him as a Friend, and therefore he might send him some trusty *Spaniard* to treat with. *Almagro* sent two with a Present, whom the *Inga* receiv'd favourably, and having told them that *Pizarro's* Avarice had necessitated him to take Arms, added, that there should be a Suspension till he saw *Almagro*, and gave Orders accordingly to his *Indians*. At this Time Advice was brought to *Cuzco*, that *Alonso de Alvarado* was with his Forces at *Xauxa*, and that *Almagro* was advancing towards that City, holding Intelligence with the *Inga*, to whom *Ferdinand Pizarro* sent a Mulatto Boy with a Letter to signify that *Almagro* was not Governour, but *Francis Pizarro*, which was the Beginning of Discord. The *Inga* gave the Letter so sent him to *Almagro's* two Messengers, saying, he was satisfy'd that the People of *Cuzco* ly'd, for *Almagro* was the true Governour, and therefore he would cause that false Messenger's Hand to be cut off, but upon their earnest intreaty only cut off one of his Fingers; which done he dismiss'd those

The HISTORY of *America*. III

those Messengers, bidding them desire *Almagro* to meet him in the Vale of *Yucay*, for he would be a Friend to none but him. However, those *Spaniards* told *Almagro*, that they did not think the *Inga* sincere, and so it appear'd, for Captain *Ruy Diaz* being sent to him, he would not permit him nor his Companions to return, and the Adelantado advanc'd with his Forces to *Urcos*, six Leagues from *Cuzco*.

THIS *Mango* was made *Inga* at eighteen Years of Age, and at first seem'd to be well inclin'd, but afterwards prov'd very cruel. When the War broke out, all the *Indians* that were with the *Spaniards* went to serve him, but understanding that he order'd them to be hang'd, they return'd and prov'd very useful, for it is thought, that without them they could not have held out, because they were inveterate Enemies to *Mango*. He put to Death all his Brothers, for fear they might some way deprive him of the Empire, and therefore his Brother *Paul* kept always with *Almagro*, to save his Life; the *Inga* who generally had a Sword in his Hand, killing the *Indians*, when he was angry, which was the Occasion that the Country was the sooner reduc'd. *Paul* behav'd himself well upon all Occasions, being a Man of good Sense, went through the Fatigues of the Expedition into *Chile* with much Courage, and when *Almagro* possess'd himself of *Cuzco*, he gave him his Brother *Guascar*'s House to live in, being the best in the City, with a good Estate; he was always much respected by the *Indians*, as being of the Royal Blood, and dy'd a Christian, having long before his Death built a stately Chapel in the City, where he was bury'd, and much lamented by all the Country, being the last of the *Ingas*, which has been taken Notice of here, tho' out of its proper Place, that it may not be quite omitted.

FROM

112 The HISTORY of America.

FROM *Urcos*, *Almagro* went to the Vale of *Tucay* to confer with the *Inga* as had been appointed, whereupon *Ferdinand Pizarro* march'd out from *Cuzco* with a strong Party, to endeavour to discover the said *Almagro's* Intentions, and coming near *Urcos* was met by a Body of *Indians*, with only two *Spaniards* among them, who had been sent out by *Salvadora*, *Almagro's* Commander in that Place, to observe him. Those *Indians* railing at *Pizarro*, and casting many Stones and Darts, he attack'd, and made them retire, the two *Spaniards* doing the same. *Pizarro* then sent two others to endeavour to speak to them, who drawing near by Degrees, when they knew one another embrac'd, and *Pizarro's* Men desir'd the others to go to speak to him, which they did, and he having embrac'd them, enquir'd after *Almagro* and his Intentions. They answer'd, his Design was to possess himself of *Cuzco*, which fell within the Government allotted him. The *Indians* observing how those *Spaniards* had been receiv'd, went to *Salvadora*, and told him, they plainly perceiv'd how little Confidence was to be repos'd in his Party, since they did not cut off those their Enemies, that were come from *Cuzco*. *Salvadora* was much concern'd to find those Barbarians so sharp, and that *Pizarro* was come out at a Time that might obstruct the Conclusion of the Peace that was in Agitation, and thereupon march'd out from *Urcos* to an Eminence in Sight of the *Pizarros*, whence he sent an *Alguazil* and a *Notary* to require *Ferdinand* not to offend those *Indians*, who were within *Almagro's* Government, and under his Protection. Little Account was made of that Ceremony, the *Pizarros* answering, that since those *Indians* were under *Almagro's* Protection, he should command them to lay down their Arms, and the same should be done on their Side; but as to *Cuzco*, that *Ferdinand Pizarro* held that City for the King

The HISTORY of *America*. II 3

King and *Francis Pizarro*, and would not part with it, if it cost him his Life. Thus the *Alguazil* and the Notary return'd, *Ferdinand* charging them to desire *Saavedra* to come to a Conference, which he consented to, both of them being subtle Men and designing to impose one upon another.

BEING met, after many Compliments, *Pizarro* represented how prejudicial Discord among them would be to the Service of God and the King, advising him to joyn his Forces with those of *Cuzco*, and promising great Rewards for so doing, in Hopes that Interest would prevail on him. *Saavedra*, whose Design was to gain Time, which was requisite for advancing *Almagro's* Affairs, perswaded *Pizarro* not to break the Peace, but to quit *Cuzco*, which was well known to belong to *Almagro*, desiring a Treaty to be set on Foot in order to it, and thus they parted, without coming to any Resolution. Both Parties advis'd their Commanders to attack their Adversaries immediately, believing that a Victory on either Side would put an End to the Quarrel, but neither would consent, *Saavedra* because he had no such Orders, and *Pizarro* because he would not be the Aggressor. *Almagro* was now much perplex'd in the Vale of *Tucay*, being inform'd, that Captain *Ruy Diaz* and his Companions, whom he had sent to treat with *Mango*, were stripp'd, their Beards and Hair cut off, their Faces and Bodies daub'd with Vermillion, and they ty'd to Stakes, where the *Indians* threw rotten Fruits at, and oblig'd them to drink much of their Liquor, *Mango* not coming to the concerted Interview, till he enter'd the Vale with a numerous Army; besides being acquainted with what had pass'd between *Pizarro* and *Saavedra*, he order'd his General *Roderick Orgoñez* to be upon his Guard, since he had two Enemies upon his Hands. At the same Time *Pizarro* sent out six Horsemen

114 *The History of America.*

to spy what was doing in the Vale of *Yucay*, which *Almagro* being inform'd of, he surpriz'd four of them, to enquire how Affairs stood at *Cuzco* and in other Parts. The *Inga's* Messengers seeing those four well us'd, ask'd leave to return to their Master, desiring the Prisoners should be deliver'd to them. *Almagro* answer'd, he would have the *Inga* come, that they might march together against those that were in *Cuzco*, and then he would deliver those and other Prisoners. The *Indians* repair'd to *Mango*, saying, the Sun had deliver'd him from falling into the Hands of his Enemies, who having taken those four Men, treated them like Brothers, whereupon the *Inga* and the High-Priest *Vileboma* resolv'd not to trust *Almagro*, but to treat him as an Enemy, and accordingly sent fifteen thousand Men to attack him, who did it so furiously that the *Spaniards* were at first put to it, but by means of an Ambush they laid, repuls'd the *Indians*, who afterwards treated Captain *Ruy Diaz* and his Companions worse than before.

Almagro then resolv'd to march towards *Cuzco*, being invited by Letters from his Friends, for he had many by Reason of his Courtesy and agreeable Temper, whereas the *Pizarros* were much hated for their Pride, and all Men dreaded the Calamities of a Civil War. When come within half a League of *Cuzco*, *Almagro* represented to his Officers, how long he had serv'd the King, who had been pleas'd to confer that Government on him, wherein the City of *Cuzco* was certainly included, desiring they would assert his just Cause; but that rather than come to an open Rupture, if they thought fit, he would send Messengers to know what *Ferdinand Pizarro's* Intentions were. They all approv'd of his Proposal, promising to stand by him faithfully, whereupon *Laurence de Aldana*, and *Basco de Guevara* were sent

The HISTORY of *America*. 115

sent to tell *Pizarro* that *Almagro*, hearing of the Revolt of the *Indians*, was return'd from *Chile* to his Assistance, and since he was come, desir'd he would peaceably permit him to take Possession of the Government the King had conferr'd on him, without interrupting the Friendship that was establish'd between him and his Brother; with these Messengers went the four *Spaniards* before mention'd to have been taken by *Almagro*, whom he then freely set at Liberty. They met *Ferdinand Pizarro* marching with an hundred and sixty Horse and Foot, and resolv'd to decide that Controversy by Dint of Arms. Having deliver'd their Message, and contending that the City should be put into the Possession of *Almagro*, *Pizarro* stepping aside with *Aldana*, who was his Friend and Countryman, earnestly intreated he would tell him what *Almagro's* Intentions were, and being by him assur'd, that there was no Design to violate the Friendship establish'd between him and his Brother, nor to raise any Commotions, *Pizarro* answer'd, that *Almagro* was very welcome, and might come into the City, one half whereof should be evacuated for him; after which *Pizarro* return'd to *Cuzco*, and leave was given to carry Provisions to *Almagro's* Camp, many at the same Time writing to him, either for the ill Will they bore the *Pizarros*, or because they expected that he was to become their Governour. *Almagro* having receiv'd *Pizarro's* Answer, and knowing him to be a deceitful, double meaning Man, order'd *Christopher de Sotelo* to go to *John de Saavedra*, and bid him to be upon his Guard, since he knew that *Pizarro* was a Person that had no regard to any thing so he might carry on his Designs. Just as *Sotelo* was upon setting out, Advice was brought from *Cuzco*, that a Party was going out from that City to intercept him. This and its being known that *Pizarro* always spoke contemptibly of *Almagro*, mov'd

116 *The HISTORY of America.*

many to resolve to be reveng'd of him. *Almagro's* best Friends advis'd him not to send *Sotelo*, but to order *Saavedra* to joyn, because it was dangerous for the Forces to be divided, and at the same Time to require those in *Cuzco* to receive him as their Governour, pursuant to the King's Commission. Accordingly he sent to *Saavedra*, and moving his own Camp, they met near the Salt-Pits, whence they return'd towards *Cuzco*, and halting near the City, he sent his Commission to the Magistrates, requiring them to admit him as their Governour. *Mango Inga*, who was at *Tambo*, had Notice of all that pass'd, in Hopes that the *Spaniards* would fight at the Salt-pits, and to that Effect, the High-Priest *Vileboma* offer'd many Sacrifices, looking upon the ill usage of Captain *Ruy Diaz*, and his Companions as no small one. *Ferdinand Pizarro* seeing *Almagro* so near the City, made all the necessary Dispositions for the Defence of it, and then came the licenciado *Guevara* and *Ferdinand de Sosa*, demanding to have the Magistrates assembled, before whom they presented his Commission, and requir'd he should be receiv'd as Governour. After many Debates they said that it was a Matter of great Consequence, and as such they cou'd not give an Answer to it till the Morrow, to which Effect it was requisite that a Suspension of Arms should be concluded for some Days, which *Almagro* would not consent to, supposing it to be an Artifice of *Ferdinand Pizarro*, to gain Time, till *Alonso de Alvarado* and the Marquess came to his Assistance.

Pizarro fearing to be attack'd that Night, was in much Perplexity, and the more for that he perceiv'd the Inhabitants were less firm to him than he had expected; yet on the one hand, declar'd he would defend the City, tho' it cost him his Life, and on the other said, he would deliver up the City, if any
such

The HISTORY of America. 117

such Order from the King could be produc'd. *Almagro*, who had Intelligence of all that was done, by the Advice of his Friends, resolv'd to expect the Answer of the Magistrates, and in case it was not to his liking to enter the Place by Force. His Messengers returning, the Suspension of Arms was agreed to, upon Condition that *Almagro* should continue on the Ground where he then was, and that *Pizarro* should not proceed in fortifying the City. Most of the Soldiers in *Cuzco*, being disgusted at *Pizarro's* harsh Temper, were inclin'd to *Almagro*, who was generous and mild, so that they began to speak their Minds, and being tir'd with watching many Nights under Arms, and that Night being cold and rainy, they all went away to their Quarters, only twenty staying at *Pizarro's* House, with some Muskets standing on Rests at his Door. The Men that came from *Chile* were very uneasy on Account of the Suspension of Arms, alledging it was only a Contrivance of *Pizarro*, who having only two hundred Soldiers with him, of which the one half were discontented, only gain'd Time to be joyn'd by *Alonso de Alvarado*, who was come to *Abancay*, and that having broken down the City Bridge, which was next to them, he had violated the Suspension of Arms, and therefore it was lawful to attack and possess themselves of the City of *Cuzco*, which would put an end to that Discord, others were of a different Opinion; but the first prevailing, General *Ogoë* in a Moment drew up the Forces, and advanc'd towards the City, *Almagro* having given strict Orders that no Man should be kill'd or plunder'd, his Intention being no other than to take Possession of what the King had granted him. When they enter'd the City, some within it might have given Notice to *Pizarro*, but thought fit to wait the Event, so that the Night being dark and rainy, *Al-*

118 *The History of America.*

magro with one Party advanc'd to the Church, and his General *Orgone* (with another to *Pizarro's* House, to prevent any Succour coming to him,) *Basco de Guevara* taking Post in another Street to the same Effect. *Orgone* beset *Pizarro's* House, and secur'd the Muskets, when *Ferdinand Pizarro* hearing the Noise, arm'd himself, and with half his Men, went to make good a Door, sending his Brother *Gon alo* with the other half to defend another, railing at *Almagro* for making that attack. *Orgone* bid him surrender and he should be well us'd, which he refus'd, and *Orgone* to save Effusion of Blood, set fire to the House, by that means obliging them to run to him to avoid being burnt in it. *Almagro* would not then see the *Pizarros* till his Passion was over, but order'd the Magistrates to meet, and pay Obedience to the King's Orders, which they did, and he promis'd not to make any Alteration in the Government, but to treat them with Generosity and Affection, and accordingly offer'd to make *Gabriel de Rojas* his Lieutenant in the City, who, tho' concern'd or the ill Fortune of the *Pizarros*, accepted of it. Thus the Affairs of *Cuzco* seem'd to be in a peaceable Posture, but the *Indians* bringing Advice that *Alonso de Alvarado* was at the Bridge of *Abancay*, or *Apurima*, Consultations were held how to deal with him. This Discord among the *Spaniards* was very pleasing to the *Indians*, in Hopes that those Strangers destroying one another, they should recover their Empire, to which purpose they offer'd frequent Sacrifices, and tho' a considerable Part of their Army was disbanded, yet a great Number lay still at *Tambo*, with the *Inga*, waiting to see the Event of those Disorders.)

C H A P.

C H A P. II.

What pass'd between Almagro and Alonso de Alvarado, till this latter was defeated; Treaties between Almagro and Pizarro concluded and violated.

Alonso de Alvarado advancing with his Forces to relieve Ferdinand Pizarro, when he had pass'd the Vale of Andaguailas, was told, that Almagro had possess'd himself of Cuzco, and seiz'd the Pizarros, but would not give Credit to it, and therefore proceeded to Cochacaxa, a Days Journey from Auramba. At Cuzco, Almagro being inform'd, that Alvarado was advancing against him, sent a Party of twenty Horse to bring some better Intelligence about him, and receiv'd Advice, that he had five hundred Spaniards with him, whereupon he order'd his General Orgóñez to write to Peter de Lerma, perswading him to come over to his Party, with as many Friends as he could. Lerma, being disgusted with the Pizarros, upon receipt of the letter, gave out that Cuzco had submitted to Almagro, which made many ready to declare for him, some in Hopes of Reward, others for the sake of Peace, and others in Hatred to the Pizarros. Lerma's Answer being brought to Cuzco, Almagro consulted with his Friends what was best to be done, and it was resolv'd to send to require Alonso de Alvarado, since he was in Almagro's Government, to submit to him, or in case he would not, to go back into Pi arro's District. Ferdinand Pi arro, tho' confin'd, being inform'd of this Design, found means to convey a Letter to Alvarado, exhorting him to adhere to his Brother, and to secure the Messengers that went to

require him to submit, who sent that Letter to the Governour *Pizarro*, and to signify to *Almagro* that he had done so, and expected the Governour's Orders thereupon. In the mean Time he fortify'd his Camp, and plac'd Guards on the Bridge of *Abancay*, to prevent being surpriz'd. Whilst these Things were transacting about *Cuzco*, the Governor *Pizarro*, who had, as has been said, long before sent for Succours to all Parts of the *West Indies*, receiv'd a Reinforcement of above two hundred and fifty *Spaniards* from the Island *Hispaniola*, which making up four hundred Horse and Foot, he march'd from *Lima* to reduce the Country that was Revolted. Being come to the Vale of *Guarco*, where a noble and ancient Fortrefs stood, he there receiv'd *Alvarado's* Letter which put him into a great Consternation, for the taking of *Cuzco* and his two Brothers; and by the Advice of his Friends, order'd *Alvarado* to endeavour to keep his Ground, and avoid engaging with the other Party. It was also decreed to write in very courteous manner to *Almagro*, putting him in mind of their former Friendship, of the Service of God and the King, and desiring to have the difference between them amicably adjust'd; making all the necessary Preparations at the same Time, in case it should be necessary to come to a Rupture; tho' some said, there was no necessity for those Struggles, since it were sufficient to enquire whether *Cuzco* really was within *Almagro's* Government; but Ambition prevailing above Justice, that Advice was not regarded.

James and *Gomez de Alvarado*, with some others, were sent by *Almagro* to *Alonso de Alvarado*, to advise him to embrace his Party, and in case of refusal, to show him the King's Orders, and require him to submit to them, all which he refus'd, and instead of it caus'd those Messengers to be disarm'd, and put into Irons, notwithstanding their upbraiding him with Breach of Faith, and violating the
Law

The HISTORY of *America*. 121

Law of Nations, which protects all such Messengers. No Answer returning to *Cuzco* from them in eight Days, *Almagro* concluded they were detain'd Prisoners, and consulting with his Friends what to do in that case, his General *Orgóñez* plainly told him, he did not Question their being made Prisoners, which being a manifest Breach of Peace, he should put to Death the two *Pizarros*, and march out against *Alvarado*, in whose Forces he had many Friends that would immediately come over to him, so to rescue those Gentlemen who were confin'd for serving him. Though this Advice was generally approv'd, *Almagro*, who only aspir'd to get his Government without Effusion of Blood, being naturally averse to it, and unwilling to do the King any Dis-service, or disoblige *Francis Pi arro*, whom he still lov'd, tho' he hated his Brother *Ferdinand*, would not consent to put those two to Death. *Orgóñez*, told him, he might be as merciful as he pleas'd, but should be assur'd, that if ever *Ferdinand Pizarro* gain'd his Liberty, he would be reveng'd to the full, without any Remorse, as plainly appear'd by his natural Temper, so well known by Experience. *Almagro* then order'd the Forces to be in readiness, and the next Day march'd with them out of the City, leaving *Gabriel de Rojas* there for his Lieutenant, with Orders to take special Care of the *Pizarros*. In three Days he arriv'd at the Bridge of *Pu- rima*, where being told that *Alvarado* was march'd another way to *Cuzco*, he made so much haste back, that tho' the Distance was twelve Leagues, he arriv'd there in one Day before Sun-set. *Orgóñez* there telling him, that if he would not put to Death the two *Pizarros*, he might thank himself for whatsoever the Consequences of sparing them might be, he could not be prevail'd with to consent; and having rested eight Days he return'd towards *Alva- rado*,

122 The HISTORY of *America*.

rado, to rescue his Messengers, who tho' Prisoners, sent him Advice of all that happen'd in *Alvarado's* Camp, and among other Things, that *Peter Alvarez Holguin* was gone out with thirty Horse, to get Intelligence of him. *Almagro* thereupon sent *Francis de Chaves* with a stronger Party, to seize those Men, which he perform'd so dexterously, that only three of them escap'd by means of their good Horses. This troubled *Alvarado*, who having posted Guards at the Bridge, and a Ford, expected the coming of *Almagro*, to whom *Peter de Lerma* and others deserted, being conniv'd at by others, that were no less inclin'd to follow his Example.

Almagro being come to the Bridge of *Abancay*, his General *Orgoñez* desir'd the *Inga Paul*, who always adher'd to *Almagro*, and was much Respected to order his *Indians* to throw up a Trench near the Ford, against the Enemies Artillery, and to make two hundred Floats for crossing the River. *Almagro's* Forces consisted of about four hundred and fifty brave and hardy Soldiers, enur'd to Labour, divided into three Bodies, one at the Bridge, another at the Ford, and a third for a Reserve. Three Hours after Night fell, *Orgoñez* made a Faint, as if he would pass the River, by which he kept the Enemy on the other Side, upon their Guard all the Night. The next Day *Almagro* would have sent again to require *Alvarado* to release the Prisoners, but his General *Orgoñez* would not hearken to it, alledging, that such Delays were prejudicial. When Night came on, *Orgoñez* again made show of passing the River, and when he thought it a proper Time, boldly enter'd it with eighty brave Horse, and finding it deep and dangerous, cry'd, Courage Gentlemen, make haste, for this is the Time. As soon as some were pass'd, they alighted, and pressing hard upon *John Perez de Guevara*, who defended that Post,

The HISTORY of *America*. 123

Post, wounded him in the Thigh, so that he fell. *Orgonez* then fir'd some Muskets, which were a Signal to *Almagro* that he had pass'd the River, he then attack'd the Bridge, with sixty Horse and some Foot, who gaining their Point, several of *Alvarado's* Men deserted to them, whilst he made Head against his Enemy with much Resolution. *Orgonez* press'd forward desperately, crying, God save the King and *Almagro*; the other Party praying for the King and *Pizarro*; and tho' *Orgonez* was hurt in the Mouth with a Stone, and bled much, he rush'd with Sword in Hand among the thickest of the Enemy, declaring, he would either conquer or dye, and bidding his Men kill and wound without Mercy, for it was a Shame that those insolent *Indios* should oppose such brave Men. *Alvarado* perceiving he was undone, retir'd to a rising Ground, whither *Orgonez* pursu'd with a Party of Horse, took and sent him Prisoner to *Almagro*. Next he order'd *Francis de Chaves* to go and secure his Camp, which he d.d, sixty Soldiers that had been left to guard it, peaceably submitting with their commanding Officer; however, it was plunder'd and much Treasure found, but *Almagro* caus'd a great Part to be restor'd, and treated the Conquer'd with much Courtesy, saving *Alvarado's* Life, whom *Orgonez* would have Executed. This Victory was gain'd on the 12th of July, 1537, after which *Almagro* discours'd *Alvarado* very affectionately, offering him his Friendship, if he would embrace his Party; and to show that he had never intended to rob any Man, commanded all that had been taken from the Vanquish'd, and could be found, to be restor'd, making good all that was wanting out of his own Treasure, by which and speaking them fair, he gain'd all *Alvarado's* Soldiers, appointing *Peter de Lerma* their Commander.

A COUN

124 *The HISTORY of America.*

A COUNCIL being then call'd to advise what was next to be done, the General *Orgonez* was for sending *James de Alvarado* to govern at *Cuzco*, with Orders to behead the *Pizarros*, *Alonso de Alvarado*, and *Gomez de Tordoya*, and to march the Army to *Lima* and secure the Governour *Pizarro*, all which *Almagro* then consented to, but was presently after dissuaded from putting it in Execution; whereupon *Orgonez* again press'd him to it, urging, that if he did not at least put the two *Pizarros* to Death, as Usurpers of his Right, and Disobedient to the King's Orders, they would prove the ruin of him and all his Friends. *Almagro* desir'd him to be pacify'd, for tho' his Jurisdiction extended to the Vale of *Lima*, he had rather be a loser, than incroach upon another, and to save bloodshed, if he could manage his Affairs without it. They return'd to *Cuzco* on the 25th of the same Month of *July*, 1537, when *Ferdinand Pizarro* being much dejected, his Friend *James de Alvarado* often visited him, and he won eighty thousand Pieces of Eight of him, but would not receive them when sent to him, which sav'd his Life, for *Alvarado* ever after stood his Friend. The General *Orgonez*, an able Commander, and of singular, worldly Prudence, being convinc'd that there could be no lasting Peace, provided Arms, and made Gunpowder, which was then done to Perfection in *Peru*, all the necessary Ingredients for it being found in that Kingdom. The Governour *Pizarro* on the other Hand, sent to *Almagro*, desiring he would set his Brothers at Liberty, and amicably adjust the Limits of their Governments; but he, being advis'd not to trust any of the *Pizarros*, answer'd, that he had seiz'd those Brothers for having disobey'd the King's Orders, and therefore would not dismiss them till all that belong'd to his Government was quitted, since they had dealt unjustly with him; besides

The HISTORY of *America*. 125

besides that he could not put up the wrong done him by *Ferdinand* railing at him both in *Spain* and the *West-Indies*. Whilst these Messages were passing, the Governour *Pizarro* advanc'd to *Nasca*, where he receiv'd the News of the Defeat of *Alonso de Alvarado*, which very much perplex'd him, as fearing that *Almagro* being so strong, would march against him, and therefore advising what to do with the Commendary *Bovadilla*, of the Order of the *Mercenarians*, and some others, it was generally agreed that he should march on, and endeavour to have an Interview with *Almagro*, hoping that as they had been long Friends, all Things would be adjusted; but two others opposing it, and urging, that he ought not to put himself into the Power of his Enemies, and had better return to *Lima*, he approv'd of their Counsel, resolving to gain Time and impose upon *Almagro*, to which Purpose he sent Commissioners to treat at *Cuzco*, and one with them, who had full Power to undo all that they should conclude on. *Almagro* receiv'd them in friendly Manner, but his General *Orgóñez* still urg'd, that he ought to have march'd to *Lima*, to make himself Master of that City, and behead all the *Pizarros*, which he did not Question but the King would approve of; but this was oppos'd by *James de Alvarado*, by whom *Almagro* was entirely govern'd, and after some Debates, it was propos'd to the Commissioners that *Almagro* should remain possess'd of all the Provinces to the Eastward of *Guarco*, and all to the Westward should remain to *Pizarro*, till such Time as the Bishop of *Panama*, who was appointed for that Purpose by the King, should come to settle the Limits of their Governments. Yet all these Proposals came to nothing, *Almagro* being assur'd that the *Pizarros* did not deal sincerely, and would certainly

126 *The HISTORY of America.*

certainly insnare him, if he rely'd upon them, whereupon it was resolv'd to take the Field immediately.

Pizarro, in the mean Time, hasted back to *Lima*, some Soldiers joyning him by the way, and he spreading abroad false Reports against *Almagro*, to destroy the good Opinion generally conceiv'd of him. At *Lima*, he caus'd the Drums to beat, and proclaim'd War, making all the necessary Dispositions for it. *Almagro*, tho', as has been said, he had resolv'd to march against *Pizarro*, did not think fit to leave *Mango Inga* with so great a Power behind him, and therefore sent General *Orgóñez*, with two hundred Horse and Foot to distress that Prince. The *Inga* being sensible that he could not stand his Ground at *Tambo*, where he had lain some Time, remov'd to the Vale of *Amajabamba*, taking Captain *Ruyz* and his Companions along with him, and sending to intreat *Paul Inga* to quit the Party of the *Spaniards*; but *Paul* being well pleas'd with the usage he found among them, answer'd *Mango*, he would have him consider how little he had gain'd when he besieg'd *Cuzco*, with 200000 Men, against only 200, where he had lost 50000, and therefore pray'd him to be reconcil'd to *Almagro*, for tho' he had declar'd him *Inga*, he would freely renounce that Dignity, to restore him to Peace and Quietness, which *Mango* regarded not, inveighing against *Paul*, and fortifying himself in the best Manner. General *Orgóñez* marching against him with the utmost Diligence, was inform'd by some *Indians* of the Preparations that were made to receive him; but being a Man of invincible Courage, he overcame many Difficulties, and tho' some Horses were lost, he enter'd the Vale, and surprising a Fort, the *Indians* after some Resistance fled, and were pursu'd to a River, on the bank whereof *Orgóñez* lay that Night, and there Captain *Ruyz* and his Companions,

The HISTORY of *America*. 127

ons, having made their Escape in that Confusion of the *Indians* came to him, and were receiv'd with much Joy, all Men condoling the ill usage they had gone through. *Orgonez* still pursuing the *Inga*, as he fled over Mountains and Vales, being in much Danger to be taken, he had Thoughts of suing for Peace, but was hinder'd by his People, and at length made his way into another Province that was more difficult of Access, twenty five Leagues from *Cuzco*, *Orgonez* still pursuing so close, that he took many of his People, and the *Inga* escap'd, with only one Woman. This done *Orgonez* return'd to *Cuzco*, releasing all the Prisoners he had taken, some whereof went away to their own Homes, and others return'd to the *Inga*. When he came to the City, *Almagro* dismiss'd *Pizarro's* Commissioners, with this Answer, that two Arbitrators should be appointed on each Side who might settle the Boundaries so much contended for. After which *Almagro* set out from *Cuzco* with five hundred and fifty Horse and Foot, taking *Ferdinand Pizarro* along with him Prisoner, and leaving *Gonzalo Pizarro*, and *Alonso de Alvarado* Prisoners in the City; but they having corrupted their Guards, and drawn others into their Party, to the Number of thirty, made their Escape and got safe to *Lima*.

Almagro advancing in his March to the Province of the *Lucanes*, it was there resolv'd to secure the Sea-Coast, that Supplies might be receiv'd from other Parts, as well as the King's Orders, in case of a War, and to that Purpose to found a Colony in the Vale of *Chincha*. At *Nasca* Advice was brought, that the Prisoners at *Cuzco* had made their Escape, which much troubled *Almagro*, whereupon *Orgonez* told him, he would be undone for not having taken his Counsel to put them to Death, and therefore he ought immediately to Execute *Ferdinand Pi-*
zarro

128 *The History of America.*

zarro, which he would have done had not *James de Alvarado* dissuaded him. Being come into the Vale of *Chincha* in *October*, this Year 1537, a Town was there founded, with the usual Formalities, and call'd *Almagro*, *Pizarro's* Commissioners returning to him from *Cuzco*, with the aforesaid Proposals for an Accommodation, he declar'd he was ready to come into those Measures, and to refer the Adjusting of the Controversy to Arbitrators. Not long after those who had made their Escape from *Cuzco* arriv'd at *Lima*, having been forc'd to fight their way through the Mountains, where they had been attack'd by the *Indians*. From his new Colony *Almagro* sent the Commissioners to *Pizarro* to settle the Limits of their Governments, till the King should order otherwise.

FOR the better understanding of this Controversy it is requisite here to mention what follows. It has been before observ'd, that *F. Thomas de Berlanga*, Bishop of *Tierra Firme*, went to *Lima*, in the Year 1536, with a Commission from the King to settle the Limits of the Governments of *Pizarro* and *Almagro*, allowing the former of them two hundred and twenty Leagues in a direct Line, North and South upon the same Meridian, to commence at the River of *Santiago* in the North; and to the latter two hundred Leagues to commence where the other ended, and so to proceed Southward in the same Manner, these distances to be adjusted by the Latitude, according to the Number of Leagues allow'd to every Degree; and each of them to extend East and West to all Provinces within the said Latitude. The Bishop coming to *Lima* with this Commission, *Pizarro* found means to perswade *Almagro* to undertake the Expedition to *Chile*, without knowing what the King had granted him, and obstructed the Bishop's going to *Cuzco* to execute his

The HISTORY of America. 129

his Commission, which he perceiving, return'd to his Bishoprick, refusing the Presents offer'd him by *Pizarro*.

HE now understanding that *Almagro's* Commissioners were coming, sent *Alonso Alvarez*, with thirty Horse to the Vale of *Mala*, to intercept all Persons and Letters which came that way; pursuant to which the said *Alvarez* seiz'd the Commissioners, and all they had, as well Treasure as Papers. *Pizarro* advising with his Confederates how to proceed in this Case, some of them declar'd it was an open Act of Hostility, and therefore all ought to be restor'd, because *Almagro* had not done so by his Messengers that went to *Cuzco*, and accordingly it was resolv'd, that private Letters should be stopp'd, but the Dispatches restor'd, with a Compliment of Excuse. However, *Alvarez* took away their Horses, and having mounted them on Mules, they were conducted under a Guard to the *Azequia*, or Trench, a League from *Lima*, whither *Pizarro* came to confer with them, and after several Messages backward and forward it was concluded, that *F. Francis de Bovadilla*, Provincial of the *Mercenarians*, should be added to the four Commissioners, to decide all Controversies, as absolute Umpire, which was very disagreeable to *Almagro's* General *Orgonez*, who always advis'd him for the best, yet his Counsel was never taken. *F. Bovadilla* entering upon his Mediatorship at *Mala*, order'd, that *Pizarro* and *Almagro* should both appear before him giving Hostages for the Security of their Persons, but *Pizarro* refus'd to give any Hostage, as never intending to come to an Accommodation, whereupon the Arbitrator requir'd that those two Governours should meet upon the Security of their own, and the Oaths of most of their prime Officers. Upon this Resolution *Orgonez* again, told *Almagro*, that he

130 The HISTORY of *America*.

was certainly a lost Man, if he rely'd on the *Pizarros*, who would never keep Faith with him, advising him again to Execute *Ferdinand Pizarro*, and retire to *Cuzco* along the Plains, whither *Pizarro* would follow him over the Mountains, which would so harrafs his Men, that they would not be fit for Service, assuring him, that whoever came off Victorious would be justified at Court. *Almagro* was deaf to his Advice, which afterwards prov'd his ruin; for as *Orgonez* said, *Pizarro* would not at first take the Oath, tho' afterwards he did, without any design to keep it; and therefore going to *Mala* with only twelve Horsemen as had been order'd, he was follow'd soon after by his Brother *Gonzalo* with seven hundred Men, and laid a Party of Musketers in Ambush to surprize *Almagro* when he came to *Mala*. He on the other Hand would not in the least Tittle transgress his Engagement, tho' he had many Warnings of the Treachery of his Adversaries, but left strict Orders that the Forces should not stir without his Directions. Being come to *Mala*, he went up with Hat in Hand to salute *Pizarro*, who had an Helmet on his Head, which he touch'd, and receiv'd him coldly; and presently began to discourse him in an haughty Manner about his seizing of *Cuzco*, and imprisoning his Brothers; to all which he answer'd very discreetly. Whilst they were in this discourse *Francis de Godoy*, a Man of Honour, who could not bear with the intended Treachery against *Almagro*, gave him Notice of the Design to seize him, as did some others, whereupon he pretended to go down to ease himself, and an Horse being ready at the Door, mounted and rode away with all his Company, his General *Orgonez* having at the same Time, for fear of such false Dealing, march'd his Forces towards the River *Luna nana*.

The HISTORY of *America*. 131

THE *Pizarros* were in a rage to see that *Almagro* had broke through all their Snares, and the Mediator *Bovadilla* having examin'd divers Pilots as to the Latitudes of the divers Places on which the Decision of the Controversy depended, and finding them vary, at length on the 15th of November 1537, pronounc'd Judgment in this manner, viz. That for as much as the Pilots did not agree in the Latitude, particularly of the Town of *Santiago*, the Governours should send a Ship, with two Pilots for each Party, as likewise a Notary, and two other Persons that knew the Town of *Santiago*, who all upon Oath should take the said Latitude ashore because of the Motion of the Ship, which should be attested by the said Notaries, in order to put the King's Orders in Execution: That for as much as *Pizarro* being in Possession of *Cuzco*, *Almagro* had seiz'd it by Force, without any Commission from the King, for so doing, he enjoynd him to restore it to *Pizarro* within thirty Days, and to release the Prisoners there taken within six; that *Pizarro* should furnish *Almagro* with a Ship to send his Dispatches to the King, and allow Merchants to trade with him; that within fifteen Days they should both disperse their Armies, sending out Parties to reduce the Natives, *Almagro* retiring from the Vale of *Chincha* to that of *Nasca*, and *Pizarro* not to depart the Vale of *Lima*; that there should be perpetual Peace between them, without offending one another, and all this under the Penalty of 200000 Pieces of Eight, and forfeiture of their Commands. *Pizarro*, as well he might, declar'd he was content with this Sentence, but *John Rodriguez Barranga*, *Almagro's* Attorney appeal'd from it to the King and Council. When this Judgment was known among *Almagro's* Forces, they were all struck dumb at first; but when recover'd, cry'd out in furious manner, that the Injus-

132 *The History of America.*

tice of that Frier was not to be born with, adding, that *Almagro's* Ignorance, Sloath, and old Age, would occasion the *Pizarros* to triumph over them, and possess the richest Provinces, sending them to live among the *Charcas* and *Collas*, rustick People, who had not so much as Wood. The Mutiny grew so high, that *Almagro* knew not how to quell it. His General *Orgonez*, seeing him in that Perplexity, bid him not be concern'd, tho' it was his own Fault, in never taking his Advice; but that he should still behead *Ferdinand Pizarro*, and march to *Cuzco*, where they would fortify themselves, for he was sure that *Francis Pizarro* never design'd to be at Peace with him.

ON the other Hand, the Governour *Pizarro's* Men were for marching immediately to rescue his Brother *Ferdinand*, and possess themselves of *Cuzco*. However, another Treaty was set on Foot, *Francis Pizarro* resolving to comply with any Composition, provided he might set his Brother at Liberty, and to observe none of it afterwards. The main Articles were, that *Almagro* should remove the new Colony of his own Name to *Zangalla*; that he should have a Ship to send his Dispatches to the King; that he should hold the City of *Cuzco*, till the King might decide the Controversy; that no Alteration should be made in other Particulars; that both Armies should break up within twenty Days, and that *Ferdinand Pizarro* should be set at Liberty, taking an Oath, and giving Security that he wou'd appear before the King, and neither directly nor indirectly act in any Manner to the Prejudice of *Almagro*. Both Parties took a solemn Oath to observe these Articles. This was the Posture of Affairs, when Captain *Peter Anzures*, whom *Pizarro* had sent into *Spain*, return'd to *Lima*, with Orders from the King, that the two Governours should keep within the Districts assign'd them for avoiding of Discord, but in case either of them

The HISTORY of America. 133

at the Time when those Dispatches came to their Hands, had possess'd himsef of any Provinces that the other pretended did appertain to his Government, the same should continue to him that had the Possession for the present, and he who thought himself injur'd should apply to the King and Council of the *Indies*, who upon the Examination of the Right would see Justice done. Notwithstanding this Order was so much in Favour of *Almagro*, *Pizarro* writ to him signifying, that he could not stand to what had been concerted between them, by reason there were fresh Dispatches arriv'd from *Spain*, and he must obey the King's Commands. To avoid tedious Repetitions of Things much to the same Purpose, another fresh Agreement was concluded between those two Governments, by which *Ferdinand Pizarro* was to be set at Liberty, and *Almagro* to retain *Cuzco* till farther Orders from the King. *Pizarro* at the same Time resolving to break through all Capitulations, when he had once recover'd his Brother, and *Almagro*, whose Intentions were always sincere, still complying after so much Breach of Faith on the Part of his Aversaries, to avoid Effusion of Blood, and the other fatal Consequences of a Civil War. Having concluded this Agreement without the Knowledge of his General *Orgonez*, when he acquainted him with it, that Commander laid hold of his Beard with his left Hand, and with the Right made a Motion of cutting his Throat, saying. *Orgonez, Orgonez*, this Head of yours will be cut off for your Friendship to *Don Diego de Almagro*. There were others besides *Orgonez* who concluded, that not only *Almagro's*, but the lives of all his Friends were like to be brought into much Danger by setting *Ferdinand Pizarro* at Liberty, for he was known by long Experience to be revengeful, base, and of a perverse Disposition. However, *Almagro* set him at Liberty, and then march'd

134 *The HISTORY of America.*

away to the Vale of *Zangalla*, to which Place he remov'd the Colony he had before founded at *Chincha*.

C H A P. III.

Falshood of the Pizarros ; all Accommodations rejected ; the Civil War begun ; Almagro's Forces defeated ; he put to Death ; Peter de Candia's unfortunate Expedition.

IT is very Remarkable that the (*Pizarros*) being full of Rancour, and all they had done mere Fiction and Dissimulation, (as soon as ever *Ferdinand* was set at Liberty, without any Regard to their several Promises and Capitulations, not only under their Hands, but the most solemn Oaths, they immediately began to make all Preparations for War, as if it had been already declar'd.) In order to it, a Gentleman, a Lawyer, and a Notary, were sent to require *Almagro*, who was then in the Vale of *Zangalla*, to quit all that had been conquer'd and subdu'd by *Francis Pizarro*, and upon his refusal to lay to his Charge all the Effusion of Blood, and other Calamities that were like to ensue. This bare-fac'd Perfidiousness of the *Pizarros*, caus'd *Almagro* to send away *James de Alvarado* as his Lieutenant, to secure *Cuzco*, which *Orgonez* did not approve of, saying, That *Alvarado's* fair Words were very pleasing, but nothing to the Purpose at that Time. Then the Forces march'd by the way of the Mountain of *Guaytara*, *Orgonez* leaving Guards to secure the two Posts. After this same, (Skirmishes happen'd between the Parties on both Sides,) but as they were inconsiderable, do not deserve to be particularly mention'd

The HISTORY of *America*. 135

tion'd. *Almagro* then order'd *John de Guzman*, who was the King's Controller, and as such had special Licence to go and come when he pleas'd, to take a Journey into *Spain*, to acquaint his Majesty with the Posture of Affairs in *Ieru.* but *Pi arro*, notwithstanding his Royal Commission, seiz'd and kept him Prisoner. Having then resolv'd to make himself Master of *Cuzco*, he march'd towards the Mountain, of which a Deserter gave *Almagro* timely Notice, and yet two Parties advancing in the Night, gain'd both the Passes, without any Resistance, which, as has been said, had sufficient Guards upon them to have made the same good. *Orgonez* hearing the Noise, and advancing with an hundred Horse to relieve those at the Posts, being told that they were lost, curs'd *Francis de Chaves* and himself, for having intrusted him, and so he retir'd to joyn *Almagro*, as he did the next Day, when it was by some advis'd to turn back and attack the *Pi arros*, their Men being then in Disorder, sick and almost Starv'd with the Cold of the Mountain; but this Advice was rejected, through the ill Fate of those Forces, and so they held on their march towards *Cuzco*. *Pi arro* now puff'd up with Pride beyond all Measure, without any regard to all his Oaths, or to the King's Orders, publicly pretended that all the Country from *Pasto* at the Equinoctial to the Streights of *Magellan*, was within his Government, and intended to confer all that Part about the Line, which as has been said, had been subdu'd by *Sebastian de Belalcazar* on his Brother *Gonzalo*. In order to this he Commission'd *Laurence de Aldana* to repair to *Quito*, and by all means, fair or foul to possess himself of those Provinces, and if possible, to secure *Sebastian de Belalcazar*.

Francis Pizarro having now appointed his Brother *Ferdinand*, Superintendent and Governour, and his

136 *The History of America.*

other Brother *Gonzalo* Captain General, because he was so old himself that he could not undergo the Fatigue, his Forces consisting of seven hundred Horse and Foot began their march towards *Cuzco*. Several well minded Persons, perceiving that there was nothing but Malice and Revenge in this undertaking, which was so prejudicial to the Service of God and the King, and likely to end in much Effusion of *Spanish* Blood, considering the Rancour of those Brothers, endeavour'd to dissuade them from pursuing that wicked Course, but all in vain, their Pride and Fury rendering them incapable of listening to Reason, or paying any regard to the Commands of their Sovereign. *Almagro* in the mean Time having rested thirty Days at *Bilcas*, where there was Plenty of Provisions, and being sensible that a Battel was unavoidable, consulted what was best to be done. General *Orgonez* advis'd to turn back over the Mountains, and surprize the City of *Lima*, where he would be ready to receive the Recruits that arriv'd from all Parts, and might send an Account to the King of the Posture of Affairs. This Advice was seconded by others, and certainly was the best, but Fate had decreed the ruin of *Almagro*, and therefore he always adher'd to the worst Counsel. He was then very sick, and there were Apprehensions of his Death, however he recover'd, being reserv'd for a more miserable End. Intelligence being now brought him, that *Ferdinand Pizarro* was marching over the Mountains to *Cuzco*, he hastened away, and took Possession of that City, where he made all necessary Dispositions for War, whilst the *Pizarros* advanced to the River *Apurima*, where they might have been easily defeated, had their Adversaries made their Advantage in securing that Pass. That Opportunity being lost, tho' it had been advis'd to defend the City, as being inferior in Number to the Enemy, who

The HISTORY of *America*. 137

who drew near, about five hundred *Spanish* Horse and Foot march'd out with six little Field Pieces, and the *Inga Paul Topa* leading six thousand *Indians*, *Almagro* himself was carry'd out in a Bier being so weak that he could not ride, but as he spoke to his Commanders, declaring the Justice of his Cause, and that they would be all ruin'd in case the Enemy prevail'd. The Forces were drawn up by *Orgonez* among the Salt-Pits, contrary to the Opinion of several Commanders, who insisted that they should fight in the open Plain, as being strongest in Horse, whereas the other Party had much the Advantage in Foot.

Pizarro's Army drawing so near *Cuzco* that the News was spread through all the Country, that a Battel would ensue, whereupon the Natives from all Parts cover'd the adjacent Hills to behold that Action, wishing both Parties might be destroy'd, and all the Servants and Women in the City flock'd to see that Spectacle. Some Horsemen going out from both Sides upon Discovery, came so near as to speak to each other, and then return'd to give an Account of what they had seen. *Almagro's* Officers again press'd *Orgonez* to advance into the open Plain, for the Advantage of his Horse; but he persisting in his Opinion, drawing up the Infantry in one Body, with the Musketeers, and Crossbow-men in the Front; the Horse were also in one Body, *Orgonez* and *Peter de Lerma* being on the Flanks, disposing their Field Pieces as seem'd most convenient. This was their Posture when Advice was brought that their Enemies were at hand, and about Sun-setting *Ferdinand Pizarro* drew very near, and then halted, only a little River parting them, and it was remarkable, that tho' they lay there all that Night, neither Side made any Overtures towards an Accommodation, so great was the Aversion of both Parties to each other. The

next

138 *The HISTORY of America.*

next Morning *Pizarros's* Forces march'd towards the High-way of the *Ingas*, call'd *Collasuyo*, taking a Compass to fall upon them from the upper Ground, at about half a League's distance. There *Ferdinand Pizarro* encourag'd the Commanders with fair Promises, and finding them chearful, order'd Captain *Castro*, with the Musketeers and Crossbow-men, to pass the River and advance towards the Enemy, which he did, and taking Post on a rising Ground, began to play upon his Enemy, whereupon both Armies push'd forwards, crying, God save the King, and the one side *Almagro*, and the other *Pizarro*. As soon as ever they engag'd, the *Indians* set up an hideous Cry, and Captain *Salinas* was kill'd with a Musket Shot. *Francis Hurtado*, Ensign General to *Almagro*, basely deserted to the *Pizarros*, many of the Horse fled, without striking Stroke, and the Foot hid themselves among the Ruins that were about the Fields. *Pizarros's* Fire-arms did much Execution, and *Peter de Lerma* (spying *Ferdinand Pizarro*, ran full tilt at him, calling him perjur'd Wretch and Traytor, giving him such a Shock, that his Horse came down upon his Knees, and had not his Armour been very good he had been kill'd. The Order of the *Chile* Men being broke by those that fled, the Advantage appear'd on the Part of the *Pizarros*, one of whose Soldiers cry'd Victory, but *Orgóñez* run his Sword into his Mouth and kill'd him. The longer the Fight lasted the more Advantage the *Pizarros* gain'd for want of Order among the *Almagros*. *Orgóñez*, who had perform'd the Part of an able Commander and Soldier, endeavouring to bring back some that withdrew from the Battel, was wounded with a Musket Ball, and his Horse kill'd, yet he got up, and being beset, fought manfully, wounding many. Being call'd upon to yield himself, he ask'd, whether any Gentleman was there to whom he might yield, and

one

The HISTORY of *America*. 139

one *Fuentes*, a Servant to *Pizarro*, answer'd, yes, he might submit to him, which when he did, the said *Fuentes*, like a Villain, having been instructed by his Master, murder'd him, after Quarter given. Upon his Death no Opposition was made, and *Almagro* seeing his Forces routed, made off on a Mule to the Citadel of *Cuzco*. The Soldiers, who had been formerly defeated, as was said in its Place, at *Abancay* or *Apurima*, in Revenge for that Disgrace, barbarously kill'd the wounded Men. *Ferdinand Machicao* look'd out for *Peter de Lerma*, and finding him wounded on the Ground, stabb'd him in several Places, and then went away, thinking he had been dead, which he proclaim'd about as he went. A great Shower of Rain fell then, whereupon the Victors march'd into the City. (This Battel was fought) on the *Saturday* before *Palm-Sunday*, in the Year 1538, and lasted two Hours. Of *Almagro's* Men an hundred and twenty dy'd in the Battel, and afterwards of their Wounds, many of them being kill'd in cold Blood; of *Pizarro's* very few.

Alonso de Alvarado understanding that *Almagro* had withdrawn himself into the Citadel of *Cuzco*, went and took him out from thence, and *Ferdinand Pizarro* being told of it, declar'd he could have wish'd he had been kill'd, ordering that he should be kept in safe Custody. Thus the Adelantado *Don Diego de Almagro*, fell into the utmost Distress, yet he lost not the Affection of his Friends. The Soldiers Plunder'd the City, and there were Quarrels about it, the Prisoners were many; and *Peter de Lerma* (was found with seventeen Wounds about him, and laid in a Bed, with little Life in him, where one *Samaniego*, basely stabb'd him, as was believ'd by the Instigation of *Ferdinand Pizarro*, for his charging him in the Battel,) as was there said. This Victory being thus gain'd, all who had an hand in it, expected

140 *The HISTORY of America.*

ted to have Lands given them, taken from those that were in Possession; but *Pizarro* was afraid of raising new Commotions by depriving those Possessors, and and therefore held the Soldiers in hand, telling them, that Colonies were to be settled at *Los Charcas* and *Arequipa*, where they should have Lands, but that did not satisfy them. *Alonso de Alvarado* ask'd leave to return to *Lima*, in order to go to his Government of the *Chiachiapoyas*, where he would build a City, which was granted, and with him was sent the young *Almagro*, Son to the Adelantado, to be deliver'd to *Francis Pizarro*, that he might not be among his Father's Soldiers, whom we shall hereafter call the Men of *Chile*. *Francis Pizarro* receiv'd the News of the Victory with much Joy, being sole Lord in that Empire, and from that Moment his Temper alter'd, and he became more Insolent and Haughty, resolving at the same Time to go to *Cuzco*. *Ferdinand Pizarro* stood upon his guard, because making no Distribution of Lands, and the Soldiers not being enrich'd as they had expected, not only mutter'd, but threatned; making no Account of the richest Country in the World, viz. *Los Charcas*, where he gave out he would build a Town; and therefore he was under some Apprehensions from his own Men, and those of *Chile*, telling them he expected his Brother, and would then provide for them all.

Peter de Candia, who was very rich, and an old Friend to the *Pizarros*, wanting to lay out what he had got, and being inform'd by an *Indian* Woman he had, that beyond the Mountains *Andes* there was a very wealthy and populous Country, call'd *Ambaya*, indiscreetly begg'd he might have the discovering of it, which was readily granted by *Ferdinand Pizarro*, who thought it an Happiness to rid himself of some of those turbulent People, that kept him in continual fear; there being at that Time above one thou-

sand

The HISTORY of *America*. 141

sand six hundred *Spanish* Soldiers in *Cuzco*. *Peter de Vergara* desir'd he might have the reducing of the Province of the *Bracamoros*, thought to be no less rich and populous than the other, which was likewise easily obtain'd, for the same Reason of sending away so many idle and troublesome Persons. *Alonso de Mercadillo* obtain'd the Conquest of the *Chupachos*. *Peter de Candia* began to make ready for his Enterprize, and to that End made use of eighty five thousand Pieces of Eight he had of his own, and run into Debt as much more, by which means he gather'd three hundred Soldiers, well equip'd, they concluding that since he laid out so much, he knew what he was going about, and consequently, that they should be all rich, or in case the Undertaking did not answer, they should lose nothing, which made them willing to go; some being also compell'd to it by *Pizarro*, because they had been of *Almagro's* Party. *Peter de Candia* having march'd as far as the Vale of *Paqual*, ten Leagues from *Cuzco*, and five from the Mountains *Andes*, stay'd there above six Weeks, whereupon *Pizarro* sent him Orders to proceed on his Enterprize, and not stay to burden the Province. At the same Time to Exercise his Cruelty, and justify his Proceedings, he declar'd he would proceed against *Almagro*, and as those in Power never want Flatterers to carry on their Designs, many immediately flock'd in to inform against that unfortunate Gentleman, so that the Notaries soon fill'd up much Paper with Depositions.

Peter de Candia made his way over the Mountains *Andes* to the Eastward, by the way of *Tono*, and at *Opotari* found a large and populous Town, three Leagues from *Tono*, and thirty from *Cuzco*, whence proceeding farther, the ways prov'd so bad, that the
Horses

142 *The HISTORY of America.*

Horses tumbled headlong from the Rocks, and the Men suffer'd much, and yet they went on, tho' their Commander was not so discreet as was requisite for such an Undertaking, and might have taken a better way. Being reduc'd to these Streights, never seeing the Sun, and infested with continual Rain and Storms, he advis'd with his Officers, what was best to be done, but they knew not what to resolve on, in regard that it seem'd impossible to advance, and scarce practicable to turn back; however, it was resolv'd to proceed, and thus they came to a more difficult Pass than any they had yet met with, being a solid Rock, yet cover'd with thick Trees, with such Boughs or Twigs shooting from them, that the Horses could not penetrate. In this Distress Providence inspir'd them to cut abundance of those Twigs, with which they made Cables, and fastning them to the Trees and the Bodies of the Horses, with incredible labour, drew them up. Having overcome this immense Difficulty, they arriv'd in the Country of *Abisca*, being hot Vales, where they halted, got Provisions, and whilst they rested, the Commander sent some to discover the Country, who returning some Days after, said, they could find no better way than that they had already come through, which was a great Affliction, yet they advanc'd four Days, and met with *Indians* that had Bows, were Man Eaters, and came up boldly to discharge their Arrows. The Mountain grew still more impassable, and the Men weaker, but having no other Remedy, they still went on, and as they were making way with the Boughs of Trees over a Morass, were set upon by some *Indians*, on whom they fir'd several Muskets, and took one. He being ask'd, how long they should be passing that
Mountain,

The HISTORY of America. 143

Mountain, said there was nothing else all the way before them, and as to their way of living, that they had little Houses, cover'd with the Boughs of those Trees, their Weapons were Bows and Arrows, and they fed on *Yuca* Roots, which they sow'd and were satisfy'd with, hoping they should never have seen their Faces; that in those Woods there were Monkeys, wild Cats, and some *Dantas*, which they kill'd with their Arrows, he then advis'd them to go no farther, because they would perish. Notwithstanding all he could say, they advanc'd, traveling every Day about a League, little more or less, suffering much by the Thorns that ran into their Feet and Legs, crossing Rivers, Quag-Mires, and Stony-Places, with much Difficulty, and the more because many were sick and wounded, besides that Hunger began to pinch, and they fed on the Horses that dy'd. Being reduc'd to this Extremity, *Peter de Candia*, order'd they should turn towards the left, and it pleas'd God, that in a few Days they got out of that Misery, which they had labour'd under three Months, and at length came out at *Collao*, to some Towns belonging to Captain *Alonso de Mesa*, a *Canarian* and *Luke Martin*, which was a mighty Comfort to them.

147

THE Governour *Francis Pizarro* was so overjoy'd at the Advice brought him of the Victory obtain'd over *Almagro*, that not being able to conceal it, he set out in a triumphant Manner from *Lima*, on his way to *Cuzco*, and arriv'd at *Xauxa*, declaring, that he would not consent to the putting of *Almagro* to Death, tho' at the same Time he meant otherwise. The new Bishop, *F. Vincent de Valverde*, intreated him to rest satisfy'd with the Blood that was already shed, not to forget his former Friendship with *Almagro*, and the Favours receiv'd

144 *The History of America.*

ceiv'd of him, with many more very Pious and Christian Perswasions, to which *Pizarro* return'd a civil Answer, but the Venom lay at his Heart. The Captains *Vergara* and *Mercadillo* setting out upon their intended Enterprises, met *Francis Pizarro* at *Xauxa*, where they deliver'd to him the young *Almagro*, Son to the Adelantado, and other Prisoners; with an Account of the Battel, and that his Brother was forming a Process against *Almagro*, designing to execute him, as soon as Judgment should be given; putting him in mind of the Instability of worldly Affairs, and that God would not permit Sinners to escape unpunish'd. *Peter de Candia* being with Captain *Mesa*, as was said above, the latter persuaded the former to march back to *Cuzco* with all his Men, having form'd a Conspiracy among them to kill *Ferdinand Pizarro*, and being on their march, some of those Conspirators writ to *James de Alvarado*, inviting him to joyn with him in that Design, which he refusing, they fear'd he might betray them, and to prevent it made the Discovery themselves. Whilst these Things happen'd, *Almagro* was very sick in his Confinement, and sent to desire *Ferdinand Pizarro* to see him, which he did, and promis'd him his Life, but as soon as come out from him, order'd the Lawyers to conclude the Process against him with all speed, wherein he was charg'd with having usurp'd the Regal Authority in *Cuzco*, and imprison'd the Governour; besides the fighting of *Alonso de Alvarado*, at *Abancay*, or *Apurima*, and other Matters that are always alledg'd against those that are down. Tho' *Pizarro* had resolv'd to destroy him, he sent him many Compliments, and Presents of Sweet-meats, and other Dainties, but as soon as the Process was clos'd, he pass'd Sentence of Death upon him, and then sent a Frier to pre-
pare

pare him for Execution. *Almagro* much surpriz'd at that Intimation, desir'd to see him again, he came, and tho' the unfortunate Gentleman represented the Injustice of his Proceedings, the many good Offices he had done him and his Brothers, and the saving of his Life, when he had been often importun'd to put him to Death, with many other powerful Arguments, nothing was of Force to move him from his Purpose, but he went away bidding him prepare for Death.

Almagro accordingly made Christian Dispositions, with much Zeal and Fervour, appointing his Son *Don James*, Governour, by Virtue of the King's Commission so Authorizing him, and *James de Alvarado* his Guardian, till he came to Age, and by his last Will, made the King his Heir, declaring there was a great Sum of Money in the common Stock of Partnership, between him and *Pizarro*, which he desir'd might be brought to Account, and that his Majesty would be pleas'd to show Favour to his Son. A Body of Men was drawn up in the great Square, Parties at the End of the Streets, and the Guards doubled upon all *Almagro's* Friends, by which it appear'd, that they Design'd to put him to Death, to the unspeakable Sorrow of his Soldiers and Adherents, whom they call'd the Men of *Chile*. They exclaim'd against *Pizarro*, calling him Tyrant, and threatned to Revenge their Commander, as they afterwards did. The *Indians* wept bitterly, declaring they had never been misus'd by him. For these Reasons *Pizarro*, tho' he desir'd it, durst not put him to Death in publick, but order'd him to be strangled in Prison, after which he was brought out and beheaded, *Pizarro* himself, like a false Hypocrite, afterwards attending his Funeral. The Lamentation was universal among the *Spaniards*, and

146 *The* HISTORY of *America*.

particu'arly *James de Alvarado* seem'd inconsolable, publicly exclaiming against *Pizarro* for killing the Man that had sav'd his Life. *Almagro* was sixty three Years of Age, small of Stature, his Countenance disagreeable, especially after he had lost one Eye in the Wars. He was bold, adventurous, much inur'd to Fatigues, discreet, generous, a Friend to good Men, of a gentle and sweet Disposition, zealous in the Service of his King, and had a great Share in subduing of those Kingdoms; born at *Aldea del Rey*, and of mean Parentage. *Francis Pizarro* was much blam'd on Account of his Death, because, having been near four Months in Prison, he could not but know, and might have prevented it, by which it appear'd to have been done by his Consent and Approbation; and his Brother *Ferdinand* often declar'd as much, to clear himself from the Imputation of Inhumanity and Perjury; and all Men reflected on their Barbarity towards a Man who had been so great a Support to them upon all Occasions.

As soon as *Ferdinand Pizarro* had dispatch'd *Almagro*, he sent Advice of it to his Brother *Francis*, and endeavour'd to ingratiate himself with *Gabriel de Rojas*, *John de Saavedra*, *Basco de Guzman*, and others of the *Chile* Commanders, that they might forget their old Friend, which they never did. Next he march'd out with above four hundred Men, to meet *Peter de Candia*, and having drawn him, with his prime Officers into his Tent, secur'd his Person, and those of the Captains *Messa* and *Villagran*. *Messa* was presently Executed for the Conspiracy before mention'd, but *Villagran* was begg'd off, many admiring that *Pizarro* could be prevail'd on to spare him, and concluding he did it to take off the Imputation of Cruelty. (*Peter de Candia* being found innocent,

The HISTORY of America. 147

innocent, was also dismiss'd, and the Command of his Men given to *Peter de Anzures*, who was joyn'd by several Gentlemen and Persons of Distinction, and march'd away to the Vale of *Caravaya*, about the latter End of *September*, this Year 1538, whence with much Difficulty they proceeded to the Province of *Zama*, (and so held on their way over the Mountains, sometimes coming into Flats, but very woddy and close. Such were the Difficulties and Hardships they met with, that many of their Blacks and *Indians* perish'd in those Deserts, and in this manner they came to the great River of the *Omapalcas*, which rises to the Eastwards and runs away to the North Sea, the Spring being on the Mountain of the *Mojas*. When they had pass'd the Country of the ~~*Chiriquian*~~ perceiving that it was absolutely necessary to cross that River, they made Floats, all the Country abounding with Wood. When those Floats were ready, they spent eight Days in passing the River, tho' some of the Nation call'd *Marquies*, living on its Banks, attempted to obstruct them; to quell whom *Peter Anzures* himself, with thirty Soldiers on twelve Floats, made towards those *Indians*, who receiv'd them with loud Cries, and vast Flights of Arrows, but as soon as the *Spaniards* came ashore were put to the rout. That Difficulty being overcome, *Anzures* set out with a Party and able Guides, to seek for Provisions, and (and after six Days march came into a plain open Country.) This is what happen'd in *Peru* till the End of the Year 1538, we must now look back to what was doing in other Parts.

169

C H A P. IV.

Discoveries from the Province of Venezuela ; actions in that of Honduras, and the Description of it ; of two Men that liv'd eight Years in a desert Island ; some Ordinances of the King, search into the burning Mountain of Masaya.

4
7
A *Ntony* (*Sedeño* having been left upon his Discovery in the Province of *Venezuela*) it is now Time to return to him. On his march to find out the Province of *Meta*, he was overtaken by the licenciado *Frias*, sent by the Council or Court of *Hispaniola*, to proceed against him for having quitted the Island of the *Trinity*, which he was commission'd to subdue, and enter'd upon the Limits of another's Government. *Frias* governing himself indiscreetly, *Sedeño* secur'd him, and sent back an hundred Men he had brought with him. This done he held on his way to the Provinces of *Anapuya* and *Orocomay*, where he was friendly receiv'd and entertain'd ; but proceeding to the Country of *Gotoguaney*, found the People in Arms, and at the Entrance into it a wooden Fort, the Timbers fastned together with Ropes of Withes, having Loop-holes at proper distances, and well mann'd which being an Obstacle to their Designs, it was resolv'd to attack, as they did, but the *Indians* shooting poison'd Arrows, the Men that happen'd to be hurt were forc'd to burn their Wounds, or else they dy'd raving Mad. The Heat being excessive, *Sedeño* drew them off, and gave another on-
set

The HISTORY of America. 149

set the next Day, when the *Indians* seeing many kill'd by the Fire-arms and Crossbows, march'd out at Night, in good Order with their Wives, Children, and Goods, in the Centre, to retire to a Mountain a League from thence, which was thick wooded, whither they made their way in Safety, tho' the *Spaniards* pursu'd, and endeavour'd to break them. Having rested in this Place a few Days, to cure the sick and wounded, they advanc'd in twelve Degrees of North Latitude, crossing spacious desert Plains, where were many Rivers, but well furnish'd with Venison, which they kill'd in those Plains. The Men grew tir'd and uneasy, seeing no Hopes of finding what they sought for, which occasion'd something of a Mutiny; but *Sedeño*, being a Man of ready Wit, and Bold, immediately hang'd Captain ~~Ochoa~~ and a Soldier, which quell'd the Commotion; and tho' sick himself, took Care of all Things, the Soldiers, tho' they had Flesh enough, as has been said, wanting Bread, wherefore he sent out several Parties, all of them returning with little Relief, till *Bonilla* entering upon the Mountain, fell into the Province of *Cataporaro*, and finding Plenty of *Indian* Wheat, and some Tokens of Gold, they agreed to Winter there. Soon after *Antony Sedeño* dy'd, and *John-Fernandez* was chosen Commander in his stead, but he did not long survive, the Forces marching back when they had consum'd the Provisions, steering their Course by the Compass, as is done at Sea. The Country they were then in was low, the Inhabitants thin, without any Houses, only little Sheds, and the Floods prevailing in Winter, they withdrew into the Hills, using Canoes in the lower Grounds, having no Tillage, nor any Government, and feeding on Dantas, Swine, and Deer, with some little Meal made of Roots,

150 *The HISTORY of America.*

The *Spaniards* here suffer'd very much, being, besides all their Wants, often attack'd by those savage, fierce People, to add to all their Sufferings they came into spacious sandy Plains, where they were like to perish with Thirst. After many Days travelling over those Sands, Zabanas and Marthes, the Scouts found a Path, and having advanc'd far along it, spy'd a Village, which they thought to have surpriz'd the next Morning, but the Country being all flat and open, the *Indians* perceiv'd them, and arm'd, being much surpriz'd to see those strange Men in their Country, so that they made some Resistance, till their Wives and Children were got into Places of Safety, and then retir'd themselves, abandoning the Town. There the *Spaniards* found much Corn, and some white Salt, and having rested some Days, held on their March, till they mutiny'd, divided themselves into two Parties, fought among themselves, and after that they stole away in small Numbers to return to the Sea, whereupon *Rodriguez*, who had then the Command, made the best of his way to *Venezuela*, one *Dafada*, with thirty of the Men taking his Course for *Cubagua*, and both of them, after many Sufferings arriv'd at those two Places. These Things happen'd (in the Year) 1537 and (1538)

164
THE Adelantado *Montejo* being quietly possess'd of the Province of *Honduras*, took away all the Lands from those on whom *Don Peter de Alvarado* had conferr'd them; banish'd all the *Indians* that were come of their own Accord from *Guatimala*, and brought all the Town that had Revolted into Subjection; but when he thought all the Country was in Peace, as he had writ to the Vice-Roy of *Mexico*, (a bold *Indian* rebell'd in) a Territory call'd *Cerquin*, (in the District of the City of *Gracias a Dios*,

The HISTORY of *America*. 151

Dios, lying among the Mountains, and of difficult Access. This *Indian*, whose Name was *Lepira*, signifying Lord of the Mountain, summon'd all the neighbouring Lords, with whose Assistance he drew together thirty thousand Men, whom he perswaded to recover their Liberty, saying, it was a shame, that so great a Number of brave Men should be held in miserable Servitude by a few Strangers; offering to be their Leader, and to expose him'self to the greatest Dangers, and assuring them of Victory, if they would be united. They promising to stand by him, some for Inclination, and others for fear, the War was begun, and some few *Spaniards* kill'd, that were surpriz'd about the Country. The Adelantado *Montejo*, sent Captain *Caceres* from *Gracias a Dios*, with some *Spanish* Soldiers, to reduce *Lempira*, who was then fortifying a very noted Rock, call'd of *Cerquin*, where he stood upon his Defence, doing some harm to the *Spaniards*, who suffer'd much at the Siege, which lasted six Months, being oblig'd to Winter in the Field, and perhaps might not have ended so soon, had not *Lempira* happen'd to dye after this manner. Many prime Men were engag'd with him in this War, some against their Will, that they might not be look'd upon as Cowards, others out of Respect to *Lempira*, and others advis'd him to give over the War, and make the *Spaniards* his Friends, for that in the End he would prove the loser; but he was so resolute as never to regard any Overtures of Peace made him by the *Spaniards*, but on the contrary rail'd at them from his Fort. Hereupon Captain *Caceres* order'd an Horseman to draw as near as the Point Blank of a Musket, and whilst he was making some Proposals, another behind him to shoot *Lempira*. Accordingly, whilst he was in Discourse with the

Horseman, the other Soldier took his aim so well, that he shot him in the Forehead, the Head-piece he had on nothing availing him. *Lempira's* Body came tumbling down the Hill, having that Sort of Cotton Armour on, that was then us'd by the *Spaniards*, as being of much use in those *Indian Wars*.

THE *Indians* had heard of the *Spaniards* long before they came into the Parts about *Nombre de Dios*, and yet they did not put an End to the Wars among themselves; because the Inhabitants of *Cerquin*, in particular, thought it impossible that they should come at them, because of their own great Numbers, and that they were first to pass through many Countries, and conquer several Nations, and particularly the *Caves* and the *Potones*, with whom *Lempira* was then at War, and the Fame of his Valour was so great, that they affirm'd he had in one Battel kill'd an hundred and twenty Men, with his own Hand, and old *Indians* reported it had been positively affirm'd, that *Lempira* was enchanted, because having been in many Battels, he was never wounded. He was of a middle Stature, broad Back'd, strong Limb'd, Bold, Daring, of good Sense, never had any more than two Wives, and dy'd between thirty eight and forty Years of Age. *Alonso de Caceres* having sent him a Message, offering Peace, advising him to submit to the King of *Spain*, and promising he should be honourably treated, he kill'd the Messengers, declaring he would own no Superior, nor admit of any other Religion or Customs than those he had already. When he was dead *Caceres* sent the other Lords a Present of Shirts, Buskins, Cocks, *Mexican* Cloth, and four Spears, threatening, that if they did not submit they should dye as well as their Chief. They return'd another Present of Cocks, saying, they would be subject to the great King of *Spain*, whom they call'd *Acapuca*, which im-

ports

The HISTORY of America. 153

ports the great Christian; and thus they made their Submission with much Musick and Rejoycing.)

THE Province of *Honduras*, on the one side borders upon that of *Guatemala*, at the Cities of *San Salvador* and *San Miguel*, and the Town of *Nueva Xerez*; an another upon the Province of *Nicaragua* about *New Segovia*, and on the third upon the Province of *Taguzgalpa*, call'd *New Estremadura*, and has two Sea Ports, one of them the City of *Truxillo*, the first *Spanish* Town in the Province, and the other *San Juan del Puerto de Cavallos*, where Ships trading thither unlade. Most of the Province is full of Woods and Mountains, tho' there are some Vales, the Land being very spacious. There are in it four *Spanish* Cities, and two Towns, viz. *Truxillo*, which gives the Title to the Bishops; *New Valladolid*, otherwise call'd *Comayagua*, in a temperate Situation, healthy, and the Country abounding in Cattel; where the Cathedral is, and the Government resides, and some Silver Mines have been found in its Territory; the City of *St. Peter* founded in the Year 1536, by the Adelantado *Peter de Alvarado*, is hot and sickly, once had the best Trade, but lost it upon the Discovery of *Golfo dulce*, whither the Goods are convey'd in Boats. The City of *Gracias a Dios* stands between Hills, the Territory very woody, produces Corn, and has good Breeds of Mules and Horses. The Town of *St. George* stands in a spacious Plain call'd *Ulancho*, ill seated near the River *Guayape*, whence much Gold has been taken, the whole Extent of the Province is about three hundred and seventy Leagues. The City of *San Juan de Puerto de Cavallos*, being afterwards much infested by Pirates, was remov'd to the Place formerly call'd *Amatique*, eighteen Leagues distant from the other, and call'd *Santo Tomas de Castilla*.

THIS

154 The HISTORY of *America*.

THIS same Year 1537, the supreme Council of the *Indies* in *Spain*, made some Ordinances for those Parts, the Heads whereof were, That as Hospitals had been founded for the Sick, in the Cities of *Nombre de Dios* and *Panama*, the like should be done at *Vera Cruz* and *Puebla de los Angeles* in *New Spain*; that the Prelates should see the Children of the mixt Race between *Spaniards* and *Indians*, instructed in the Christian Doctrine and good Manners; that the Vice-Roy should not permit the *Indian* Youth to live idly, but to learn some Trades; that the Colledge founded by the *Franciscan* Friars at *Mexico*, for teaching *Indian* Boys the *Latin* Grammar, should be finish'd; that no Cloth of Gold, or Silver Brocades, nor Laces, or Embroideries, &c. should be worn; that Pieces of Eight, of Four, of Two, and single Royals should be coin'd in the Mint; that Roads should be made; that *Indians* who did not understand *Spanish*, appearing before any Court, should be allow'd a Christian Friend of their own, to assist them, lest the common Interpreters call'd *Naguatatos*, should not explain things fairly, and those People be thereby wrong'd; that *Alcaldes* should be chosen yearly in Corporations, as in *Spain*, and that Appeals from them should lye to the Royal Courts, except in such Cases, as according to the Laws of *Spain*, were to be referr'd to the Council of the Place; that those who were *Alcaldes* should not be chosen again into the same Office till two Years after they had serv'd it before; that no Officer of the Crown should be chosen into that Employment, &c.

l → (IN April 1538, a Ship) commanded by *Peter de Cifuentes*, (sail'd from *Santo Domingo*) in the Island *Hispaniola*, laden with war-like Stores, and other Goods (for the Island *Margarita*) and having touch'd

The HISTORY of *America*. 155

at *Puerto Rico*, proceeded to another Port in the Island of *Santa Cruz*, to water, where two large Canoes full of *Canibal* Archers came out to oppose them, and shooting poison'd Arrows pursu'd them two Leagues. The Wind being scant, five Days after they arriv'd at the Island *Piritu*, thirty Leagues to the Leeward of the Pearl Coast, where the Pilot not being able to get a distinct View of the Land, stood away to Westward, coasting along the Continent, and thus they came to the Island of *Guanamacoran*, but finding no Water there, struck over to a Port on the Continent, where the *Indians* were in Arms; however they put into a Creek, where they lay all Night, and in the Morning eleven Canoes came out, asking for Axes. A *Genoese* Sailor thinking the *Indians* had been Friends, unadvisedly went into one of the Canoes, which immediately made away, the *Indians* shooting their Arrows; the few Sailors aboard the Ship fir'd at them with two Muskets they had, loaded with Flints, and kill'd one that seem'd to be their Chief, and two others, which made them keep aloof, many of them for fear of the Muskets, leaping into the Water, but the *Genoese* Sailor was never more heard of. Thence they sail'd to another Port, where finding no Inhabitants, they water'd, and perceiving that their Pilot was ignorant, and knew not where he was, they resolv'd to return to *Santo Domingo*, and touching at an Island higher up, belonging to the Factor, *John de Arapues*, their Pilot ran away from them, whereupon it was resolv'd to hold on their way for *Santo Domingo*, without any body to direct them, being all unskillful in the Art of Sailing. Being in this Confusion, (and in the midst of their Passage, a Storm came up that bore away both their Masts, with the Sails, the Ship at the same time taking in much Water,

156 *The HISTORY of America.*

Water, and thus they drove a head, as the Wind and Sea would carry them, till six Days after, they came at Night upon *Cape de la Serrana*, the Storm never ceasing, where the Ship beating on the Flat, because they had not yet seen the Island, by reason it is very small, they at length discover'd it by the whiteness of the Sand, and one of the Men be-
 thought himself to take a Flask of Powder and a Steel in his Mouth, and swam to the Island, where having left the Powder, he return'd to the Ship, which he found split into four Parts, and the Men in one of them. He then took what Ropes he could find, and making them fast to one another at their length, carry'd one end Ashore, along which the other Men got off, the next Flood in the Night carrying away all the Ship, so that in the Morning nothing of it was to be seen, nor any thing sav'd out of it but the Powder and the Steel, so that for want of a Flint, they fed near two Months on the raw Flesh of Sea Calves and Cormorants, drinking their Blood. That course of Life being so miserable, they made a Float of some Pieces of Timber the Sea had thrown on the Island, binding them together with Thongs made of the Skins of the Sea Calves. Three of the Men got upon it, two and a Boy staying behind. Four Days after, one of those that remain'd, whose Name was *Moreno*, there being no Water nor Fire on the Island, and the Month of *August* being come in, began to eat his own Arms, and dy'd raving of those hurts. The other having no Company left but the Boy, consider'd what he should do to live, began to scratch the Ground with the Shells of Tortoises, where he found the Water as Salt as that in the Sea, because there was no Depth, for which reason he drank it mix'd with the Blood of Sea Calves,
 for

The HISTORY of America. 157

for it had never rain'd in all that Time, to make any Advantage of it, tho' he had dug Pits in the Sand, lin'd with the Skins of the said Sea Calves, and when it pleas'd God that the Rain fell, which was in *October*, they drank out of Sea Shells; but that supply was not lasting, the Sand sucking it up. The Winter coming on, and no Possibility of living without Fire, they made a Float, and went over to the Place where the Ship had perish'd, and ducking several Times, it pleas'd God that they found a Pebble, with which they struck Fire, looking upon it as the saving of their Lives, and therefore made Fire every Night, that it might be seen by the Ships passing that way.

THERE were two other Men in the like desperate Condition on an Island two Leagues from thence, who seeing the Fire, repair'd to it on a Float, after having liv'd in that manner five Years. They all agreed to make a Boat of the Timber the Sea brought Ashore, to which purpose they made Bel-lows of the Sea Calves Skins for their Forge, and found a Saw and some Iron where the Ship sunk. Having made their Boat, and Sails of Skins they embark'd, designing for the Island of *Jamaica*, but when put to Sea, a Sailor call'd Master *John*, being the same that had been on the Island from the first with the Boy, considering that the Boat was made of odd Pieces, without any Pitch or Tar, or Calk-ing, but only daub'd with the Grease of the Sea Calves, mixt with Charcoal Dust, for which reason it was impossible to be sav'd in it, he resolv'd to return to his Island, with one of those that came from the other; the other Man and the Boy going on in that Boat, who were never more heard of. The other two returning to the Island, as has been said, made two little Boats of those Skins, and

158 *The HISTORY of America.*

and scour'd all over that Shore, being twelve Leagues in length, the greatest Depth not above a Fathom; in which Space there are seventeen small Islands, all of them sometimes overflow'd by the Sea, except five, which is proper to be known for Ships that may happen to pass that way. The two Men being in that Distress, fed on the Tortoises Eggs they found on those Islands, being cloath'd in the Skins of Sea Calves, and agreed to build two little Towers of dry Stone, sixteen Fathoms about, and four in height, with Stairs to go up, one on the North, and the other on the South Side, where they went up to look out, and made Fire to be seen by any Ships passing by, in hopes of being reliev'd out of that misery. They also made an Enclosure of twenty two Fathom, to take Fish, the Stones whereof cost them much Trouble, being oblig'd to fetch them out of the Sea, because the Island was all Sand, of which they made Salt, by casting it into Pits, with Water, which turn'd into Salt. They built an Hut, cover'd with Skins; five Months in the Year they fed on Tortoises Eggs, which were good Sustenance for they wash'd and set them out a drying, and being bury'd in the Ground a Fortnight, the White of them turn'd into Water, and was good to drink. At other Times they would eat Cormorants, when to be had, making them cast up the Fish they carry'd for their Young, which they eat, and a sort of Roots like Purslane. Three Years after the others went away, being eight they had been there, it pleas'd God to relieve them in their Distress, for one Day they spy'd a Ship under Sail, made a great Smoak on their Towers, which being perceiv'd by those aboard, they lay by, hoisted out their Boat, the Master went Ashore with a Notary, who took an Account

The HISTORY of America. 159

Account of all those Particulars here mention'd, and then they carry'd those two Men to the *Havana* where their Habit and manner of living was much admir'd. Those Men farther declar'd, that the Sea Crabs and Snails tormented them much, breaking their rest in the Night, for which reason they were often forc'd to turn the Day into Night. Master *John* also confess'd, that making his complaint one Day to God, for that he had been eight Years in that Desert, naked, bare-footed, and in such want of Sustenance, he pray'd he might either be taken out of the World, or carry'd to some Christian Country; after which in a Passion of Despair, he said, since God will not, let the Devil take me hence, and I shall end my Days; and that rising in the Night, he saw the Devil standing close to his Hut, more hideous than he is painted, his Nose very flat, casting out Smoak at it, and Fire at his Eyes, his Feet like a Grifon's, and Tails like a Rat's, his Legs like a Man, his Hair very black, with two little Horns. Seeing that frightful Spectacle, he said, he had call'd his Companion, and that taking a Crows they had, they walk'd all over the Island, praying, and never after saw any thing, but a Fortnight after he was much frightened, thinking he had heard Footsteps, but saw nothing.) During the aforesaid eight Years, the same Master *John* said, he had been twice Sick, both times about *August*, and that he had let himself Blood.

News being brought into *Spain* of the Battel before spoken of, fought at the Salt Pits near *Cuzco* in *Peru*. the King sent Orders into those Parts, enjoinning both Parties to live in Peace, till their Governments were limited by regal Authority, with other Directions mostly in Favour of the *Pizarros*; but at the same Time a Court was erected at *Panama*, whose
Juris-

160 *The HISTORY of America.*

Jurisdiction was to extend over all Parts of *South America*, that Appeals from all Governours might be brought before it, and those in Power might not oppress all others by obstructing their having Recourse elsewhere for Redress of their Grievances. That Court was also to promote the Conversion of the *Indians*, and their being brought to live politely, that they should not be compell'd to pay any Impositions but such as they had before paid to their Lords, when Pagans; and that no *Indians* should be put to work in the Mines, but Blacks carry'd over for that purpose. Many more Powers and Instructions were given to the Judges of that Court, relating to particular Persons, which are not necessary to be taken Notice of; but among the rest they were enjoin'd to cause search to be made into the burning Mountain of *Mafaya*, in the Province of *Nicaragua*, of which one *Francis Sanchez*, Inhabitant of the City of *Granada*, in that Province, had writ to the King, that he had been let down into it with some others two hundred and thirty Fathoms in Depth, to an open spacious Place there was within, having another Mouth, from which there were an hundred Fathoms more to the Place where the Fire lay, burning continually in most furious Manner, the which the said *Sanchez* did believe to be either Silver or Gold, but that having with a Chain let down a Bucket, made of a Piece of a great Gun, the same broke by the way, not being so well made as it ought to have been, and so the intended Discovery was disappointed. Upon this Information and Order, some Persons were with much Peril let down into the said burning Mountain, being furnish'd with a proper Utensil to bring up some of that burning Matter, and what came up prov'd
to

The HISTORY of America. 161

to be some burnt Dross, till at last their Chain either broke, or was melted by the violent Fire; upon which Trial the most knowing Men and Founders in those Parts declar'd, that what had been brought up was nothing but calcin'd Stones, or at most Sulphur.

The End of the Fourth Book.



VOL. V.

M

THE



T H E
General HISTORY
Of the vast CONTINENT and ISLANDS of
A M E R I C A, &c.

D E C A D. IV. B O O K V.

C H A P. I.

*Actions of Lawrence de Aldana, in the
Provinces of Quito, Pasto, and Popayan;
his Colony of Anzerma; Description of
the Mountain Abibe.*



HAVING left *Peru* for some Time,
we must now return to see what was
done in these vast Dominions. *Law-
rence de Aldana*, who, as has been said
before, had been sent in the Year 1538,
against *Belalcazar*, who was making the Discoveries
already mention'd, in the Province of *Popayan*, be-
ing

The HISTORY of *America*. 163

ing come to *Quito*, sent away two of *Belalcazar's* Friends Prisoners to *Lima*; and then proceeded himself towards *Popayan*, which was eighty Leagues distant the Soldiers muttering for being carry'd away against their old Commander. (Being come to *Pasto*, he stay'd there two Months, reducing all the Lords of that Country, that had revolted. There was at this Time great Scarcity of Provisions at *Popayan*, the *Indian* Wheat being brought twenty or thirty Leagues, because the Natives would not till the Ground, hoping to starve out the *Spaniards*, who were forc'd to feed on such Herbs as they found in the Fields, and both they and the *Indians* did eat Alligators, Snakes, Locusts, and many other loathsome Things, which occasion'd much Sicknes, and the Famine was so great all about, that the Natives did eat one another, ranging about in Parties to take Prisoners, and devour them. The *Spaniards* ask'd them, why they would be so inhuman, when they might avoid that Calamity, by sowing their Corn; and they answer'd, They were satisfy'd to consume one another, and be bury'd in their own Bellies. This Calamity was follow'd by another no less destructive, being a Plague of such a pernicious Nature, that Men dropp'd down dead on a sudden. *Ferdinand Sanchez Morillo*, Inhabitant of *Popayan*, reported that he met an *Indian* upon the Road, carrying seven Hands ty'd up with a Cord, and asking what they were for, he answer'd, to eat them, Ten or twelve Boys being in a Corn Field, twenty *Indians* fell upon, cut in Pieces, and devour'd them. Many more such Barbarities happen'd, during this Famine, when above fifty thousand *Indians* were eaten, and above an hundred thousand dy'd of the Plague, tho' *Francis Garcia de Tovar*, the Deputy Governour, us'd all his Endeavours to obstruct that

164 The HISTORY of *America*.

inhuman way of Feeding, and to apply Medicines to the Pestilence. *Aldana* coming to *Popayan*, conceal'd his most important Commission in Hopes to get *Belalcazar* into his Hands; but he, as has been said, was gone into *Spain*, and *Aldana* taking all possible Care for the Preservation of the *Indians*, went away to *Cali*, from whence he sent Provisions for the Relief of those at *Popayan*, who therefore call'd him their Father, and Restorer; (and the *Indians* seeing the *Spaniards* were not to be starv'd out, fell again to sowing of Corn.)

BEFORE this in the Year 1536, the licenciado *John de Badillo*, had been sent to *Cartagena*, as Judge, to sit upon Trial of *Don Peter de Heredia*, Governour of that City. Captain *Francis Cesar*, a Man of Valour and Discretion, was then gone out with a Party upon Discovery, in which Employment he spent about ten Months, travelling over almost impassable Mountains, call'd of *Abibe*, till he came into the Vale of *Goaca*, where the *Spaniards* being but sixty three in Number, defeated an Army of twenty thousand *Indians*. After this Victory they found a small Temple, or Place of Worship, and near it a large Tomb, out of which they took the Value of thirty thousand Pieces of Eight in Gold, and were told there was a considerable Number of such Graves in the same Vale. *Cesar* having lost several Men in that laborious Expedition, those that remain'd being few, and the Horses quite spoil'd, he resolv'd to turn back, and it pleas'd God that they arriv'd at the City of *St. Sebastian of Uraba*, whereas they had spent ten Months on their Journey outward. Advice hereof was soon carry'd to *Cartagena*, where the licenciado *Badillo* had imprison'd *Don Peter de Heredia*, and being allur'd by that Quantity of Gold, hoping much more might be found, resolv'd to

The HISTORY of *America*. 165

go himself upon that Expedition, that in reality his Design was to cross over the Country to *Pern*, for the great Fame of the Wealth of that Country, and in his way to search those Tombs he had heard of. In order to it he sent by Sea, up the Bay of *Uraba*, to the City of *St. Sebastian*, three hundred and fifty *Spaniards*, with five hundred and twelve Horses, a great Number of Blacks and *Indians*, and all other Necessaries, on which he expended above an hundred thousand Pieces of Eight. He set out from that City in *February* 1537, and spent a Year upon the Progress, enduring many Hardships, in hopes of finding an immense Treasure, and at length having lost ninety two *Spaniards*, and an hundred and nineteen Horses, arriv'd with the Remainder at the City of *Cali*, having always aim'd at making for the South Sea, for otherwise he had fallen into *Bogota*, which had enrich'd them all, without passing through so many Difficulties. There *Laurence de Aldana*, order'd the Men to be well Quarter'd and Entertain'd.

HAVING here mention'd the Mountains of *A-bibe*, it will be proper to give some Account of them. This Ridge runs to the Westward, the Length of it is not certainly known, but the Breadth of it is in some Places twenty Leagues, in others more, and in others less. The ways the *Indians* had on it were so very uncouth, that the Horses could not pass. Captain *Cesar*, the first *Spaniard* that cross'd them, marching Eastward, arriv'd in the Vale of *Guaca*, thro' ways, that besides their Steepness, were full of Bushes and Roots of Trees, that entangled the Feet of Men, as well as Horses. Towards the Top the Ascent is very Steep, and when *Badillo* pass'd it, a Passage was made of Timber and Earth, and yet many Horses broke their Necks, others were left behind alive.

166 The HISTORY of *America*.

alive, not being to go farther, and many Men per-
 ish'd miserably. On the Top of the Mountain
 there are no Towns, but in the Vales there are
 many *Indians*, rich in Gold, which is found in the
 Rivers that run down from the Mountain to the
 Westward. The Rain falls most part of the Year
 on the Mountain, and the Trees are continually
 dropping with that Rain, yet there is no Grass for
 Horses, and the *Spaniards* must have perish'd had
 they not always made Fires of a sort of Trees like
 Ashes, the Timber whereof within is white and
 dry, was soon kindled, and then burnt like dry
 Fir, till quite consum'd. In the *Indian* Towns
 there was Plenty of Provisions, Fruit, and Fish;
 they wore Cotton Mantles of several Colours; their
 Weapons were Darts, Spears, and *Macanas*; they
 had Bridges over the Rivers, made of long rough
 Roots growing among the Trees, of which they twist-
 ed Cabels, fastned to the Trees on each Side, and
 laid Timbers across them. Most of the *Indians* about
 that Mountain were subject to a Cazique call'd *Nu-
 ribara*, who was carry'd about on a golden Bier,
 and had many Heads of his Enemies before his
 House, for they were wont to eat their Bodies;
 they Worship'd the Sun; the Devil appear'd and
 spoke to them in several Shapes. An *Indian* Woman,
 who went away with *Badillo's* Men, told them, that
 when Captain *Cesar* return'd to *Cartagena*, the prime
 Men of those Vales assembled, and having offer'd
 extraordinary Sacrifices, the Devil appear'd to them
 in the Shape of a Tyger, and told them, that those
 Men were come from beyond the Sea, and would
 soon return to subdue the Country, therefore they
 should prepare for their Defence, and then he va-
 nish'd; after which Preparations were made accor-
 ding,

The HISTORY of America. 167

dingly, and all the Gold being taken out of the Graves was hid.)

ALL that was got by *Badillo's* tiresome Expedition, amounted to two thousand six hundred Pieces of Eight in Gold, which had been stolen out of a Bundle in his Tent, eight Leagues short of *Cali*, and was taken upon the Thief, and being divided among the surviving *Spaniards*, came to five Pieces of Eight and an half a Man, after having gone through so many Hardships. *Badillo* having rested his Men at *Cali*, was about sending Colonies to settle in the Province of *Burutica*; but *Aldana* knowing that he had incens'd all the People in his Passage thither, would not permit it, whereupon *Badillo* went away, with some of his Men to *Popayan*, in order to proceed towards the South Sea, and *Aldana* produc'd his Commission to be Governour in those Parts, which was well receiv'd in *Quito*, *Cali*, *Iasso*, and *Popayan*, and he began to apply himself to the Conversion of the *Indians*, being a modest, discreet, and good Christian. He next divided the Lands among those he thought most deserving, and sent the rest to settle in the Province of *Anzerma*, which *Belalcázar* had discover'd, confirm'd *Peter de Anasco* in his Post, he being then founding a Colony at *Tumana*. *George de Robledo* was order'd to lead the new Colony to *Anzerma*; and to call it *Santana de los Cavalleros*, otherwise nam'd *Anzerma*; four Leagues to the Westward whereof is a good Town, and a League from that again is the River of *Santa Maria*. The *Indians* of the aforeaid Town, were subject to a Lord call'd *Cirichia*, who liv'd in a good House, with a Court before it, enclos'd with a sort of very thick Reeds or Canes, that grow in that Country, and on the Tops of them many Heads of the *Indians* that had been eaten, and he had several Wives. When *Badillo's* Men pass'd through this Town, the

168 The HISTORY of *America*.

Indians having hid all their Provisions, there was no *Indian* Wheat, or other Food to be found; and those *Spaniards* for a Year past had eaten no Flesh, but of the Horses that dy'd, or some Dogs, whereupon thirty Soldiers ranging abroad for Meat, lighted near the great River on some People that were fled, who had a Pot full of Flesh; those *Spaniards* being violently hungry, thought of nothing but eating, and when they were well satisfy'd, one of the them took out of the Pot a Man's Hand, with the Fingers and Nails, which quite turn'd their Stomachs, but their hunger being quell'd, they return'd to their Quarters much out of Countenance. Many Brooks have their Sources on a Mountain near this Town, and Gold is found in them. The Natives went bare-foot and Naked, the Women wearing little Mantles, and some of them are Beautiful. They bury'd their dead in their Houses; had no Idols, nor was there any Worship found among them; but they talk'd with the Devil; marry'd their Nieces, and some of them their Sisters; the Son of the chief Wife was Heir. This Province borders on that of *Caratama*, through which *Rio Grande* runs, and beyond it is the River *Pozo*; to the Eastward of it are other great Towns, abounding in Provisions and Fruits, and the Inhabitants are not fond of human Flesh. The Lords were carry'd on Biers, and wore fine Cotton Mantles of several Colours; the Women wore their Hair curiously comb'd, rich Gold Collars and Rings in their Ears, making Holes in their Noses to fix little Pellets of Gold in them; and had large Vessels of the same Metal for use in their Houses. They had there many Sorcerers; no regard was had to Women's being Maids when they marry'd; dead Bodies were parch'd at the Fire, with much Lamentation, after which they

Maclitub

The HISTORY of *America*. 169

they drank, and repeated a sort of Psalms they had learnt of their Forefathers, and then bury'd them in their Houses. In other Parts they bury'd them on Hills, with their Cloaths, Arms, Wealth, Meat, and some Women alive.

At the End of the third Chapter of this Book, we left *Peter de Anzures*, marching on his Discovery with the Men that had belong'd to *Peter de Candia*, entering upon a Plain in which there were some Groves and Rivers, at the Conclusion of the Year 1538. (Hoping to have found some Towns there to quarter his Men, he found only Fields where the Root Yuca had been planted, but all pull'd up, and hid by the *Indians* upon Advice that the *Spaniards* were coming.) After much ranging about, nothing could be found but a Place that seem'd to have been Inhabited, whereupon he sent Captain *Alonso Palomino* to look out farther, and return to him at a Place appointed. *Palomino* having travell'd twelve Leagues, and seen nothing but some small Towns, without any Provisions, return'd with some *Indians*, who affirm'd, there was nothing else to be seen for many Leagues farther; but that five and twenty Days Journey from thence, there was a mighty River running from East to West so wide that the Sight could not reach from the one Bank to the other, and in it many Islands inhabited; and that at the end of those five and twenty Days Journey, there were large Provinces, inhabited by many Nations, speaking several Languages, where there was Plenty of Sheep, Deer, and other sorts of Food, with delicious Fruit, and that the People there were cloath'd. This Information much confounded *Anzures*, who was covetous to see those Countries, but consider'd that it was impossible to carry his Forces through those Deserts, and back to
Peru;

170 *The HISTORY of America.*

Peru; besides that, he knew not whether those *Indians* spoke Truth, and instead of twenty five there might not be fifty Days Journey, wherefore he resolv'd to return to his Men, without finding any thing but those great Plains, with the Towns in them burnt, which the Natives said had been done by their Enemies the *Jurios*. The Winter drawing on, when the Rivers swelling would become impassable, it was resolv'd to turn towards the Provinces of the *Maxos* and *Cotabamba*, to come out at *Chuquibabo*, and accordingly they went up the River with much Toil; for besides the want of Provisions, they were oblig'd to hew their Way through the thick Woods, having no other Food but the Cores of tall Palm-Trees, growing in those Parts, and Herbs; and to add to their Affliction, the continual Rains rotted their Cloaths on their Bodies, whilst at the same time they were making Passages over Quagmires with Boughs of Trees, and to cross the Rivers on Floats; the *Indians* and Blacks dropping down dead as they went, and the survivors feeding on the Bodies of the dead. Having thus travel'd sixteen Days up the River, without finding any Town, when about three thousand Men and Women were dead, they came to a Town where some sustenance was found, yet but little in that great Distress.

THE Inhabitants of the Place informing them, that the way on the Left, would carry them to *Collao*, they enter'd upon it, with continual Rain, and no Provisions, so that they kill'd their Horses by Degrees, thinking them great Dainties, and yet there was not one indecent Word, or the least muttering among those Men against their Commanders. Having with much Difficulty surpriz'd one of four Blacks that had cross'd the River, by whose Direction they resolv'd to pass the same, and made
Floats

The HISTORY of *America*. 171

Floats in order to it, a great Number of *Indians* stood ready on the other Side to oppose them, who wounded eight *Spaniards*, three whereof dy'd, yet were they put to Flight. On that Side of the River they found a large Field, whence the *Indian* Wheat had been carry'd in, and a Town call'd *Serelingra*, where was great Store of Yuca, Agis or Batatas, and other sorts of Food, with which they loaded three Floats, and sent them to the Forces. Upon the Encouragement of this good Fare, they stay'd there six Weeks, without any Salt or Flesh. When all the Food was devour'd, they set out from thence without any, (and after three Days march through Woods, met with some Cacao, and three Days after came into a Field of *Indian* Corn. Notwithstanding these small Recruits, they were so much spent, that not being able to carry the Vestments for Divine Service, they bury'd them near an *Indian* Place of Worship, and by them a *Spaniard* that dy'd. (Being come in this Distress into the Province of *Tacama*, a Country as impassable as they rest, they threw away their Arms and all they had, resolving to return to *Peru*, after five Months of Distress, fifty *Spaniards* being sick, and the rest carrying them what they could get to eat, three or four Leagues. Eight Days they waited to be able to cross the River *Tacama*, because it was much swell'd, and yet seven *Spaniards* were drowned in passing it when fallen. The Ways were strew'd with *Spaniards*, *Indians*, and Blacks, that dy'd for Hunger, and when an Horse was kill'd, each Quarter was sold for three hundred Pieces of Eight, and the rest proportionable, for Payment whereof the Buyers gave Notes under their Hands. Much Treasure was thrown away during this Expedition, and coming to a Town call'd *Quinquixano*, there

172 The HISTORY of *America*.

there was nothing in it to eat, which oblig'd them to kill fourteen Horses, (for by this Time an hundred and forty three *Spaniards* were dead, and above four thousand *Indians* and Blacks, two hundred and twenty Horses had been eaten, each of which had cost five or six hundred Pieces of Eight. Three Days after they came to the Town where they had enter'd upon their Progress, call'd *Ayabire*, where they found *Gaspar Rodriguez Enriquez*, Brother to *Peter Anzures*, who like a Man of Honour, was going to his Assistance, with seventy *Spaniards*, and a great Quantity of Provisions. It is to be observ'd, that the Leagues mention'd in all these Expeditions are computed from the Degrees of Latitude and Longitude, and that this Ridge of Mountains which parts *Peru* from the Countries to which the said Expeditions were undertaken, extending from *Otopari* on the *Andes* of *Tono*, to the Vale of *Cochabamba*, North and South, is sixty two Leagues in Length, according to the Latitude, but much more in the Course of Travelling, and *Otopari* is in thirteen Degrees of Latitude, and *Cochabamba* in seventeen. There are four ways to pass that Mountain, the first of *Otopari*, along the River thirty Leagues from *Cuzco*; the second in the Territory of *Chravaya*, by *Sandia* and *San Juan del Oro*, little above thirty Leagues to the Southward from the first Pass of *Otopari*; the third at *Camata*, eighteen or twenty Leagues beyond *Sandia*, and the fourth at *Cochabamba*, twenty three Leagues by the Latitude above *Camata*; for tho' Attempts have been made behind *Pueblo Nuevo*, and at *Sangavan* to find a Passage, none have been able to do it, so that these four are the only Ways.

To continue the Discoveries at this Time attempted from *Peru*, Captain *Mercadillo*, formerly mention'd.

The History of America. 173

tion'd, having gather'd an hundred and eighty five *Spaniards*, Horse and Foot, march'd along the River of the *Chupachos*, and being told by the Guides, that he ought to keep on the Right Hand of the River, for that the other Side would lead him into the District assign'd *Alonso de Alvarado*, he would not be advis'd ether by the *Spaniards* or the Natives, because besides being of a positive Temper, he was Rough and ill Natur'd, so that adhering obstinately to his own Conceit, he advanc'd to the Eastward, over vast high Mountains, and such uncooth Ways, that all the Horses perish'd, and in this manner, the Men being all dissatisfy'd with his ill Management; they came to the Province of *Mama*, a war-like Nation, where finding good Store of Provisions, they rested about six Weeks; and sending out Men, with Native Guides to view the Ways, were inform'd, that if they march'd to the Westward, they would come into rich and populous Provinces; yet he would hold on his Way to the Eastward, because, being sensible that he was ill belov'd by his Men, he concluded, that if he happen'd to come near to *Alvarado*, who had gain'd the Affections of most People, his Soldiers would desert him; and therefore he advanc'd over almost impenetrable Mountains, with the usual Difficulties from Rivers, Morasses, and Hunger, his Men muttering and declaring, that no good was to be expected under such a Commander. Being come to the most difficult Part of the Mountain, after seven Days march, Parties were sent out several Ways, which returning, brought Advice that there were no Roads, Habitations, or Provisions to be found, which was a great Mortification to them all, and Confusion to the Commander *Mercadillo*, who in his Tent advis'd with some Friends and Natives about the Method

174 *The HISTORY of America.*

Method that might be us'd to penetrate through that wretched Country, to the Province of the *Ycayzingas*, which Name signifies, double Noses, because those People us'd to split theirs. They all told him, it was impossible to pass that way, where they must all perish, yet was he so indiscreet as to reject their Council, and much more to communicate it to those that did not keep the Secret; for when the Advice those he had consulted with had given, was made known, a *Spaniard* whose Name was *Cacalla*, considering the Folly of the Undertaking, discours'd *Ferdinand Gascon*, the Colonel, and other prime Men, representing, that their Commander was resolv'd to lead them to evident Destruction, whereupon those Gentlemen, repairing to *Mercadillo*, in a very courteous and submissive Manner as was due to a Superior, intreated him, as their Chief, and a Christian, not to cast away so many brave Men, but to return to the Province of *Mama*, where they would consult about finding a safer way to the Province of *Ycayzinga*. He answer'd, he was resolv'd not to turn back, but to hold on the same way, whereupon they left him very much dissatisfy'd. This being known, all the Men repair'd to the Colonel, and other prime Persons conjuring them not to lead them to manifest Destruction in compliance with the Madness of *Mercadillo*; whereupon, they in the Presence of a Notary, requir'd him to turn back, and he refusing, they requir'd him again, when he bid those that did it, to give it under their Hands. No sooner were the Words out of his Mouth, than they all drew together to Sign; yet he still persisting, commanded him to desist, or he would punish them, whereupon the Colonel and other prime Men laid hold of him, saying, It was no difference to God or the King, to prevent those Forces perishing

The HISTORY of America. 175

perishing through his Rashness, since they were all unanimously agreed in that Point. His Obstinacy nothing abating, they drew up a formal Procefs against him, and so return'd to *Xauxa*.

C H A P. II.

The Governour Pizarro comes to Cuzco ; defeat of Indians ; Ferdinand Pizarro goes away to Spain ; the Towns of Arequipa and Paſto built ; Description of the Province of Paſto.

F*rancis Pizarro*, Governour of *Peru*, being at *Xauxa*, receiv'd Advice of the Defeat of *Almagro* before ſpoken of, near *Cuzco*, and with it that Gentleman's Son *James*, was deliver'd to him, whom he ſent away to the City of *Lima*, ordering him to be well treated, and promiſing that his Father ſhould not be put to Death, which none of *Almagro's* Friends gave any Credit to, becauſe *Pizarro* was then too much puff'd up to return to his former Partnership. He proceeding thence to *Cuzco*, at the Bridge of *Abancay* had the News of the Death of the *Adelantado Almagro*, which ſome ſaid he had receiv'd before, and conceal'd it, and that at this Place the Trumpets ſounded for Joy of it ; tho' his Friends affirm'd, that he was concern'd and ſhed Tears. At *Cuzco* he was receiv'd with Tokens of Joy, and willingly gave Ear to Flatterers, who applauded the defeating and putting to Death of *Almagro*. The Account here given of the Proceedings againſt that unfortunate Gentleman, and the Behaviour of his Adverſaries is exactly the ſame that was transmiſ-

Method that might be us'd to penetrate through that wretched Country, to the Province of the *Tcayzingas*, which Name signifies, double Noses, because those People us'd to split theirs. They all told him, it was impossible to pass that way, where they must all perish, yet was he so indiscreet as to reject their Council, and much more to communicate it to those that did not keep the Secret; for when the Advice those he had consulted with had given, was made known, a *Spaniard* whose Name was *Cacalla*, considering the Folly of the Undertaking, discour'd *Ferdinand Gascon*, the Colonel, and other prime Men, representing, that their Commander was resolv'd to lead them to evident Destruction, whereupon those Gentlemen, repairing to *Mercadillo*, in a very courteous and submissive Manner as was due to a Superior, intreated him, as their Chief, and a Christian, not to cast away so many brave Men, but to return to the Province of *Mama*, where they would consult about finding a safer way to the Province of *Tcayzinga*. He answer'd, he was resolv'd not to turn back, but to hold on the same way, whereupon they left him very much dissatisfy'd. This being known, all the Men repair'd to the Colonel, and other prime Persons conjuring them not to lead them to manifest Destruction in compliance with the Madness of *Mercadillo*; whereupon, they in the Presence of a Notary, requir'd him to turn back, and he refusing, they requir'd him again, when he bid those that did it, to give it under their Hands. No sooner were the Words out of his Mouth, than they all drew together to Sign; yet he still persisting, commanded him to desist, or he would punish them, whereupon the Colonel and other prime Men laid hold of him, saying, It was no difference to God or the King, to prevent those Forces perishing

The History of America. 175

perishing through his Rashness, since they were all unanimously agreed in that Point. His Obstinacy nothing abating, they drew up a formal Process against him, and so return'd to *Xauxa*.

C H A P. II.

The Governour Pizarro comes to Cuzco ; defeat of Indians ; Ferdinand Pizarro goes away to Spain ; the Towns of Arequipa and Paſto built ; Description of the Province of Paſto.

F*rancis Pizarro*, Governour of *Peru*, being at *Xauxa*, receiv'd Advice of the Defeat of *Almagro* before spoken of, near *Cuzco*, and with it that Gentleman's Son *James*, was deliver'd to him, whom he sent away to the City of *Lima*, ordering him to be well treated, and promising that his Father should not be put to Death, which none of *Almagro's* Friends gave any Credit to, because *Pizarro* was then too much puff'd up to return to his former Partnership. He proceeding thence to *Cuzco*, at the Bridge of *Abancay* had the News of the Death of the Adelantado *Almagro*, which some said he had receiv'd before, and conceal'd it, and that at this Place the Trumpets sounded for Joy of it ; tho' his Friends affirm'd, that he was concern'd and shed Tears. At *Cuzco* he was receiv'd with Tokens of Joy, and willingly gave Ear to Flatterers, who applauded the defeating and putting to Death of *Almagro*. The Account here given of the Proceedings against that unfortunate Gentleman, and the Behaviour of his Adversaries is exactly the same that was transmit-

176 *The HISTORY of America.*

transmitted to the King, and deliver'd by the Sons of many that were present at all those Transactions; tho' others represented them as directed by Affection or Prejudice. When *Pizarro* came to *Cuzco*, his Brothers were at *Collao*; *Ferdinand* who desir'd to return into *Spain*, endeavouring to amass much Gold and Silver, either by fair or foul means, as concluding, that the more he carry'd, the better he should succeed in his Business. The *Indians* in those Parts under standing that there were very many *Spaniards* at *Cuzco*, and believing they would come thither, assembled in great Numbers upon Advice brought them that *Ferdinand Pizarro* was mov'd to *Ayabire*, posted themselves along the Drein that was from the Lake *Titicaca*, where that Commander understood, that they expected him, and had taken away the Bridge that us'd to be there. The *Spaniards* being in Sight of those *Indians*, who shouted at them on the other Side of the Water, some Horsemen ventur'd into it, of whom four were drowned, and one that got over was taken and sacrificed. Captain *Gabriel de Rojas* return'd to the Town of *Cepita*, and carrying Timber, made a way over; whereupon the *Indians* fled, and were pursu'd to *Collao*, where several Skirmishes happen'd with them; and *Ferdinand Pizarro* supposing his Brother *Francis* to be then at *Cuzco*, went away to that City, leaving his other Brother *Gonzalo*, to command in those Parts.

THE Soldiers of the Party of the *Pizarros*, that did not go upon the Discoveries before mention'd, were dispers'd about the Provinces of *Condesuyo*, and *Chinchafuyo*, living after a libertine Manner, thinking they might do what they pleas'd, and when the *Indians* complain'd to the Governour, he receiv'd them after a stern Manner, telling them they ly'd, which Encouragement of his made the Magistrates
and.

The HISTORY of America. 177

and Officers of Justice, connive at all their Villanies. On the other hand he publickly show'd his Aversion to the Spaniards of *Chile*, which incens'd them, and accordingly they only waited an Opportunity to show their Resentment, and raise new Troubles. *James de Alvarado* whom the Adelantado *Almagro* had appointed his Executor, and as such Governour of the New Kingdom of *Toledo*, till his Son was of Age, being willing to perform the Trust repos'd in him by his late Friend, very civilly intreated the Governour *Pizarro*, that laying aside the City of *Cuzco*, till such Time as the King should decide that Controversy, he would evacuate the rest of that Province, in Execution of what the King had directed by his Commission. *Pizarro* answer'd him very rudely, saying, That his Government had no Bounds, but extended as far as *Flanders*. Thus it appear'd that the Troubles were not at an End, that his good Fortune had made him lay aside all the Sedateness he before pretended to, and that he was entirely possess'd by Ambition. *James de Alvarado* taking with him such Evidences as he thought requisite, went away to *Lima*, where he embark'd for *Spain*, tho' the Governour endeavour'd to stop him.

THE *Ingo Manga* having withdrawn himself, as was said before, with his *Orejones* and old Commanders to the Mountains *Andes*, his Head Quarters being at *Viticos*, his Men made Excursions on the High Ways to rob, to the great Disturbance of the Country, for they impal'd all the Spaniards that fell into their Hands, or else rack'd and sacrific'd them, which struck such a Terror, that they durst not go to *Cuzco*, unless it were in considerable Numbers. *Francis Pizarro* appointed the Factor *N-lan Suarez de Carvajal*, to put an End to that War. He march'd with a good Power from *Cuzco* to

178 *The History of America.*

Bilcas, whence he proceeded to the Province of *Gua-manga*, and encamp'd at *Uripa*, four Leagues from *Cubamba*. Upon Advice thereof, *Mango* thought fit to retire farther back into the Mountain, whence he had before advanc'd a little, for the better making of his Excursions; and the Factor being inform'd of the Place where he lay, which was not far distant, order'd Captain *Villadiego*, with thirty of the most active Soldiers, being Musketeers, Cross-bow, and Target Men, to march to a Bridge three Leagues from his Quarters where the *Inga* was said to be, and endeavour to seize him by surprize. *Villadiego* set out at the second Watch of the Night, proceeded to the Bridge, and having just past it, was inform'd by some *Indians*, that the *Inga* was on the Top of a Mountain, with about eighty Men, having sent away all his Forces before, upon Intelligence of the Approach of the *Spaniards*. *Villadiego* being eager to take or kill the *Inga*, for the Honour and Profit he expected to gain by it, began to climb a very steep Hill, without first viewing it, or examining the Place where the Enemy lay, and the harm they might do him, and this later than was proper, for the Sun rising, its Height and the Steepness of the Ascent was so fatiguing, that meeting with no Water, they fainted away, and yet encouraging one another, advanc'd a League and an Half. The *Inga* understanding that those *Spaniards* were making towards him, almost spent, and without any Horses, mounted one of four he had, with an Horseman's Spear in his Hand, commanding three of his Relations to mount the other three Horses, and encourag'd his eighty Men not to let slip that favourable Opportunity they had in their Hands. *Villadiego* being come to the Top of the Hill, sent three or four of the ablest Youths to get Sight of the *Indians*,

The HISTORY of *America*. 179

ans, who had not gone far before they heard the Noise of the Horses, and Men making towards them. The *Spaniards* being drawn up, the *Inga* appear'd leading his Men, all in length to enclose them, who discharg'd their Muskets and Cross-bows, and tho' they kill'd some *Indians*, they clos'd with loud Cries, broke one of *Villadiego's* Arms, letting fly great Numbers of Arrows and Darts. *Villadiego*, tho' his Arm was broken, did Wonders till he fell down dead, as did twenty three more, being quite spent; the other six escap'd, and convey'd the News to the Factor, by the Help of the friendly *Indians*, who reliev'd and carry'd them in Hammacks. The *Inga*, when he had slain the *Spaniards*, and sent their Heads to the Vale of *Vuicos*, caus'd the Hands, Noses, and Ears of many of the *Indians* that were there to be cut off, and their Eyes put out, sending for more Forces to defend him, if attack'd.

Ferdinand Pizarro returning to *Cuzco*, and leaving his Brother *Gonzalo* at *Collao*, he went away to the Vale of *Cockabamba*, where the Natives not being subdu'd, assembled to cut him off, his whole Force being but sixty Men, among whom were several Commanders of Note. The *Indians* to the Number of thirty thousand, having offer'd their Sacrifices, and vow'd they would make a drinking Cup of *Gonzalo Pizarro's* Skull, drew near to the *Spaniards*, and encamp'd, making many Fires, and spending the whole Night in drinking their Liquor call'd *Chicha*, and crying out to the *Spaniards*, that they should soon feel the Weight of their Hands, for they now knew how to deal with them. In the Morning *Gonzalo Pizarro*, by the Advice of his Officers, divided his Men into three Squadrons, two under the Command of the Captains *Garcilasso* and *Onate*, with whom was *Paul Inga*, and the third he headed himself.

himself. Captain *Gabriel de Rojas* was commanded with a few Horsemen to cover the Foot that were in the Town. *Garcilasso* charging the *Indians*, they redoubled their Cries in such manner, that there was no hearing what was said, and both Parties fought intermix'd without any Order, the *Spaniards* making a wonderful Slaughter with their Swords and Spears, and the Horses trampling abundance under Foot. Then *Gonzalo Pizarro*, and Captain *Onate*, charg'd, and tho' the Lords of *Consara* and *Pocona*, came on with eight or nine thousand *Indians*, they could not prevail. The Lord of *Chichas* fell upon *Gabriel de Rojas*, but found such Opposition, the *Inga Paul*, and his Men behaving themselves bravely, that he fled, and the *Spaniards* with their *Indians* pursu'd them, so that in the Fight and Pursuit, near a thousand of those People were kill'd. That Multitude being thus dispers'd, Captain *Garcilasso* went with thirty Men to the Vale of *Pocona*, where he routed a thousand *Indians*, and then the *Spaniards* having been reinforc'd from *Cuzco*, remov'd to the Vale of *Andamarca*, and the Lord of *Consara*, seeing no Hopes of prevailing, su'd for Peace. Thus the Country of *Collao* and *Los Charchas* was subdu'd by Degrees, some *Spaniards* being of Opinion that Settlements ought to be made there, which others oppos'd, undervaluing the richest Country in the World, for some Mines began to be discover'd, whereupon *Gonzalo Pizarro* went away to *Cuzco*, to advise with his Brother, leaving Captain *James de Roxas* in the Territory of *Los Charcas*, with all the Men, being an hundred and forty *Spaniards* Horse and Foot.

THE Governour *Francis Pizarro* being inform'd of the Disaster befallen the Captain *Villadiego* and his Men, march'd out himself with seventy Men to joyn the Factor *Tilan Suarez*, sending out three Parties

The HISTORY of *America*. 181

ties several Ways to surprize the *Inga*, who having Intellgence by his Spies of all that was done, retir'd to *Viticos*, whereupon *Pizarro* considering it was impracticable to pursue him over the *Andes*, and the Damage the *Inga* and his People did in obstructing the Trade between *Lima* and *Cuzco*, concluded that the only Remedy was to found a new Colony. To this Purpose he pitch'd upon the Territory of *Guamanga*, assigning its Jurisdiction from *Xauxa* to the Bridge of *Bilcas*, with the Provinces on both Sides thereof. All that Country being divided already between the Inhabitans of *Cuzco* and *Lima*, they urg'd, it was unjust to take the same from them to give it to others; in Answer to which, he presently requir'd all those who had Lands in the Territories of *Cuzco* or *Lima*, to declare where they would fix their Residence, and he would there assign them Lands, by which means the Colony was founded, by the Name of *San Juan de la Vitoria*, in the Province of *Guamanga*, where Captain *Francis de Cardenas* was appointed Governour, and so *Pizarro* return'd to *Cuzco*.

THE City of *Guamanga* was then founded at an Indian Town of the same Name, near the great Ridge of the *Andes*, and afterwards, the War with *Mango Inga* being at an End, it was remov'd to the Place where it now stands, being a Plain, near a Ridge of small Hills, to the Southward, a Rivulet of good Water running by it, and there the best Brick and Stone Houses in all *Peru* have been built. The Situation is very healthy, because neither the Sun, the Air, nor the Dews are offensive, nor is it hot or damp, but perfectly Temperate. The Spaniards have built many Country Houses, keeping their Cattel about the adjacent Rivers and Vales, the greatest River in the Country being *Vinaque*.

182 *The HISTORY of America.*

where are some large Structures that seem to be very ancient, and the *Indians* say were built by white Bearded People, who were in the Country before the Time of the *Ingas*, and they are of a different Form from those of the *Ingas*. All along the Banks of *Vinaque*, and in other Places near the City as good Wheat grows as the best in *Spain*, all sorts of Fruit answer very well, and it is wonderful to see what Numbers of Pigeons there are. The Avenues to the City are delightful, as is all the Country, which was full of *Mitimaes*, because of its being a Frontier to the *Andes*, which lye to the Eastward, To the Westward is the Coast of South Sea, the *Indian* Towns subject to it have a fruitful Soil, abounding in Cattel, and the People are all cloath'd. They had publick and private Places of Worship, their Funerals were like the rest describ'd in other Places; before their being subdu'd by the *Ingas* they were a war-like Nation, and after Conquest of the *Sorras* and *Lucanes*, which are within this Jurisdiction, a great Number of them fortify'd themselves on a Rock, which they defended above two Years against the *Inga Tupangui*. They all wore Marks of Distinction on their Heads, as their Ancestors had done, and were formerly most extravagantly Superstitious, and given to Soothsaying.

THE Governour *Pizarro* took Care upon all Occasions to send Messengers into *Spain*, with such Accounts of all Affairs as were most for his Advantage, and considerable Presents to the Kings and all his Friends, having at the same obstructed the Passage of those that had been sent by *Almagro*. One *Zavallos* being the last so employ'd by him, return'd at this Time, and among the Dispatches brought over a Patent creating him a Marquess, with Authority to settle on himself and his Heirs as much Land

The HISTORY of *America*. 183

Land as was inhabited by sixteen thousand *Indians*. As an allay to this Joy, a few Days after Advice was brought that the Commotions of *Peru* being known in *Spain*, a Judge had been appointed to come into *Peru* to enquire into those Affairs. Captain *Peter Anzures* being return'd from his tedious and fruitless Expedition, before spoken of, was now Commission'd by the new Marquess *Pizarro* to go settle a Colony in the Province of *Los Charcas*, which he did calling it *La Plata*, in the District of *Chuquisaca*, a temperate Country, and fit for Wheat, Barley, Vineyards, all sorts of Fruit, and Breeds of Cattel, all which bears a great Price, on Account of the immense Wealth afterwards found there. Its Territory is very large, through which some Rivers of good Water run, where when those *Indians* were subdu'd by the *Ingas*, they built regular Towns, were cloath'd, worshipp'd the Sun, had Temples to offer Sacrifices; the Natives and the *Carangues* were war-like People, and report that the *Ingas* kept Men there to dig Silver for them, especially on the Hill of *Porco*, besides which several other good Mines have been found near the Town of *La Plata*, and all the Country is thought to be full of Mines, from which the new Town had the Name of *La Plata* given it; and *Ferdinand Pizarro* order'd a Mine to be wrought, which he took for himself, and if he had continu'd it, would have yilded him above 200000 Ducats clear, but of the prodigious Wealth of these Mines we shall speak in another Place.

Alonso de Alvarado set out about this Time upon his intended Discovery, to the Southward for a Province the *Spaniards* call'd *Los Motilones*, where he found large Rivers, little Store of Provisions, and the Houses at a great Distance from one another, and being come to a great River that runs away to the

184 *The History of America.*

Northward, he was told that there was a good Country beyond it, whereupon he resolv'd to pass, and there being no Probability of Fording, set his Men to build a Boat, and in the mean Time was inform'd that fifteen Days Journey from thence, beyond a great Mountain, there was a Plain, where on the Banks of a Lake resided an *Orejon*, of the Race of the *Ingas*, whose Name was *Ancoallo*, and that besides him there were several other great Lords. Having finish'd the Boat and cross'd the River, they attempted to pass the Mountains, but after all their Endeavours could never find any Way, and the *Indians* said they knew none, and that what they knew concerning *Ancoallo* and his Country, they had receiv'd from their Forefathers; so that either they knew not the Way, or would not show it. The Country of *Mayabamba* is unwholsome, by reason of the many Rivers, Mountains, and Woods, for which Reasons *Alvarado* resolv'd to repass the River, and so this Expedition came to nothing.

THE Marquess *Pizarro*, after having given the necessary Orders for founding the new Towns of *Guamanga* and *Pasto*, stay'd some Days at *Cuzco*, endeavouring to bring *Mango Inga* to Obedience by fair means, but being disappointed, he directed his Brother *Gonzalo* to carry on the War against him. The other Brother *Ferdinand*, having by hook or by crook gather'd a vast Treasure for the King, and for himself, and taking a Copy of the Process, and all other Evidences that he thought might justify the murder of *Almagro* before the King, those Writings being drawn up as he would have them, which was easy to be done there, he spoke to the Marquess, his Brother, about his intended Journey into *Spain*, and being both of them haughty and ill Natur'd, they differ'd so much about it, that *Ferdinand* went away from *Cuzco* in a Rage; but as they had

The HISTORY of *America*. 185

had both need of each other for carrying on their Designs, they were soon reconcil'd. By this Time *James Nuñez de Mercado*, and *James Gutierrez de los Rios*, both Friends to the late Adelantado *Almagro*, were gone into *Spain*, and they, in Conjunction with *James de Alvarado*, gave an Account to *Dr. Robles*, the eldest of the Counsellors for the *Indies* of all that had happen'd in *Peru*, proving by dint of Argument, and undeniable Evidences, that the *Pizarros* had been to blame for all the Differences between them and *Almagro*, and that what they had done was the Effect of Ambition, Revenge and Cruelty, whereupon the Doctor propos'd to secure *Ferdinand Pizarro*, knowing he would soon be at *Panama*, in order to pass over into *Spain*. The said *Ferdinand* being ready to set out for *Spain*, advis'd his Brother the Marquess to be always upon his Guard, apprehending that the *Chile* Men would do him some Mischief, and at least to send young *Almagro* into *Spain*, because those People were very fond of him, which the Marquess did not much seem to regard. *Ferdinand* then embarking at *Lima*, sail'd away for *New Spain*, landed at *Guatulco*, near *Tecoantepeque*, and travelling through the Country was arrested near *Guaxaca*, and carry'd to *Mexico*; but the Vice-Roy having no Orders from Court to detain him, let him proceed on his Journey; as he did, and arriving at the Islands *Azores*, stay'd there till he could hear from his Friends, whither he might go safely to Court, and having receiv'd their Answer, repair'd thither, but met not with so good a Reception as he had expected. The Marquess, his Brother, going from *Cuzco* to *Collao*, at *Chucuito* receiv'd a Letter from *Ferdinand Machicao*, advising him to take special Care of his Person, because the Men of *Chile* design'd to kill him. Many Gentlemen and Soldiers of Note, who had serv'd and fought for him,

him, being in his Company at that Time, whom it was requisite to reward and provide for, he resolv'd to found the City of *Arequipa*.

BEING gone about that Affair, he was inform'd that *Mango Inga* was for Peace, tho' it prov'd not true, for that Prince being much distress'd, us'd many Artifices, by which he avoided several Dangers, and so he twice escap'd falling into the Hands of *Gonzalo Pizarro*. The Marquess, upon that Advice, thinking he had done with the *Inga*, order'd his Brother *Gonzalo* to go take upon him the Government of the Provinces about *Quito*, and he accordingly set out with a Number of Men along the Mountain great Road, declaring he design'd to make some Discovery, particularly in the Province of *Canela*, which was reported to be very rich. The Marquess at the same time made Choice of *Peter de Valdibia*, who had been a Colonel, a discreet Person, and had serv'd in the Wars in *Italy*, to go upon the Discovery and Conquest of the Kingdom of *Chile*, ordering him to be ready by the Beginning of the next Year, which would be fifteen hundred and forty. Then the Marquess being come to the Vale of *Yucay*, in hopes to conclude an Accommodation with the *Inga Mango*, the more to gain his Affection, sent him a fine Pad, some Silk Garments, and other Presents; but that Barbarian met two Servants of the Marquess's, who carry'd the Present, and kill'd them, which made the Marquess repent his Credulity, and to begin his Revenge, he caus'd one of the *Inga's* Wives he had in his Hands, to be kill'd in the same Place where his Servants had been slain, which was look'd upon as an indiscreet and unchristian Action. Returning then to *Cuzco*, he gave the necessary Orders for founding the City of *Arequipa*, and went way to *San Juan de la Victoria*, otherwise call'd *Guamanga*, and thence to *Lima*.

The HISTORY of America. 187

TO return to the Provinces about the Equinoctial. *Gonzalo Diaz de Pineda*, who was Deputy Governour at *Quito*, having obtain'd a Commission for founding a Town in the Country of the *Pastos*, perform'd it this Year 1539, in the Vale of *Gua-canquer*, but it was afterwards remov'd to the Vale of *Tris*, where it continues by the Name of *Villa Viciosa de Pasto*. The distance between *Popayan* and *Pasto* is forty Leagues, in which last Province are the Towns of *Asqual*, *Nallama*, *Tucurres*, *Capnis*, *Lles*, *Gualmatal*, *Funes*, *Chapal*, *Piales*, *Papiales*, *Turca*, and *Cumba*, and from it the Town of *St. John de Pasto* was so call'd. Of the other adjacent Provinces nothing occurs to be said, but that near a Town call'd *Pastoco*, there is a Lake on the Top of the highest of all that Ridge of Mountains, the Water whereof is excessive cold, and tho' it is eight Leagues in length and four in breadth, there are neither Fowls nor Fishes in it, nor does the Land produce any Trees, or other Thing whatsoever; and not far from it is another Lake of the same Nature. Near the *Pastos* are the Indians call'd *Quillacingas*, but differing in Customs, for the *Pastos* did not eat human Flesh, they were ill countenanc'd, both Men and Women, slovenly and rude; void of Religion, no Idols being found among them; yet they believ'd, that after Death they were to live again in some very delightful Places; their Habit was short Tunicks and Mantles. The *Quillacingas* convers'd with the Devil, bury'd their Wealth with the Dead, and some living Persons with them, to the Number of fifteen or twenty, with the prime Men. In the Country of the *Pastos* little Mayz grows, but there are great Breeds of Cattel, and much Barley, *Papas*, and Fruit. Among the *Quillacingas* grows much Mayz, the Natives are well made, war-like, and hard to be brought under; they have large Rivers

188 *The HISTORY of America.*

vers of good Water, one of them lying between *Pasto* and *Popayan*, call'd *Rio Caliente*, or the hot River, is dangerous, and they pass over it with Cables, the Water of it is the finest in all those Parts. In this same Province is the River of *Angasmayo*, whither the *Inga Guaynacava* extended his Dominion. The Town is seated in a delightful Vale, thro' which runs a pleasant River of good Water, and it produces Plenty of Wheat, Barley, and Mayz. (All those Plains abound in Deer, Rabbits, Partridges, Pigeons, Turtles, Pheasants, and Turkeys, the Country is very cold.)

C H A P. III.

*Discoveries made by George de Robledo ;
the Provinces of Picara, Paucura, Pozo,
Quinbaya, &c.*

G Eorge de Robledo setting out from *Cali*, march'd along a Vale, through which the great River of the *Magdalen* runs, the Baggage being carry'd along it on Floats, and a large Canoe, to a Town call'd *Del Pescado*, or of Fish on the Bank thereof, nothing of Note happening by the way, but that a Soldier having stabb'd a Black Woman he was marry'd to, fled towards *Timana*, and was taken and eaten by the *Indians*, a just judgment for the Wrongs he had done those People. Robledo entering upon that Province, found no Provisions, the Natives being fled, upon Advice of his coming, but he sending out Parties after them, they brought above two hundred Prisoners, whom he treated courteously, promising they should not be molested, if they would return to their Houses, and so dismiss'd them. The Report of this good usage being spread abroad, some of the *Caziques*

The HISTORY of America. 189

ques began to submit, and People the Country, and some of them told him, that towards the North Sea, there were Men with Horses, who did much harm where they came, for which Reason *Robledo* immediately gave Orders to find out a proper Place to settle his Colony, because those might be People from *Cartagena*, and if they happen'd to found a Town first, it might occasion Trouble. The Adelantado *Don Peter de Heredia* having complain'd to the King of the Injury done him by the licenciado *Badillo*, the licenciado *Santa Cruz* was sent to call him to Account, who understanding that *Badillo* was gone from *Uraba* up the Country, sent *John Greciano* as his Deputy, with a Party to bring him back to *Cartagena*, at the same Time appointing *Levis Bernal* to command those Men. They set out from *Cartagena* in the Year 1538, and were not gone far beyond *Uraba*, before they cavill'd about the Command, each making what Friends he could. They cross'd the Mountain *Abibe* without much Difficulty, because *Badillo* had made the Way, and there some young Men kill'd such a large Snake, that they found a whole Deer, Horns and all in its Belly; at length after many Hardships and Contentions they came upon the Frontiers of the Province of *Anzerma*, and finding Plenty of Provisions, stay'd there some Time; but the Discord still continuing, they proceeded so far as to draw out in Arms to engage one another; but just then Captain *Ruy Vanegas*, who was going with twenty Horse, by Order of *George de Robledo* to seek out a proper Place to build a Town, appear'd on a Ridge, call'd of *Umbra*, whence he spy'd the Men of *Cartagena*, and they upon Sight of him held their Hands. *Robledo* being inform'd of what had happen'd, plac'd his Colony on another Hill, call'd *Guarina*, to which those of *Cartagena* resorted, and submitted themselves

to him ; however, the Town was remov'd to the Hill of *Umbra*, where it now stands.

Robledo made it his Business to reduce the *Curacas*, or Lords, by fair means, and sent *Suer de Nava* with fifty Men to view the Province of *Caramanta*, and bring him an Account of it, whist he went himself to *Ocuzca*, and perswaded the *Curaca*, so call'd, to come to him, but he, tho' well us'd, finding himself under a Guard, made his escape, and could not be had again. *Suer de Nava* returning, said he had perswaded those People to whom he went to live peaceably. *Robledo* going about to visit his District, Captain *Ray Vanegas* happen'd upon a Temple, into which many *Indians* were withdrawn, with abundance of Goods, and the Value of twelve thousand Pieces of Eight in Gold, most of which was restor'd to the Owners, to keep them in good Temper. Having thus concluded Peace with the Inhabitants of the Vale of *Apia*, and being inform'd that *Ocuzca* and *Umbruzza*, another considerable Lord were joyning to attack the new Town of *Anzerma*, he return'd thither, and by fair means pacify'd those People, promising to do them no harm, so that he had leisure to discover the Countries beyond the *Cordillera*, or Ridge of Mountains to the Northward of *Anzerma*, and accordingly sent *Gomez Hernandez* with fifty Men, to discover the Province of *Choco*, and going with him as far as the Vale of *St. Mary*, he was there met by an *Indian*, who pretended to be the Lord *Umbruzza*, whom he treated very courteously, but being satisfy'd that he was not that Lord, he caus'd him to be burnt. *Gomez Hernandez* came to the Mountain *Cima*, which is very uncooth, but much wooded ; subject to continual Rain, and full of wild Beasts, Monkeys, and such Creatures, the Inhabitants going naked, and very brutal, living in Houses on Trees, where a Soldier call'd *Alonso Perez*, entering

The HISTORY of *America*. 191

one of those Houses, seiz'd an *Indian* Woman, who took her Captivity so much to heart, that she cast herself down headlong from those vast Rocks. *Hernandez* travell'd some Days with much difficulty, about that wild Place, till he came to a River, which they all suppos'd to be that of *Darien*, because it ran to the Northward, finding nothing to eat but the Fruit call'd *Pixibaes*, which stood them in much stead. Afterwards they found many *Turkeys*, *Pheasants*, and *Dantas*, as big as *Mules*, and being come to the Top of a Mountain Ridge, they saw the Country all about seem'd to be flat, but much wooded, without any Champion; all about the Hills the Houses were large built on the Trees upon great Forks. The *Indians*, who were naked and well shap'd, as soon as they spy'd the *Spaniards*, beat many little Drums, and play'd on Pipes, whereupon a great Number drew together, shooting abundance of Arrows, and casting Darts at the *Spaniards*, who had the misfortune that several of their Crossbow Strings broke, and having no Horses, they were hard press'd, but keeping their Order, they made a wonderful Retreat, those Mountainiers pursuing them a whole Day, when being satisfy'd with having drove them out of their Country, they desisted, and the *Spaniards* got safe to *Anzerma*. On the other hand Captain *Ruy Vanegas* was endeavouring to reduce *Pirsa* and *Sopia*; the People of *Pirsa* were in Arms, and had made great Pits very artfully cover'd with Grass, and within them sharp pointed Stakes of hard Wood, and when the *Spaniards* pursu'd them, they ran to skulk in the Brakes. One Horse happen'd to fall into a Pit and was kill'd, which discover'd the Contrivance, and after some of those People had suffer'd, Peace was offer'd them, and they submitted.

Robledo having settled his Affairs, as has been said in the Year 1540, was very intent upon crossing the great River of the *Magdalen*, to discover the Provin-

192 *The HISTORY of America.*

ces on the other Side of it; and tho' the Enterprize seem'd difficult, he resolv'd to venture upon it, to which Purpose he distributed the Lands among those that were to remain as Inhabitants of his new Town, which done, he set out from *Anzerma*, with few above an hundred Horse and Foot. When come to the Town of *Irra*, near which the great River of the *Magdalen*, otherwise call'd of *Santa Marta*, passes with a rapid Stream, Floats were made which carry'd over the Horses and the Baggage which was small, Experience having shown that Forces going upon Discoveries ought not to be encumber'd. The Soldiers plac'd themselves between two Canes as thick as a Man's Thigh, fastned at the Ends with two great Pieces of Timber, an *Indian* swimming before drew the Canes by a Withy, other *Indians* going behind to steer and keep the Machine steady, and in this difficult and dangerous Manner, the Soldiers cross'd that rapid River, the like whereof has never been seen. When over the River, *Robledo* sent Messengers to the Province of *Carrapa*, which is large and very rich, desiring they would admit of him as a Friend, which the Lords being desirous to live in Peace agreed to, and brought Presents of Jewels and Provisions. Here the *Spaniards* stay'd above a Month, and the *Indians* told them, that beyond the Mountains *Andes*, there was a plain and wealthy Country, call'd *Arbi*, and gave some Information of the Provinces of *Picara*, *Pancura*, and *Pozo*, all rich and populous, at War among themselves, as those of *Carrapa* then were with the People of *Picara*. *Robledo* judg'd it proper to proceed, and desir'd some Persons of Distinction to go with him, and to furnish Men to make War on such as would not admit of his Friendship. The Lords of *Carrapa* comply'd, and furnish'd four thousand fighting Men. They march'd to *Picara*, a larger Province than that of *Carrapa*, and
more

The HISTORY of *America*. 193

more wealthy, where the Natives were in Arms, but after many Threats and much Noise, they fled, the *Carrapas* pursuing, taking some Prisoners, and killing others, and devour'd both the living and the dead. Messengers were sent to offer them Peace, and being afraid of the Horses, the Dogs, and the *Spanish* Weapons, several Lords came to make their Submission, bringing a considerable Quantity of Gold. Having in twenty Days adjusted all Affairs at *Picara*, they proceeded to *Pozo*, where the Houses of the Lords were fortify'd with Enclosures of thick Canes, on which were Scaffolds and Breast Works to offer Sacrifices and look out. These *Indians* are the bravest of any in *Pernu*, were wont to carry their Arms with them when they went to till the Land, were dreaded by their Neighbours, and would be at Peace with none, their Habitations reaching to *Rio Grande*. (Being inform'd of what had happen'd in the other Provinces of their Neighbourhood, and making no Account of the *Spaniards*, after many Vows and Sacrifices offer'd up to their Gods, above six thousand of them assembl'd to make good the Passage through a Wood.)

THE *Spaniards* were marching at their Ease down a River, along which were many Trees and much Fruit, the Country pleasant and delightful, without thinking of any Enemies. *Robledo* and some others being foremost, heard the Noise of those Barbarians, and calling some others, they all went up the Hill that was in the Way, without expecting any Opposition. The *Indians* of *Carrapa* and *Picara*, amounted to eight thousand, and were very fearful, those of *Iozo* made much Noise, calling the *Spaniards* Women, with other such like Expressions. When up the Hill, which was somewhat difficult of Ascent, *Robledo* spurr'd on, crying *St. James*, and the rest follow'd him, the *Indians* casting their Darts; he gave a Target he had to the Trumpeter, and with a Cross-

bow kill'd three or four *Indians*, and then taking his Spear, fell in with the Enemy, till an *Indian* taking good Aim, pierc'd his Right Hand with a Dart, and he alighting to save his Spear, another Dart ran deep into his Back; however the *Spaniards* play'd their Parts so briskly that they gain'd the Top of the Hills, and the *Indians* flying were pursu'd, by which means those who were with the *Spaniards*, had a good Supper of the Prisoners they took. The Men were much concern'd to see *Robledo* wounded, for they lov'd him entirely, by Reason of his Affability and good Behaviour.

THE Customs of the *Indians* of *Paucura* and those of *Anzerma*, were almost the same, tho' their Languages were different. They us'd every *Tuesday* to Sacrifice two Men to a wooden Idol they had, as big as a lusty Man, facing to the East, and his Arms extended; Prisoners taken in War were shut up and well fed, and when fat, on their Festivals they were brought into the Market-Place, and there kill'd, making them kneel and hold down their Heads to have their Brains dash'd out with a Club, and they went to this Execution very merrily, without speaking a Word or suing for Mercy. On the one Side of the Province of *Pozo*, is the great River, and on the others the Provinces of *Carrapa*, *Picara*, and *Paucura*. Those People said they deduc'd their Original from the Province of *Arma*, and they resemble it in their Language and Customs: Their principal Lord was call'd *Pimaraque*; both Men and Women are large of Body, and their Countenances disagreeable; in their Houses they had great wooden Idols with Wax Faces, in such Shape as the Devil appear'd to them, and he gave them Answers by the Mouths of those Idols. The Graves were in their Houses, and when the Lords dy'd, they did put into them Meat, Women, Boys, Jewels, Arms, and all the best Things they had. They are good
Husband-

The HISTORY of *America*. 195

Husbandmen, and Brave, and when they went to War, were wont to carry Cords to bind the Prisoners. There are great Gold Mines in this Province, which extends to certain Mountains, whence good Rivers flow ; the Language is like that of *Paucura* ; the Soil yields much Corn and Fruit ; the Men went naked, only wearing little Cloths to hide their Privities, in all other Respects like those of *Pozo* ; had some Bows, but no poison'd Arrows, using Slings, and strewing sharp Thorns about the Roads to offend their Enemies. In the Province of *Carrapa* they had little low Houses ; The Country full of naked Hills ; the Men large and strong, long visag'd, as are the Women ; very rich in Gold, wearing Jewels, and using Gold Vessels to drink out of, wherein they were vicious, and little eaters, but excessive drinking was practis'd throughout the *West-Indies*. They had no Temples nor Places of Worship, tho' the Devil spoke to them ; their Graves and Burials like their Neighbours ; the prime Men marry'd their Nieces, some of them their Sisters and had many Wives ; they were Men-Eaters ; went to the Wars with many Ornaments of Gold, and Crowns on their Heads, carying large Colours ; knew there was but one God, but after a very confuse manner ; the Sick offer'd many Sacrifices for Recovery of their Health ; the Country abounds in Fruit, Venison, and much Variety of other Provisions, and very agreeable Roots.

THE *Spaniards* were so much incens'd at their Commander's being wounded, that they resolv'd to be severely reveng'd on the *Indians* of *Pozo*, and marching beyond the Ridge of the Hill, where the Engagement had been, the Colonel receiv'd Advice, that the *Indians* had fortify'd themselves on a Rock, with many Women and Children ; but as soon as the *Spaniards* approach'd, their Hearts fail'd them. The Confederate *Indians* encompass'd the Foot of the Rock,

whilst the *Spaniards* gain'd the Top, setting on their Dogs, which were so fierce that they tore out the very Bowels of those wretched People, who to shun that Danger, cast themselves headlong down those Craggs, dashing themselves to Pieces, and if they happen'd to escape that Peril, fell into a worse, being the Hands of their Enemies of *Picara* and *Carrapa*, who treated them inhumanly, killing Men, Women, and Children, and devouring them raw ; and returning to their Quarters with about two hundred Loads of human Flesh, sent great Presents of it into their own Countries. The News of this horrid Slaughter being spread about the Country, to avoid the continuance of that Calamity, they su'd for Peace, bringing Presents of Gold and other Things. The same being concluded, and *Robledo* somewhat better of his Wounds, he dismiss'd the *Indians* of *Picara* and *Carrapa*, and with those of *Pozo* proceeded to *Paucura*, where *Pincuma*, an Enemy to *Pozo*, was Lord, who hearing how they had far'd, submitted, and brought good Store of Provisions. A Soldier then complain'd that the *Pozo Indians* had stolen some Swine, and whether it was true, or that they had been lost, *Robledo* charg'd them with Breach of the Peace, and order'd *Suer de Nava*, with fifty *Spaniards* to chastise them for the Theft. The *Paucura Indians* rejoycing to see those Men march against *Pozo*, that no Opportunity of doing harm to their Enemies might slip, assembled to the Number of three thousand, and march'd with the *Spaniards*. As soon as enter'd the Province of *Pozo*, without ever examining into the Matter, they fell to plundering, burning, and destroying all before them, and the *Paucura Indians* carry'd off two hundred Men, cut into Quarters, to their own Country to feast on, that beastly Custom being so establish'd among them, that for the sake of eating one another, there was no Peace between Parents and their Children, or Brothers and Brothers. At last the Swine were

The HISTORY of America. 197

were found, and the Peace being again establish'd, which needed not to have been broke, *Suer de Nava* return'd to their Quarters.

THERE being no more to do in *Pancura*, upon Advice that there was near by, to the Westward, a large and wealthy Province, call'd *Arma*, the greatest in *Peru*, and where much Gold might be found, in case the Natives were subdu'd, *Robledo* mov'd that way. The Natives had been inform'd, that the *Spaniards* were brave, that they cou'd cleave a Man down at once with their Swords, that their Spears went clear through the Body, that their Shafts flew like Lightning from the Crossbows, and that their Horses were wonderful fleet; hereupon they held a Consultation about War or Peace, and offer'd Sacrifices. When the *Spaniards* drew near to a Mountain, they heard a great Noise of Drums and Horns, the *Indians* having sent away their Wives, Children, and Goods, and being come to that Place to oppose them, who immediately began to mount, the Enemy rowling down great Stones upon them; yet after all they fled, and in the Pursuit some were taken, who had stately Ornaments of Gold, Plumes of Feathers, Crowns, large Plates, and their Colours strew'd with Stars and other Figures of the finest Gold, and some of them were cover'd with Plates of it from Head to Foot, from which Time that Pass was call'd the Mountain of the Men in Armour. The Province appear'd there large, plain, and populous, the Fields sow'd with Mayz and *Tuca*, and large Groves of the Fruit-Trees call'd *Pizibaes*. Their Towns were seated on the Tops and Sides of Hills, the Houses round and spacious, fit to contain fifteen or twenty Inhabitants. Being farther advanc'd, the *Indians* guarded the Pass of another Mountain more difficult of Access for the Horses, *Robledo* sent several Times to offer them Peace, to which they answer'd, asking them why they went to rob what did not be-

long to them? Bidding them go home to their own Country, since they liv'd peaceably in theirs; at the same Time casting their Darts and Stones, with great Cries. The Sun beginning to grow hot, *Robledo* order'd his Foot to attack them with their Targets, Cross-bows, and Dogs, till the Horse searching all about, found a Place to go up, tho' with much Difficulty, whilst the Foot kept the *Indians* in play, who seeing the Horses fled, and in the Pursuit much Gold was taken, and that Place call'd *De los Cavallos*, or of the Horses. The Lords then, not thinking fit to run any farther Hazard, begg'd Pardon, bringing Presents of Gold in Net Baskets, the *Indians* at the same time giving the Soldiers extraordinary Pieces of Gold, and when they carry'd Water to their Horses, threw some of them into the Buckets, being well pleas'd to see them drink, and all the Gold was twenty one Carats fine. The Lord of *Maytama*, who was the greatest in the Province, being on the other Side of a Mountain, and not having made his Submission, the Commander sent thither the Commendary *Sofa*, with fifty Men, who coming at break of Day to the Top of the Mountain, found the *Indians* standing upon their Defence; but they soon fled. The next Day *Robledo* himself came and took up his Quarters in *Maytama's* House, which being known about the Province, all the Lords came in, bringing Plates, Crowns, Bracelets, Plumes of Feathers, and other Things of Value, hanging on Poles, carry'd on the Shoulders of Men by two and two. The Country being thus reduc'd, *Robledo* thought fit to settle a Colony there, and sent the Commendary *Sofa* down the River to seek a proper Place, and having found a large Town, he resolv'd to keep the Feast of *Easter* there, for which Reason it was call'd *El Pueblo de la Pasqua*, that is *Easter Town*, after which he discover'd the Towns *Blanco* and *Zemifara*, and the Province *De la Lanza*, then proceeded to another Town call'd

The HISTORY of America. 199

call'd *Pobres* which is opposite to *Buritaca*, from whence he return'd. In the mean Time all the Province of *Arma* had conspir'd to make War on the *Spaniards*, began to slacken in furnishing Provisions, and kill'd the Blacks and Confederate *ndians* they cou'd surprize abroad designing to attack the *Spanish* Quarters, but did not put it in Execution by reason of some Differences among themselves. *Robledo* then march'd out of the Province, leaving it as much at Enmity as when he first came in; and some *Indians* appearing on the Top of a Mountain, he call'd them, they came to him, he cut off the Hands of some, the Ears of others, and wounded others, and so held on his way through the Territories of *Pozo*, *Picara*, and *Carrapa* to that of *Quimbay*.

BEFORE we conclude with the Actions of *George de Robledo*, it is requisite to see what was doing in the Parts adjacent, till he and other *Spanish* Commanders came to meet. (So great was the Fame of the Wealth of the *New Kingdom of Granada*, that all Men desir'd to Trade there, and accordingly one *Peter Lopez*, a Merchant set out from *Popayan*, in Company with Captain *Offorio*, towards *Bogota*, suspecting no harm from the *Indians* who were then at Peace, and thus came into the Province of the *Yalcones*, bordering on that of *Paez*. Captain *Peter de Anasco*, was at the same Time set out from *Timana* for *Popayan*, and was come into the same Province, where the Natives revolting, kill'd him and all his Companions, excepting only two who made their Escape to *Timana*; the like they did to Captain *Offorio* and his Party, exercising the utmost Cruelties upon them all, and devouring their Bodies, and resolv'ing to defend themselves against any that should pretend to revenge their Quarrel, to which Purpose they made all the necessary Dispositions, cutting Trenches, and rendering the Ways almost impassable. This News being brought to *Popayan*, *John de Ampudia* march'd out with sixty Horse and Foot, to chastise those

those Barbarians. Thrice he engag'd and routed them, but they still coming on in greater Numbers, he was kill'd in the fourth Battel, and his Men oblig'd to steal away by Night to *Popayan*.)

THE Adelantado *Pascual de Andagoya*, having obtain'd a Commission from the King to subdue the Country about the River of *St. John*, on the South Sea, Landed his Forces in a Bay, whence he directed his Course to the City of *Cali*, through such Ways as kill'd all his Horses, and much harrafs'd the Men, and was readily receiv'd in that City, without considering that there is no River of *St. John* in all that Country. Being admitted there, he receiv'd Advice that *Robledo*, above spoken of, had made considerable Discoveries, and founded the City call'd *Santana de los Cavalleros*, in the Province of *Anzerma*, whereupon he sent *Michael Muñoz* to take Possession of it in his Name, and call it *St. John*. He also Possess'd himself of *Popayan*, and fearing that *Belalcazar*, who had built these Places would return, and call him to Account, he conniv'd at all the Crimes that were committed, to ingratiate himself with the Inhabitants, that they might assert his unjust Cause. (*Robledo* coming into the Province of *Quimbaya*, would have founded a Colony there, but his Men not liking it, as seeming to be nothing but Morasses full of Reeds, and praying he would Reward them with some better Country, he sent out to search the Woods, and other adjacent Parts, and the Lords there being luxurious and sloathful Persons, hoping that the Spaniards were only passing through) one of them call'd *Tacurunbi*, carry'd him a Gold Cup, weighing above seven hundred Pieces of Eight, with other smaller, but very valuable Pieces, and those that had been sent out to discover, returning, reported there were many good Towns, and the Country was rich and plentiful all the way to the great Vale of *Cali*. Other Lords came in from all Parts, with abundance of Gold,

The HISTORY of America. 201

all which that Commander took to himself. Upon this good Account of the Country, he founded a Town, and gave it the Name of *Cartago*, because all the Men that went with him upon the Discovery were of *Cartagena*, and call'd the *Carthaginians*. The Colony being establish'd, *Robledo* went away to *Anzerma* and *Cali*, to see *Pascual de Andagoya*, to prevent what he apprehended from *Belalcazar*, his Ambition prevailing on him to hope he might secure to himself the Dominion of what he had discover'd. At *Cali* he indiscreetly submitted himself to *Andagoya*, presenting him with four thousand Pieces of Eight he had receiv'd in his Progress, and *Andagoya* the more to secure him to his Interest, contriv'd to marry him to a Kinswoman of his Wife's; so that having establish'd his Affairs, he return'd to *Santana* and *Cartago*, where he reduc'd some Districts discover'd, and sent *Avaro de Mendoza* to see what was beyond the snowy Mountains, or the Ridge of the *Andes*, who from the Top thereof, saw Ways that led to the other Vale, or River of *Neyva*, when thinking it unadvisable to proceed any farther without Horses, he return'd, and *Robledo* distributed the Territory of *Cartago* among his Men.)

THIS Province of *Quimbaya* is fifteen Leagues in length, and ten in breadth, from *Rio Grande*, to the Mountains *Andes*, very populous, and not uncooth. No Part of the *Indies* produces so many thick Reeds, with which they build their Houses. On the Top of the great Mountain is a Mouth that Smoaks very much, and from it several Rivers run down that Water the Country, over which there are Bridges of Reeds or Canes, bound together with Withes, and they yield much Gold. The Men and Women are comly; there is Plenty of *Spanish* and Native Fruit; the Lords are very dainty, and had many Wives; did not use to eat Man's Flesh, unless upon some great Festival; they made Gold Ornaments in the Shape of all Things they saw, and well wrought

wrought ; their Weapons were Spears, Darts, and Slings ; they are very understanding, and some were notable Sorcerers. When they met at their Merriments, after having drank plentifully, a Party of Women drew up on one Side, and another on the other, and so the Men and Boys, and making a Noise, they assaulted one another casting Rods and Darts, and for this Sport, at which many were wounded and some kill'd, they made large Targets of their Hair, which they us'd in War. (In their Dances one led, singing to two little Drums, and all the rest answer'd, every one holding a Cup of Liquor, so that they danc'd, sung, and drank, at the same Time. In their Songs they repeated their present Difficulties, and the Actions of their Ancestors ; as for Religion they had none, but convers'd with the Devil, and said they saw frightful Apparitions ; the Cure of their Diseases was frequent Bathing.) They believ'd there was something Immortal in Man, tho' they knew nothing of a Soul, imagining it was a Transmutation, and that the Bodies were to come to life again, for which Reason their manner of interring was like the others before mention'd, expecting to be convey'd into very delightful Places. The Climate is very healthy ; where *Spaniards* live to a great Age, without any Distempers, or being troubled either with Heat or Cold.

C H A P. IV.

Francis Vazquez de Cornado *appointed Governour of New Galicia ; discoveries made by F. Mark de Niza, to the Northward of Culiacan, as far as Cibola.*

Núño de Guzman having been remov'd from the Government of *New Galicia*, as has been said before, *Francis Vazquez de Cornado* was put into his Place in the Year 1538, and in the Year 1539, finding the
Spanish

The HISTORY of *America*. 203

Spanish Colony of St. *Michael* in *Culiacan*, to be so much distress'd by a powerful *Cazique*, call'd *Ayapin*, that the Inhabitants were upon the Point of abandoning it, he march'd to their Assistance, and having drawn off many of the Natives from the Party of *Ayapin*, pursu'd, took, and hang'd him, whereupon all the *Indians* of those Parts came down from the Mountains, to enjoy the Plenty and Fertility of their Lands. The Vice-Roy of *Mexico*, being a Person of Piety, and great Friend to F. *Bartholomew de las Casas*, was by his Advice, for reducing the *Indians*, rather by the preaching of Religious Men, than by force of Arms, and to that Effect had sent several of them into *New Galicia* with the Governour *Cornado*, among whom was F. *Marc. de Niza*, of the Order of St. *Francis*, (whom he order'd, with a Companion and proper Guides, to penetrate from the Town of St. *Michael* in *Culican* into the Country. In order to it the Governour sent to the Towns of *Petatlan* and *Cuchillo*, sixty Leagues from *Culiacan*, six *Indians* of that Country, who had been kept among the Friers at *Mexico*, that they might learn *Spanish*, and be well affected to Christianity. Those Natives having inform'd their Countrymen, that there was no Design to make War on, or reduce them into Slavery, but only to convert them to the Christian Religion, return'd with above eighty Men, to whom the Governour gave the same Assurances, and desir'd they would take F. *Mark de Niza* with them to make the same Declaration to others that were farther off. The Frier accordingly set out with them, his Instructions from the Vice-Roy being to this Effect, That he should charge the *Spaniards* at *Culiacan* to use the *Indians* well; or else they shou'd be punish'd; that he should assure the *Indians* the King had been concern'd for the Wrongs

Wrongs done them, and would take Care for the future to prevent the like, and that none should be made Slaves, but that they in return must serve God, and be loyal to his Majesty ; that he should make all necessary Observations relating to the Country, and send Advice of all that he found, and particularly if he met with any large Town, fit to build a Monastery in, to give Notice, or come back himself, for Religious Men for the same, with many other Particulars of less Moment, and too tedious for this Place. He began his Journey on the 7th of *(March 1539)* with his Companion F. *Honoratus* and *Estevanico* the Black, who came out of *Florida* with *Cabeza de Vaca* and the others, as was said in its Place, besides the above-mention'd six *Indians* that spoke *Spanish*, the others they had brought with them, and those of *Petatlan*, to which Place they directed their Course, all of them very well pleas'd, meeting considerable Presents of Flowers and Provisions on the Way. Having travell'd the sixty Leagues to *Petatlan*, they rested three Days, and then F. *Mark*, leaving his Companion there sick, held on his Journey, abundance of People joyning him as he went on, but with little Provision, because there had been three Years of Scarcity, as they alledg'd. In thirty Leagues Journey from *Petatlan*, he met with nothing worth Observation, only that some *Indians* came to him from the Island the Marquess *Del Valle Cortes* had discover'd, who assur'd him that the same was an Island, which had been question'd before, for he saw them pass over to the Continent on Floats, the Distance of about half a League. Some other *Indians* of another larger Island farther on, came also to him, who inform'd him, that there were thirty more small Islands, inhabited by poor People, who had Mother of Pearl hanging about

The HISTORY of *America*. 205

bout their Necks, but show'd none. He held on his Way through a Desert, four Days Journey over, leaving behind many *Indians* of the Country and Islands, and then came upon others, who were surpriz'd, heaving heard nothing of the *Spaniards*, because they had no Communication with those that were left behind, by reason of the Desert. They gave the Father much Provision, touch'd his Habit, call'd him a Man come from Heaven, and by means of the Interpreters, he preach'd to them the Knowledge of the true God. These said, that four Days Journey up the Country, where the long Ridges of the Mountains ended, there was a flat spacious open Plain, where the People were cloath'd, had Vessels of Gold, he showing them some, and they had Ornaments of it hanging at their Ears and Noses. That Plain being at a Distance from the Coast, and his Orders being to keep along it, he left it till his return, and advanc'd four Days among those same People, till he came to a Town call'd *Vacapa*, which is forty Leagues from the Sea, where he was well entertain'd, and stay'd till *Easter*; sending People in the mean Time to the Sea three several Ways, one of them being *Estevanico*, from whom Messengers came four Days after, praying *F. Mark* to follow him, because he had receiv'd Information of a large Country call'd *Cibola*, thirty Days Journey from the Place where he then was, and this was affirm'd by one of the *Indians Estevanico* had sent.

THE *Indian* declar'd, that in the said Country there were seven great Cities subject to one Lord, the Houses of Stone, one or two Stories high, regularly built, the Doors adorn'd with Turkey Stones; and the Inhabitants all cloath'd. The Father did
not

206 *The HISTORY of America.*

not set out immediately, because he waited for the Messengers that were gone to the Sea, who return'd on *Easter-Day*, with the aforesaid Account of the Islands, being thirty four in Number, and with them came some of the Islanders, who presented the Father with large Bucklers made of Cows Hides, well dress'd, which cover'd a Man from Head to Foot, having Holes at the Place for the Hand to pass through. (This Day came three *Indians* of those call'd *Pintados*, their Arms and Breasts wrought, their Dwellings being to the Eastward, and extending almost to the seven Cities, of which they gave some Information.) Having dismiss'd the *Indians* that came from the Coast, *F. Mark* set out on *Easter-Monday*, with two of the *Indians* of the Islands that would bear him Company eight Days, and three *Pintados*, taking his Way towards *Estevanico*, and the third Day met other Messengers coming to hasten him, confirming the Relation sent before of those large and wealthy Regions of *Cibola*, which was the first of the seven Cities, and was told, that beyond the seven Cities there were three Kingdoms call'd *Marata*, *Acus*, and *Tontecu*, where the People had Turkey Stones hanging at their Ears and Noses. (These *Indians* receiv'd *F. Mark* very kindly, presenting him Store of Provisions, and bringing their Sick to him to be cur'd, over whom he read the Gospels. They gave him Skins brought from *Cibola*, very well dress'd. In other Places, the *Pintados* still following him, he was well receiv'd, and had the same Account of *Cibola*, and he found a great Cross *Estevanico* had erected, as a Token that the News of the good Country held, and those People said he had left Word, that he would stay at the Entrance upon the first Desert. (Here he took Possession, and went about five

— though he proposed to travel merely to preach —

The HISTORY of America. 207

five Days, finding People and good Entertainment every where, many Turkey Stones and Cows Hides, and was inform'd, that in two Days, he would come to a Desert that was four Days Journey over, without any Food, for which they had provided, as also for Shelter. Before he came to the Desert, he met with a pleasant Town, where they water'd their Fields with Trenches, and abundance of Men and Women came out to meet him, cloath'd in Cotton and Cows Hides, which they look upon as the better Habit. With them came the Lord of the Town and two of his Brothers, very well cloath'd in Cotton, with Collars of Turkey Stones, and presented him with Cups, *Indian Corn*, Turkey Stones and several other Things, of all which the Father never receiv'd any. They touch'd his Habit and told him, there was much of that sort in *Tonteac*, and that it was made of the Hair of certain small Creatures, about the bigness of some *Spanish Greyhound Estevanico* had with him.

THE next Day *F. Mark* enter'd upon the Desert, and in four Days found Provisions and Cottages to lie in, and then came into a populous Vale, where all the Inhabitants of the first Town came out to meet him, clad like those before mention'd, with Necklaces of Turkey Stones, and some of them in their Ears and Noses; and there the Father heard as much talk of *Cibola*, as there in *New Spain* of *Mexico*, many of the People having been there. Here he had also an Account of the Wollen Cloth of *Tonteac*, and because the Sea Coast ran far to the Northward, he thought fit to see it, and found that in the Latitude of thirty six Degrees it turns off to the Westward. Then holding on his Way, he travell'd five Days
through

208 *The HISTORY of America.*

through the great Vale, well inhabited by fightly People, plentiful and agreeable, all water'd, and those People went to *Cibola* to earn their living.) Here he met with a Native of that City, who fled from the Governour plac'd in it by the Lord of the seven Cities, whose Residence was in that they call'd *Abacus*. He was a Man of good Sense, would go with *F. Mark*, that he might obtain his Pardon for him, and gave a Description of the City, saying the others were like it; that *Abacus* was the Capital, and that the Kingdom of *Matará* lay to the Westward, where there had been great Towns with Houses of Lime and Stone, as at *Cibola*, but was much decay'd, by reason of the War with the Lord of the seven Cities; that the Kingdom of *Tonteac* was very rich and populous, the Inhabitants wearing Cloth, and very polite; and that there was another very great Kingdom, call'd *Acus*; but that *Abacus* was one of the seven Cities. In this Vale they brought the Father an Hide, above as big again as a Cow's, and said it was of a Beast that had only one Horn in the Forehead, bowing down towards its Breast, and that from it came a strait Point, in which that Creature had much Strength; the Colour of it was like a Goat, and the Hair as long as a Man's Finger. Here he receiv'd Advice from *Estevanico*, who sent him Word, that ever since he had travell'd apart, he had never found the *Indians* in a lie, for which reason Credit might be given to them as to what they said of the fine Countries there were; (and the Father himself affirm'd, that having Travell'd an hundred and twenty Leagues from the Place where he had the first Notice of *Cibola*, he had always found every thing exactly true that they told him.)

The HISTORY of America. 209

THE Natives of the Vale intreated F. Mark to stay with them three Days, because from the entring upon the Desert to *Cibola*, there was full fifteen Day's Journey, and since above three hundred Men went with *Estevanico*, carrying Provisions for the Desert, they also would go to wait upon him, hoping they should return very rich. He stay'd the three Days, and setting out, enter'd upon the Desert on the 9th of May 1539. The first Day they found a very broad Road, and the Tokens of the Fires Travellers that went to *Cibola* were wont to make, and thus advanc'd twelve Days, always well furnish'd with Provisions, and Game, as Hares, and Partridges, like those in *Spain* for Colour and Savour, but smaller, and there an *Indian* of *Estevanico's* Company came to F. Mark very melancholy, and tir'd, and said, that one Day's Journey short of *Cibola*, *Estevanico* had sent before his Gourd, or Calabash by Messengers, to give Notice that he was coming. About that Gourd were some Rows of Hawks-bells, and on it two Feathers, one White, and one Red; and that having deliver'd the Gourd to the Governour of *Cibola*, he seeing the Hawks-bells about it, threw it on the Ground in a great Passion, telling the Messengers, that he knew those People, and bid them be gone, and not come to *Cibola*, for he would kill them all; that *Estevanico* telling his Companions, that signify'd nothing, for he had found the best Reception where they said so, held on his Way, and came to *Cibola*, where he was not admitted, but put into a great House, and all he had, Goods to Exchange, Turkey Stones, and other Things given him by the Way, taken from him, all of them being kept up a Day and a Night without any thing to eat; that he who gave this Relation being compell'd to it by Thirst, went out to drink at a River near by, where he saw *Estevanico* running away, and some of his Companions kill'd, whereupon this *Indian* hid himself, and made his Escape up the River. This

210 The HISTORY of America.

Account made many of those that were with the Father weep, and he comforting them, saying, that ought not to be credited, they affirm'd, that the *Indian* did not lye, whereupon he went aside, to pray to God to direct him, how to proceed as might be most for his divine Service. Then returning to the *Indians*, he open'd the *Petacas*, or Baskets in which were the Commodities for bartering, which he distributed among the Prime Men, encouraging them to follow him. One Day's Journey from *Cibola*, they met two more of the *Indians* that had been with *Estevanico*, very bloody, and wounded, upon Sight of whom there was a sorrowful Lamentation among them. When the Father, who could not forbear weeping, had pacify'd them, he order'd those two to relate what had hapned, who said, That above three hundred of their Parents, Children, and Brothers had been kill'd, and there was no going to *Cibola*, and agreed in all the other *Indian* had said, adding, that the next Morning *Estevanico* went out of the House, with some Prime Men, when many from the City fell upon them, and they flying tumbled one over another, being above three hundred, besides Women, when they themselves were shot with Arrows, and wounded, as appear'd, whereupon they lay down among the Dead till Night, when they fled, and in the Day saw Abundance of People looking at what was done, from the Tops of the Houses in the City; and that they had not seen *Estevanico* any more, but believ'd he had been shot as well as the rest.

F. *Mark* was much surpriz'd at this News, not knowing what Course to take, but said *Cibola* would not escape unpunish'd.) The *Indians* answer'd, that there were none able to do it, because the Nation was very powerful, and thus they continu'd their Weeping and Wailing, The Father went aside to pray, and returning about an Hour after, found a *Mexican Indian*, whose Name was *Mark*, weeping, who said to him, Father, these

these People have agreed to kill you, because you and *Estevanico* have been the Occasion of the Death of their Relations, and will bring them to Destruction. F. *Mark* distributing what remain'd of the Goods brought to trade, told them, That it would be no Advantage to them to kill him; but he should be a great Gainer by it, for that dying in the Service of God he should go to Heaven, and as soon as the *Spaniards* could receive the Advice they would make War upon them. With these and other Arguments he appeas'd them, but their Lamentations did not cease; however he pray'd some one of them to go see what was become of *Estevanico*, which none would; (yet, he declar'd, he would not return, without having a Sight of *Cibola*, and only two of the Chiefs agreed to go with him. With them, his own *Indians*, and the Interpreters he went on till he came in Sight of that City, which he said was seated in a Plain, near the Side of a round Hill, affording the best Prospect of any Town in all those Parts, the Houses of Stone, having upper Floors, and flat Roofs, as appear'd to him from an Hill, whence he took his View, and that it was larger than *Mexico*; affirming, that he had a great Mind to have enter'd the City, but that he alter'd his Resolution, considering, that if he should happen to be kill'd, there would be no Body to bring back an Account of that Country, which he look'd upon to be better than any as yet discover'd.)

F. *Mark* having made all the Observations he thought necessary, with the Assistance of the *Indians*, laid together an Heap of Stones in that Place, and erected a Cross on it, taking Possession for the King of *Spain* of the seven Cities, and the Kingdoms of *Totonac*, *Acus*, and *Marata*, and so return'd to those he had left behind. Being past the Desert, and come again into the Vale, there was a mighty Lamentation for those that had been kill'd, he took his Leave, and travelling ten

212 *The HISTORY of America.*

Leagues a Day, to pass over the second Desert, reach'd the *Abra*, or Opening, where it was said before the Mountains terminated, and was there told, that the said Opening extended many Days Journey to the Eastward. He would not go into it, for fear of Danger, but from the Mouth of it saw seven handsome Towns, in a pleasant Vale, the Soil very good, and much Smoak rising from them, the *Indians* telling him there was much Gold among those People. There he erected two Crosses, took Possession, and then held on his Journey, till he arriv'd at St. *Michael* of *Culiacan*, hoping to have found the Governour *Francis Vasquez de Cornado* there; but not finding him, proceeded to the City of *Compostela*, and thence sent Advice to the Viceroy, and to his own Provincial of what he had discover'd. The Fame of *F. Mark's* Relation, tho' not believ'd by all Men as to the Magnificence, and Wealth of those Countries, excited the Viceroy to undertake that Conquest. The Marquess *del Valle Cortes* was for undertaking the same, alledging, that it belong'd to him, as Captain-General, and pursuant to what he had contracted with the King, besides that he had been at great Expence in building seven or eight Ships to carry on Discoveries by Sea. The Adelantado *Don Peter de Alvarado* also claim'd the same, saying, it was his Right in Virtue of his Agreement with the King, and that he was fitting out a Fleet, with a considerable Number of Men. The Marquess and the Viceroy were at Variance upon this Account, and the Marquess sent out three Ships to discover, under the Command of Capt. *Ulloa*, as shall be said hereafter, and came away himself into *Spain*. The Viceroy apply'd himself to gathering of Money, to raise Forces against the next Year with other Ships under the Command of Capt. *Alarcon*, sending at the same Time for *Alvarado*, to adjust that Affair with him. We must now leave those Expeditions till their proper Time, to see what was doing in other Parts.

C H A P.

C H A P. V.

The Colony of Comayagua in the Province of Honduras founded; Agreement between Alvarado and Montejo; Provision for Defence of the Indians; Affairs in the Province of Popayan, and the New Kingdom of Granada.

IT is Time to see what was doing in the Province of *Honduras*, where the Adelantado *Don Francis de Montejo*, having put an End to the War of *Cerquin*, before spoken of, thought it requisite to build a Town between the two Seas, the Country there being most populous, and ought to be kept in Subjection. Accordingly, he sent Capt. *Alonso de Caceres*, who founded it twenty-six Leagues from the North, and the same distance from the South-Sea, where there is a River that runs twelve Leagues from Port *Cavallos*, and is Navigable for Canoes, as far as an *Indian* Town, from which to the Place call'd the Town of *St. Mary of Comayagua* is twelve Leagues more, the Way fit for Carts. Capt. *Caceres* and the Inhabitants signify'd to the King, that this would be a very commodious Place for the Trade between the two Seas, alledging, that fewer People would dye, and there would not be so many Diseases, and Difficulties as in the Passage between *Nombre de Dios* and *Panama*, showing that the Country was healthy, plentiful, and agreeable for the entertaining of the many People that were to pass that Way, and affirming, that the Navigation from the Place to be pitch'd upon on the South-Sea to the Port of *Lima* was better than from the City of *Panama*. They

214 The HISTORY of *America*.

said the Country was rich in Gold Mines, and produc'd *Spanish* Wheat, Vines, and other Fruit, besides Abundance of Cattle, the Climate being temperate, and well water'd, and the Town seated in a delightful Vale, almost four Leagues in Length. Whilst the Adelantado *Montejo* was intent upon these Projects, *Don Peter de Alvarado* arriv'd at Port *Cavallos*, with a Fleet from *Spain*, and proceeded with his Wife, a good Number of Men, and Store of Provisions and Ammunitions, having made a new Contract with the King about undertaking Discoveries, to the Town of *St. Peter*. *Montejo* hereupon consulted with his Friends how to behave himself, and *Alvarado* taking no Notice of him, tho' he had been landed a Month, they advis'd to send him a Compliment, and in a courteous manner enquire into his Intentions; because there was no other way of proceeding since he was so strong. *Alvarado* answer'd, that having been inform'd of his coming into that Province, which he had conquer'd, and taken away his Lands, and those given to the Conquerors, the King had order'd them to be restor'd, which Orders he would cause to be notify'd to him. *Montejo* did not like this Answer, because the King's Orders, and the Power to back them were not to be withstood. The Bishop of *Honduras* Elect, to prevent Mischief went away to *Alvarado*, who shew'd him a Commission he had from the King directed to the said Elect, for restoring him, and all that had been dispossest'd of their Lands by *Montejo* to the same, and all the Profits that had occur'd since their being so dispossest'd. The Elect hereupon intreated him to endeavour to adjust that Difference amicably without coming to an open Rupture, which *Alvarado*, who was of a generous Disposition, consented to, and the same being approv'd by *Montejo*, he came to wait upon him, and his Lady *Doña Beatrix de la Cueva*. *Montejo* seeing the King's Commission, and
Alvarado's

The HISTORY of *America*. 215

Alvarado's Power, consented to quit *Honduras* to him, only desiring he would give him the Government of *Chiapa*, belonging to *Guatemala*, and the Town of *Suchimilco*, which was granted him, and the Bishop having rated the Profits of the Lands he had receiv'd since his taking Possession thereof at twenty-eight thousand Ducats, *Alvarado* immediately remitted him the one Half, and was two Months after easily prevail'd upon to forgive him the other Half. This Accommodation was afterwards confirm'd in *Spain*, and from that Time forward the Province of *Honduras* was peaceable under the Government of *Alvarado*, whereas before it had always been full of Broils, and under Oppression, through the Wickedness of the Governours.

AFFAIRS being thus adjusted, *Alvarado* proceeded to the Province of *Guatemala*, where, upon his Arrival, there began to be a noise of Arms for subduing the Coast of *New-Spain*, which very much troubled the Bishops, and Religious Men of the Order of *St. Dominick*, who had done Wonders by their Preaching in those Parts, without the Assistance of any Military Power; whereupon *F. Casas* and *F. Roderick de Andrada* were sent into *Spain* to desire more Religious Men might be sent over, and other Things advantageous to the *Indians*, in order to carry on their Conversion more successively. Those two Fathers, tho' the King was not then in *Spain*, were much favour'd by the Council, and on their Account the new Laws were afterwards establish'd, which will be spoken of in their Place, and the Viceroy of *Mexico* was reminded of some Instructions before given him, tending to the Honour of God, and the Ease of the Natives, as first, that all *Spaniards* who had *Indians* in *Commendam* should be oblig'd to marry, for obviating of some Sins that were discernable; that an University should be establish'd in the City of *Mexico*,

216 *The HISTORY of America.*

for the Improvement of all People, and to save continual sending so many from *Spain*, which has succeeded so well, that it is now inferiour to none in *Europe*; that the Proclamation for regulating Exorbitance in Apparel should be suspended, &c.

THIS same Year 1539, two Ships sail'd from *Cadiz*, under the Command of Captain *Alonso de Cabrera*, who arriving safe at *Buenos Ayres*, produc'd the King's Commission for the Commanders and Soldiers to choose a Governour, in Case none had been appointed by the former Governour Don *Peter Mendoza*, and it appearing that *Francis Ruyz Galan* had been appointed to Command at *Buenos Ayres* till *John de Ayolas* should return from the Expedition he was gone upon, Captain *Cabrera* aspiring to that Post, occasion'd a Controversy with the said *Galan*, which was compos'd by appointing them both to govern. At this time a Ship that had design'd to pass through the Streights of *Magellan* for *Peru*, having been forc'd back came into *Buenos Ayres*, which put those two Governours into a better Condition to sail up to the Town of the *Assumption*, as they had before intended. The *Franciscan* Friars, who went over in those Ships to serve God, took their Way up into the Country, and beginning to preach, with the Assistance of able Interpreters, till they could learn the Language themselves, found a considerable Harvest, converting and baptizing those People. The two Governours *Cabrera* and *Galan* coming to the *Assumption*, found, that when *Ayolas* went out upon his Discovery, he had substituted *Dominick de Irala* in his Stead, whereupon *Galan* by the Contrivance of *Cabrera*, who would have been join'd with *Irala*, was remov'd from the Government; but *Cabrera* not being admitted himself, prevail'd so far as to be sent out with nine Vessels and four hundred Men in Quest of *John de Ayolas*. Being come to the Place where *Ayolas* had left *Irala*, and hearing no Tidings of him,

him, it was resolv'd to proceed with a Part of their own Vessels, and some *Indian* Canoes to the Country of the *Payagoaes*, where after six Days, they took a Canoe with six *Indians* in it, for understanding of whom they had no Interpreter; however by Signs, and in the best manner it could be done, they came to understand, that the *Spaniards*, and the *Indians* who went with them, were up the Country, in a strong House they had built, digging Gold and Silver. Hereupon it was resolv'd, that two hundred and ten Men, with some light Guns, taking those *Indians* for their Guides, should go find out that strong House. The first Day, the Way prov'd good, and the next grew bad, and several Days they found no dry Land to rest on, but Water up to their Middles, and sometimes deeper; whereupon they return'd to their Vessels, much fatigu'd and harass'd, having spent a Month on that fruitless and toilsome Expedition. That vast Quantity of Water those *Spaniards* met with, was the Inundation of the great River of *Plate*, otherwise call'd *Paraguay*, which has the second Place among the greatest in the World, coming down from the Mountains of *Pernu*, and falling into the *North-Sea*, in thirty-five Degrees South Latitude, for like the *Nile* in *Egypt*, though much farther in Extent, it overflows all the Country about for the Space of three Mouths, and then returns to its Channel, which put a Stop to the Progress of those *Spaniards*. Two Days after their return to the Brigantines, when they were upon their return to the *Assumption*, came an *Indian*, who had made his Escape from some Canoes of the *Payagoaes*, and said, he was a Native of the upper Country, of a Nation call'd *Chanes*, and that *John de Ayolas* being come into his Country, where he was receiv'd in peaceable manner, said, he was going farther to know where the *Chemencos* and *Carcaraes* had their Gold and Silver,

218 *The HISTORY of America.*

Silver, they using much of those Metals, and that finding them in a warlike Posture, he observ'd their Wealth, and return'd to the *Chanes*, saying, he retir'd in order to come again with a greater Power; that the Chief of the *Chanes* gave him much Gold, and Silver, with *Indians* to carry his Baggage and Provisions, of which Number he was one, and having pass'd through Deserts, because they wanted Arms, they came, very much fatigu'd, to the Port, where they had left their Brigantines with *Dominick de Irala*, where having stay'd seven or eight Days, some Friends of the *Payagoaes* went to see him, carrying Presents of Fish and Venison, inviting him to go to their Houses, which he consenting to, because the Brigantines were not there, and confiding in the *Payagoaes*, they on the Way kill'd him and all his *Indians* in a Morass, through Coverousness of his Gold and Silver. This was a great Affliction to those *Spaniards*, who could not at that time attempt to revenge that Massacre, and recover the Treasure, by reason of the great Inundation, being themselves at that time in a poor Condition, and five hundred Leagues from the Sea; whereupon they return'd to the *Assumption*, and soon after to *Buenos Ayres*, which Place they entirely abandon'd, and carry'd all away to the *Assumption*, thinking it most adviseable that they should be all together, in order to make their Excursions into the Country.

Belalcazar, who, as was said in its Place, had made the great Discoveries in the Province of *Popayan*, and then went into *Spain* to procure a Commission from the King, succeeded well there in his Negotiation. His Majesty, in Consideration of his good Service, and to put a Stop to the unbounded Ambition of the *Pizarro's*, giving him the Government of all *Popayan*, *Gnacallo*, and *Neyba*, as far as the Frontiers of *St. Francis de Quito*, with all the adjacent Parts, by the Name
of

of the Provinces of *Popayan*, because he had discover'd them, and with it the Title of *Adelantado*, or Lord Lieutenant, and all other Prerogatives usually granted to other Governours and Discoverers in those Parts, so that he was independent of all but the King, and the Court of *Panama*, and had Orders, that *Gonzalo Pizarro* should not intrude into that Province, notwithstanding any Authority given him by the Marquess his Brother, and the Court of *Panama* was directed to expel *Pasqual de Andagoya*, if he had enter'd the same, under Colour of the River of St. *John*. *Belalcazar* losing no time, soon came to *Panama*, where embarking again, he landed in the Port of *Buenaventura*, and proceeded thence to *Cali*, at which Place they had before receiv'd Advice of his coming. *Andagoya* was thereupon making Preparations to oppose him, but his Title being precarious, and Men generally fond of Novelties, they wish'd for his coming, sending Letters to meet him, with Promises of their Assistance, whereupon *Andagoya* secur'd some Persons he suspected, and sent others to oppose him at the narrow Pass on the Mountains. However he arriv'd safe at *Cali*, and the two Parties having recourse to Arms, were upon the Point of engaging, till some Religious Persons interposing, it was agreed, that *Belalcazar* should produce his Commission before the Magistrates, and if they thought fit to admit him, the Government should be put into his Hands, or else *Andagoya* to remain in Possession, and though many of the Soldiers at *Cali* were gone over to *Belalcazar*, he wisely concluded it best to stand to this Accommodation, that being the Way to be put into Authority without Force of Arms. The Magistrates having seen *Belalcazar's* Commission, own'd him, excluding *Andagoya*, whom he presently secur'd, and sent to *Popayan*, as an Intruder into another's Right, ordering all Things

220 The HISTORY of America.

Things to his own Mind ; and then appointed *Peter de Ayala* to repair to *George de Robledo*, to require him to own his Authority, and order that the Town of St. *Anne* of *Anzerma* should not be call'd St. *John*, as *Andagoya* had nam'd it. *Robledo* went away from *Cartago* to *Anzerma*, whence he writ to *Belalcazar*, as his Superior, intreating him not to give Credit to his Enemies, for he was very ready to serve him, and then went away again with one hundred Men to proceed on his Discoveries, to distribute Lands to those who had serv'd, and had none, and having cross'd *Rio Grande* at the Town of *Tira*, the Report presently flew about, that he was revolted, which was occasion'd by his aspiring to be Commander in Chief.

WHILST these Things hapned in the Court of Spain, and at *Popayan*, *Ferom Lebron*, who was Governour at *Santa Marta*, pretending that the *New Kingdom of Granada* appertain'd to his Jurisdiction, march'd thither with Forces, the same Way that *Quesada* had gone before, and having lost many Men on that difficult Way, some of those that went with him gave so ill an Account of his Behaviour to the People there, that the greater Number resolv'd not to admit of him for their Governour. However being come to *Belez*, with two hundred Foot, and above one hundred Horse, he shew'd his Commission, and was receiv'd by the Magistrates. Captain *Ferdinand Perez*, who govern'd that Kingdom before, understanding that *Lebron* was come into it, sent for Captain *Cardoso*, who was then two Leagues from *Santa Fe de Bogata*, and fearing lest he on Account of his Friendship with *Lebron* might occasion some Disturbance, left him at *Santa Fe*, with some Men, and with the rest of the Forces proceeded himself to the City of *Tunja* ; whence he sent two Captains to discourse *Lebron*, who advis'd him to retire, because he would not be admitted to govern there,
till

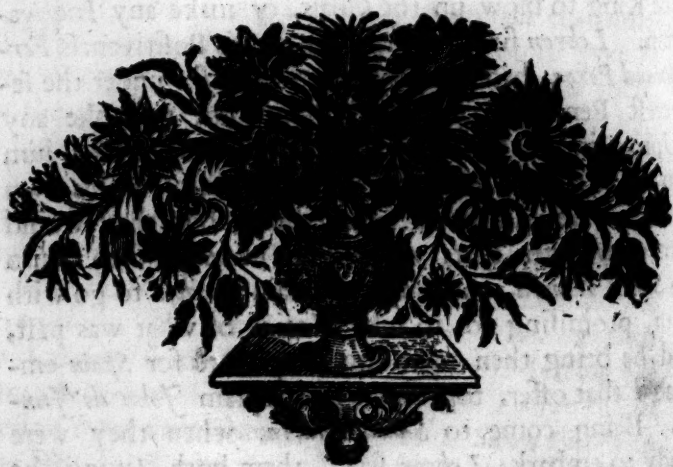
The HISTORY of *America*. 221

till such time as the King had signified his Pleasure, as had been agreed among the three Conquerors; but *Lebron* still advancing with his Forces, and being come near to *Tunja*, without receding from his Design, both Parties came in Sight of each other, and were upon the Point of coming to Blows; but some Religious Men and Commanders interposing, and representing how prejudicial such a Breach would be to the King's Service, a Treaty was set on Foot, and *Lebron* produc'd his Commission before the Magistrates of *Tunja*, upon Condition, that if they admitted him as Governour, he should remain in that Quality; but they refusing, he enter'd his Protestations, and began to form a Process against those that refus'd to submit to him. They all went together to *Santa Fee*, where he also produc'd his Commission, and was again rejected, and though he appeal'd, they still persisted, alleging, that the Country was very unsettled, and therefore it was prejudicial to the Service of God, and the King to blow up the Coals, or make any Innovation. *Lebron* finding that after all his Positiveness *Ferdinand Perez*, had enjoin'd him to desist, under the severest Penalties, commanding him not to make any Uproar in the Country, desir'd they would let him go on to make Discoveries, with as many of his own Men as are willing to follow him; but they would not grant even that, whereupon he resolv'd to return to *Santa Marta*, and pray'd Captain *Cardoso* to go with him, promising not to take Notice of what was past, and he being then upon his Departure for *Spain* embrac'd that offer, together with Captain *John de Funco*. Being come to *Santa Marta*, when they were ready to embark, *Lebron* seiz'd them both, saying, he would not obstruct their Voyage, but that they should be carry'd over as Prisoners, because he had condemn'd them all in the *New Kingdom of Granada* to Death,
and

222 *The HISTORY of America.*

and Forfeiture of their Estates, as Traytors ; however, after much contending, he consented that they should upon their Parole of Honour, appear before the King and his Council ; such was the Arrogancy of those Governours, that they concluded all Things just, which were agreeable to their Norions.

The End of the Fifth Book.



THE



T H E
General HISTORY
Of the vast CONTINENT and ISLANDS of
A M E R I C A, &c.

D E C A D IV. B O O K VI.

C H A P. I.

*Ferdinand de Soto contracts with the King
for the Conquest of Florida; his Arrival
and Actions there.*



FERDINAND de Soto, born at Villanueva de Barcarota, a Commander of Renown in the West-Indies, who having serv'd in Castilla del Oro, and Nicaragua, was one of the first that went upon the Conquest of Peru, and being a Man of Worth, and Valour, was by Francis Pizarro appointed his Lieutenant-General, and the first Spaniard that saw the

224 *The HISTORY of America.*

the mighty Prince *Atahualpa Inga*, Sovereign of so many Kingdoms and Provinces, observing the Discord that began to appear between the *Almagros* and *Pizarro's*, resolv'd to go away into *Spain*, not so rich as his Service and good Qualities deserv'd, considering the immense Wealth then found in *Peru*. This Gentleman aspiring to undertake great Actions, suitable to his lofty Genius, begg'd of the King the Conquest of *Florida*, which was readily granted him upon his own Terms, because he was a Person of Experience, of a good Presence, and Mien, and for his Age and strong Constitution, fitted to endure Hardships. Since the Time that *Panfilo de Narvaez* had been ruin'd in that Country, till then no one had offer'd to go upon that Enterprize, looking upon it as very dangerous and chargeable. Among other Things granted to *Soto* was the Government of the Island of *Cuba*, because it was to be the Place of Arms for carrying on that Conquest. The Design being made publick, near one thousand Men were soon rais'd, the Reputation of the Commander, and the Hopes of gaining much Wealth being a great Encouragement, and among them were many Gentlemen of Birth. Ten Ships being fitted out to carry those Men, with all necessary Stores, they sail'd from *San Lucar* on the 6th of *April* 1538, in Company with the Fleet for *New Spain*, all under the Command of the Adelantado *Ferdinand de Soto*, as far as he was to go, that is to the Island of *Cuba*, the Factor *Gonzalo de Salazar*, being appointed to command the *New Spain* Fleet afterwards, who to show his turbulent Temper every where, the first Night they were at Sea, went away a Cannon-Shot a-Head of all the Fleet, to plague the Admiral, for which Reason a Cannon being fir'd at him, the Ball went through all his Sails, from the Poop to the Head, and the second tore all the Side of the Ship above the Deck. Then the Admiral pushing forward, *Salazar's*

Ship

Ship being ungovernable for want of her Sails, they ran foul of one another, and were both in Danger of being cast away, in the dark, had not the Admiral cut all the Rigging of the other which was foul of his, and so got clear. *Soto*, understanding that what *Salazar* had done proceeded from Pride, would have cut off his Head, but upon his Submission, and many Intreaties, he forgave him.

THIS Fleet arriv'd safe at *Santiago* in the Island of *Cuba*, where not long before, a *Spanish* Ship commanded by *James Perez* had fought the whole Day with a *French* Privateer; parting very courteously at Night, and returning furiously to the Engagement in the Morning, they continu'd it four Days, till at length the *French* Man slipp'd away in the Night. *Soto* as soon as arriv'd in *Cuba* sent Orders for repairing the *Havana*, which had been burnt by *French* Privateers, and built the first Fort in that Place. Having sent to discover the Ports along the Coast of *Florida*, and appointed his Lady Governess of *Cuba*, he put aboard three hundred and thirty Horses, and nine hundred Men, besides the Sailors, and sailed from the *Havana* on the 12th of *May* 1539. The last Day of the same Month he came to an Anchor in the Bay of *Espiritu Santo*, or the Holy Ghost, and landed three hundred Men, who lay there that Night, without seeing one Native, but about break of Day, an infinite number of those People attack'd, and oblig'd them to retire to the Sea. *Basco Porcallo de Figueroa* went to their Relief with a Party, for the *Indians* press'd hard with their Flights of Arrows on the *Spaniards*, who being new rais'd Soldiers, were not come to their Fighting, but upon *Porcallo's* appearing, the *Indians* were forc'd to retire, having first kill'd that Commander's Horse with an Arrow, that pierc'd thro' the Covering of the Saddle, and penetrated a Span deep into the Body. All the Forces landed, and march'd

226 *The History of America.*

two Leagues to a Town belonging to the Cazique *Harribiagua*, who was fled to the Mountains, fearing to be call'd to Account for the Cruelty he had exercis'd on some *Spaniards* that came thither with *Pamphilo de Narvaez*, of which number none had escap'd but one *John Ortiz*, by the Assistance of that Cazique's Wife, who abhorr'd his Cruelty, he fled to the Cazique *Mucozo*, who protected, and us'd him well. The Adelantado understanding where that Man was, sent a Gentleman call'd *Baltasar de Gallegos* with sixty Horsemen to bring him, because he wanted him for an Interpreter, and this was at the time that the Cazique was sending *Ortiz* with fifty *Indians* to offer Peace. Those *Indians* were stark naked, having only Clouts, and great Plumes of Feathers, their Bows in their Hands, and their Quivers full of Arrows. As soon as they saw the Horsemen, they were for running into the Wood, apprehending they should be attack'd; but *Ortiz* would not take the good Advice of those People, and his raw *Spaniards* were impatient to run full speed upon them, in despite of their Commander. All the *Indians* got into the Wood, none but *Ortiz* remaining on the Plain, whom *Alvaro Nieto* assaulted with his Spear; and he giving a Leap backward spoke the *Indian* Language, having forgot his own, but remember'd to make the Sign of the Cross, and *Nieto* ask'd him, whether he was *John Ortiz*? He said, he was; and the other took him up behind him on his Horse, and carry'd him to his Captain, who was drawing together his Men that were dispers'd after the *Indians*. Some never stopp'd till they came to the Town, the rest were appeas'd, but when they saw one of their Company wounded, they exclaim'd bitterly against *Ortiz*, because that had hapned through his Inadvertency.

THE Adelantado was much pleas'd that he had got *Ortiz*, whom he caress'd, as also the *Indians* that went with

with him, order'd him that was wounded to be dress'd, and sent to thank the Cazique *Mucozo*, for his good Usage of that Man, offering him his Friendship. *Ortiz* could give very little Account of the Country, because under his first Master his whole Business had been carrying Wood, and Water, and he never would be out of the others Sight, for fear of giving a Suspicion that he would run away, when his Usage was good; but said, he had been told, that the Country farther in was good, and fruitful. *Mucozo* then went to visit the Adelantado, who entertain'd, and gave him some *Spanish* Baubles, thanking him for his Friendship. That Cazique's Mother came next, weeping, demanding her Son, and begging that they would not kill him, the Adelantado endeavouring to pacify her; and though she did eat, it was with much Precaution, asking *Ortiz*, whether she might eat with Safety, fearing there might be Poison, and yet would not eat unless *Ortiz* tasted first. *Mucozo* staying a Week among the *Spaniards* diverting himself, and enquiring about the Affairs of *Spain*, the Adelantado endeavour'd to learn some Particulars of that Country, the Forces continuing in the Cazique *Harrihiagua*'s Town, because it was nearest to the Bay of the *Holy Ghost*. During that time he dismiss'd the Ships, that his Men might have no Hopes of getting out of that Country, as many antient and modern Commanders had done before, and among them *Cortes* in *New Spain*; ordering, that only Four should stay, to serve upon Occasion. He discreetly labour'd to gain the Friendship of the Cazique *Harrihiagua*, taking Care that no Mischief should be done in his Country, not thinking it proper to offend him that was the first in his Way, lest it should prove of ill Consequence, but nothing would prevail with him. Some Men went out every Day under a strong Guard to bring Forage for the Horses, and on a sudden a Multitude of *Indians* fell upon them, with

228 The HISTORY of *America*.

such hideous Cries as scar'd them, and before they could come to themselves, those People laid hold of a Soldier, whose Name was *Grajal*, and carry'd him off very well pleas'd without doing any other Harm. More *Spaniards* coming out upon the Alarm, twenty Horsemen pursu'd them two Leagues by the Track, till they came to a Piece of Ground that was all overgrown with Reeds, where the *Indians* were eating, drinking, and singing very merrily, without any Fear, or Concern, having their Wives with them, and bid *Grajal* eat, for they would not use him ill as they had done *Ortiz*. Upon hearing the Noise of the Horses the Men fled, leaving the Women and Children with *Grajal*, he having been stripp'd, came out stark naked to meet the *Spaniards*, who return'd well pleas'd with their Booty, to the Quarters, and the *Adelantado* to pacify those People, order'd the Women and Children, and some Men that had been taken to be dismiss'd.

WHEN the *Spaniards* had lain three Weeks in that Place, the *Adelantado* sent Captain *Baltasar de Gallegos*, with sixty Horse, and a like Number of Foot, to discover the Country beyond the Lordships of the *Caziques Harribiagna* and *Mucozo*, which was that of *Urribarracuxi*, and asking Guides of *Mucozo*, he refus'd to give them, saying. It was a Piece of Treachery to guide any that would do harm to his Friend and Brother-in-Law. The *Spaniards* answer'd, That they must needs go, and that it were better to send him Word, that they would do him no Injury. This he said, he was willing to do, and having march'd seventeen Leagues, they found *Urribarracuxi's* Town abandon'd, and that *Cazique* would never come out of the Woods, or contract Friendship with the *Spaniards*, or offend them. In this Country they saw wild Vines, Walnut, Mulberry, Plum, Oak, Pine, and other such Trees as grow in *Spain*, and the open Fields were

were very agreeable. Captain *Gallegos* sent back five Horsemen to acquaint the Adelantado with what he had seen, and that there was sufficient Provision in the Town. *Soto* desiring to take the Cazique *Harribiagua*, one Day his Lieutenant *Vasco Porcallo* would go out with a Resolution to fetch him by fair or foul Means, though the Adelantado advis'd him rather to send another. The Cazique being inform'd of it, sent him Word, not to Labour in vain, for he would never be able to come at him, by reason of the bad Ways. He still holding on, they came at last to a deep Morass, which all refusing to enter; *Porcallo*, to set his Men an Example, spurr'd on his Horse, but soon fell, and had like to have been stifled, which was such a warning to him, that considering he was in Years, and had a great Estate, he desir'd Leave to return to *Cuba*, and give over that dangerous and fatiguing Enterprize, fitter for young Men than for him, and having obtain'd it, distributed several Horses he had, his Arms and Provisions among the Forces, leaving a Son he had, call'd *Gomez Xuarez de Figueroa*, well equipp'd, to continue that Undertaking, in which he behav'd himself like a Man of Honour.

UPON the Intelligence sent him by Captain *Gallegos*, the Adelantado resolv'd to advance, leaving Captain *Calderon* in that Place, with forty Horsemen, to secure the Ships, and Provisions, ordering him not to give the *Indians* any cause of Complaint, but rather to connive at the Injuries they might offer him. He would not halt in *Mucozo's* Town, for fear of being burdensome to him with so many Men, though that Cazique offer'd to entertain him; only he recommended to him the *Spaniards* that were left at the Bay of the *Holy Ghost*. He held on his Way North-North-East, without taking Care to mark down the Country, which was a great Fault, and coming to *Urribaracua*, us'd all Endeavours to gain the Friendship of

230 *The HISTORY of America.*

that Cazique, but to no Effect. Being to pass a Morass which was three Leagues over, with much Industry a Way was found, though it held them two Day's March, and the next Day the Fore-runners return'd, reporting, that it was impossible to proceed any farther, by reason of the many Rivers that ran out from the great Morass. Three Days were spent in searching out some Way to pass, the Adelantado, being always the first that went abroad upon Discovery, during which time the *Indians* made Excursions out of the Woods to shoot the *Spaniards* with their Arrows, but were generally disappointed, and some of them taken, who to get their Liberty, offer'd to show the Passes, and maliciously led the *Spaniards* to such Places as were impassable; but some, when their Knavery was discover'd, being torn by the Dogs, one of them undertook to Conduct them, and easily brought them out into a clear Country. However they came to another Morass, which had two large Timbers, and some Boughs of Trees laid over the narrowest Part of it, as a Bridge. The Adelantado sent two Soldiers, that were good Swimmers to repair that Bridge, who were set upon by many *Indians* in Canoes, but, though wounded, made their Escape. Yet the *Indians* appearing no more, the Bridge was repair'd, and the Forces pass'd over into the Province of *Acuera*, the Cazique whereof being offer'd Peace, answer'd, That he had rather be at War than Peace with Vagabonds. The Forces continu'd here twenty Days, during which time the *Indians* kill'd fourteen *Spaniards*, whose Heads they carry'd to their Cazique, and though the *Spaniards* bury'd the Bodies as they found them, they were dug up again by the *Indians*, who quarter'd, and set them up on the Trees. The *Spaniards* all that while kill'd only fifty *Indians*, because they were always upon their Guard. The Forces march'd from *Acuera*, without doing any Harm in
the

the Country, marching Northward, a little to the Eastward for *Ocali*, free from Morasses, and the Land fruitful. Having march'd twenty Leagues, they came to *Ocali*, a Town of six hundred Houses, abounding with *Indian* Wheat, Pulse, Acorns, dry'd Plums, and Nuts. The Cazique and the Inhabitants were withdrawn into the Woods, and upon the first Summons return'd a civil Answer ; but came at the second, tho' under much Apprehension, and the Adelantado *Soto* going with him to view a Part of a River, over which a Bridge was to be laid, there appear'd on the farther Side of it about five hundred *Indians* shooting their Arrows, and crying, Away Vagabond Robbers. The Adelantado ask'd, Why he permitted his Subjects to do so ? To which he answer'd, That many of them had cast off their Obedience on Account of his being in Friendship with the *Spaniards*. The Adelantado reply'd, That if it was so, he might go his Way, which he did very well pleas'd, promising to return, but did not. The Bridge was made by laying several Cables a-cross, and Planks over them, for there was Plenty, and the same proving good, the Men march'd over, with much Satisfaction, they being after the old *Roman* manner Engineers and Pioneers to build Bridges, and make Ways.

THE Guides being fled, thirty fresh *Indians* were taken, who being well treated, and presented, conducted the Forces sixteen Leagues over a good Country to the Province of *Vitacucho*, which was about fifty Leagues in Compass, and divided between three Brothers. On the Way was a Town call'd *Ochile*, which being attack'd about Break of Day, the *Indians* alarm'd by the Drums and Trumpets ran out, and finding all the Avenues secur'd, stood upon their Defence, and tho' the Cazique was courted to be friendly, he would make Resistance, till his Men perceiving that the *Spaniards* releas'd the Prisoners, and did

232 *The HISTORY of America.*

no Harm, acquainted him with it, and he, making a Virtue of Necessity, submitted, was well treated by *Soro*, and bore him Company, with many of his People, to a spacious Vale that was inhabited, but the Houses scattering. This Cazique sent to acquaint his Brothers, that the *Spaniards* were only passing through to other Countries, and did no Harm, requiring nothing but Provisions, and to be Friends. One of them return'd a favourable Answer, treating the *Spaniards* affectionately; but the eldest, who was most powerful, would not let the Messengers return, and afterwards sent a Reproof to his Brothers, saying, They had acted like foolish young Fellows, and that they might tell those Strangers, that if they offer'd to set their Feet in his Country, the one Half should be roasted, and the other Half boil'd. However, the Adelantado returning very kind, and courteous Answers, *Vitacucho*, for that was the greater Cazique's Name, had a mind to be acquainted with the *Spaniards*, and went to see the Adelantado, with five hundred Men very gaily adorn'd after their Manner. He was well pleas'd at the Sight of their Forces, begg'd Pardon for the harsh Expressions he had us'd, promising to make amends by his future Behaviour, and the Adelantado made much of, and presented him, as did the Officers, which he was very fond of; being about thirty-five Years of Age, strong limb'd, and of a fierce Aspect. The next Day the Troops enter'd *Vitacucho's* Town in good Order, those Towns having no particular Names but those of their Lords, and this consisted of about two hundred Houses, besides many scatter'd about the Country. There the *Spaniards* stay'd two Days, making merry, when the other two Lords ask'd Leave to return to their Homes, which was granted, and the Adelantado making them some Presents, they went away well satisfy'd. *Vitacucho* went on sily two Days, contriving to destroy the

the *Spaniards*, to which Purpose he had summon'd all his Neighbours, perswading them that it was absolutely requisite to destroy those wicked People. He imparted his Design to four *Indians* the Adelantado had brought with him for his Interpreters, telling them, he had ten thousand *Indians* well arm'd to put it in Execution, and that some of them should be roasted, others boil'd, others hung up on the tallest Trees, and others poison'd that they might live to see themselves pine and rot away; desiring they would keep the secret, and tell him their Opinion. They said, they approv'd of it, and that it was an Exploit befitting his Valour, and nothing could be better contriv'd than what he had done. *Vitacucho* thus encourag'd, warn'd his Confederates to be in a Readiness; but the four *Indians*, being convinc'd of the Difficulty of putting that Design in Execution, by reason of the good Discipline observ'd by the *Spaniards*, discover'd it to *John Ortiz*, that he might acquaint the Adelantado, who having advis'd with his Officers, it was thought fit not to take Notice as yet, but to contrive to punish *Vitacucho* in the same manner as he had projected to execute his Design, standing upon their Guard in the mean Time, yet as if nothing were known. When the appointed Day was come, *Vitacucho* desir'd the Adelantado to march out his Forces, to see his Subjects, whom he had drawn out in order, that he might be acquainted with his Power, and Manner of making War. The Adelantado, a discreet Man, and well skill'd in the Art of War, as having gradually ascended to that Degree, courteously answer'd, He was willing, and that it being customary among the *Spaniards* to march out in Order of Battle, to honour their Friends, it would also be a Satisfaction for his *Indians* to see their Method of fighting; and the better to palliate his Intentions, the Adelantado walk'd out a-foot with the Caziue. The *Indians* were drawn up with
a Wood

234 The HISTORY of America.

a Wood on their Left, and two Lakes on their Right, being about ten thousand, well equipp'd after their Manner, and adorn'd with Plumes of Herons, Swans, and Cranes Feathers, besides several other Sorts, which rising at least half a Yard above their Heads, made them look the taller. Their Bows lay on the Ground, the Arrows cover'd with Grass, to look as if they were unarm'd, there being two Wings on the Sides of their main Body.

THE Adelantado, and the Cazique, with each of them twelve chosen Men, advanc'd, both having the same Design. The *Spaniards* mov'd on the Right of their Commander, the Cavalry was in the midst of the Plain, the Infantry close to the Wood, and when come to the Place, where it was known that *Vitacucho* intended to give the Signal, for executing his Design, the Adelantado being sensible that his Men were willing and ready, took the Advantage, and order'd to fire a Musket. Upon that Signal, the twelve *Spaniards* seiz'd *Vitacucho*, as he had design'd to do by their General, who being privately arm'd, mounted his Horse, and fell in with the *Indians*, being always the first either at Fighting, or hard Labour. The *Indians* having taken up their Arms, prevented his penetrating through many of their Ranks, by killing his Horse with their Arrows, for they always levell'd at the Horses, being sensible of the Harm they did them. The Adelantado's Page brought him another Horse, at such Time as his Cavalry was breaking the main Body of the *Indians*, who thereupon betook themselves to Flight, some into the Wood, and others into the Lake, those who fled along the Plain being overtaken, and either kill'd or taken. Those that were in the Van far'd worst, about nine hundred of whom took into the lesser Lake, where the *Spaniards* attack'd them with their Fire-arms and Cross-bows, only to scare them, that they might surrender, but they shot as long as they

they had Arrows, and to be able to do it the better one would stand upon four that were swimming, staying there till all his Arrows were spent. This continu'd from Ten in the Morning till Night, when the *Spaniards* inclos'd the Lake, none surrendring till Midnight, tho' they were promis'd their Lives, but when they had been fourteen Hours in the Water, Necessity oblig'd the feeblest to submit. The rest seeing that no Harm had been done them, surrender'd the next Day at Noon, when they had been above twenty-four Hours in the Water, and it was observable to see them come out tir'd, hungry, sleepy, and swollen, because they had drank much Water; only seven obstinate Fellows staying behind, till Seven in the Evening, when the Adelantado thinking it a Piece of Cruelty to suffer those resolute Men to perish, order'd twelve *Spaniards* to swim to them, with their Swords in their Mouths, who dragg'd out some by the Hair, and others by the Arms, half drowned, but Care was taken to recover them, and being ask'd, why they were so obstinate? They said, that being Commanders, they would show their Lord, that they were worthy of their Posts, by dying for him, and leave a good Name behind them, wishing they had been permitted to end their Days where they were. Four of them were about thirty-five Years of Age; the other three being about eighteen, and Gentlemen's Sons, came from Home to gain Honour, upon *Vitacucho's* Call, and unwilling to return Home vanquish'd, the Adelantado gave them Looking-glasses, and other Baubles, and so dismiss'd them; but told the four Commanders, in the Presence of *Vitacucho*, that they deserv'd Death for having broken their plighted Faith; but that he forgave them, in Hopes that they would amend for the future, and then invited *Vitachuco* to dine with him every Day, being sensible, as a Man of Experience, that more was to be gain'd in those Countries

236 The HISTORY of America.

Countries by bearing, and forbearing, than by Severity, unless it could not be avoided.

THE *Indians* taken amounted to above one thousand, who were employ'd in the Service of the Forces, and *Vitacuco* order'd them to destroy all the *Spaniards* as they were at Dinner, which was concerted to be perform'd the 7th Day after the former Skirmish. The *Adelantado*, and *Vitacuco* dining together that Day, the latter on a sudden started up, gave a loud Cry, which was the Signal, and laying hold of the *Adelantado*, gave him such a Cuff with his Fist as knock'd him down, and he fell upon him, to kill him; but the other Gentlemen that were at Dinner, in a Moment kill'd *Vitacuco*. Upon the aforesaid Signal given, every *Indian* attack'd his Master, some with Firebrands, others with the Portage-Pots, others with the Pitchers, or whatsoever came to hand; among which the Firebrands did most Harm; but in Conclusion, all the *Indians* perish'd. Four Days after the Troops march'd for *Osachile*, when it was propos'd to make another Bridge like the former, over a River, but by reason of the Opposition of the *Indians* six Floats were made, which carry'd over one hundred Musketeers and Cross-bow-men, thirty Horse swimming over. The *Indians* then fled, and the Bridge was made, without the Help of any Labourers but the Soldiers, and so the Forces pass'd, and two Leagues from thence they came among many Farm Houses, and Corn Fields, from which last the *Indians* shot their Arrows, and the Horsemen kill'd them with their Spears. They found the Town of *Osachile* abandon'd, the Lord whereof would never appear. Some *Indians* were taken, who prov'd more tractable than the former, and because there was much Talk of the Province of *Apalache*, the Troops stay'd at *Osachile* but two Days, it being then Time to consider where they should Winter. They advanc'd

twelve

The HISTORY of America. 237

twelve Leagues over a Desert, and came to a Morass half a League over, where the *Indians* guarded the Pass; and some were kill'd and wounded on both Sides. The next Day the Battle was more bloody, but at length the *Spaniards* were Masters of the Water, and found it fordable, bating about forty Paces, over which there was a Bridge of Trees made fast together. For as much as beyond the Morass, there was a very close Wood, above a League and half through, which the Forces could not penetrate in a Day, one hundred Horsemen with Targets were order'd to lead the Van, follow'd by one hundred Musketeers, and Crossbowmen, with Axes, to hew down, and make room for the rest, to incamp, as they did, and when the others came to the Place, they were disturb'd all the Night by the Cries of the *Indians*. The next Day they were in a more open Wood, where still the Natives were troublesome, because the Horses could not do much Service, and where there were any Plain Spots of Ground, Trees were laid across to hinder their passing. Two Leagues this troublesome Way held, and then they came into a Champion, where marching two Leagues farther, they kill'd and took all the *Indians* that offer'd to make any Opposition, which convinc'd the rest that the *Spaniards* were not to be destroy'd, or expell'd the Country.

THE Adelantado thinking that enough had been done that Day, order'd the Troops to incamp at the Entrance of the till'd Lands, that belong'd to the *Apalaches*, but the *Indians* continually pouring in their Arrows, would not let them rest. The next Day they march'd two Leagues through Corn Fields, with Farm Houses, where many Arrows were shot at them, and then came to a deep Brook, enclos'd with Woods, and fortify'd with Palisades, to hinder the Horsemen from passing, but an hundred of them alighting, with their Swords and Targets, clear'd the Way, in
spight

238 *The HISTORY of America.*

spight of the *Indians*, who fought desperately, many of them them being kill'd, and some Christians. The next Day they march'd four Leagues, and the next to that, being inform'd that *Capasi*, Lord of *Apalache*, lay two Leagues off with a great Number of brave *Indians*, the Horse advanc'd, and *Capasi* flying, they took some of his Men, and he escap'd. *Apalache* was a Town of two hundred and fifty Houses, with others smaller about it, and abundance of Farm Houses; the Climate is agreeable, the Soil fruitful, there is good Fish, and the Natives are warlike. After some Days rest, Parties were commanded out to view the Country, and those that went Northward said, what they had seen was good, populous, clear from Woods, and Bogs, and that no Accident had befallen them. One who went to the Southward, reported he had met with uncooth and difficult Soil, which was the same where *Cabeza de Vaca* had been, for there is good and bad Land in this Province. The Adelantado being resolv'd to winter at *Apalache*, because it was then the Month of *October*, order'd Provisions to be laid up, fortify'd a proper Place, and invited the Cazique *Capasi*, the first they found who had any proper Name, but he would not consent to any Peace. A Party was sent back the same Way the Forces came, to the Sea Coast, being one hundred and fifty Leagues to bring away those Horsemen, who had been left there; and in the mean Time, the Adelantado march'd eight Leagues to a Wood, where the Cazique had fortify'd himself, and being attack'd, maintain'd a desperate Fight, till at length they begg'd Quarter, which was granted, and the Cazique was brought to him on Men's Shoulders; because being troubled with some Distempers, and very fat, he always was carry'd on a Bier, or crawl'd on all four. Thus the Adelantado return'd well pleas'd to his Quarters, commending his Men for their Bravery, supposing that the *Indians* would

would no more disturb him, but it prov'd quite otherwise, for that having no Head, they grew more disorderly, and the Cazique's Commands to them to be peaceable not availing, he said, if they would send him six Leagues from thence, whither the prime Men were withdrawn, they might perhaps seeing him among them obey his Orders. The Cazique being carry'd to that Place, order'd all his People to appear before him the next Day, because he had something to impart that concern'd them. The *Spaniards* having posted their Guards that Night, when the Day appear'd, found neither the Cazique, nor any other, for he taking the Advantage of the Sentinels falling asleep, had crept out upon all four, and the *Indians* carry'd him to some Place of more Safety than the former, for he was never seen again. The *Spaniards* return'd with much Shame to the Adelantado, saying, he had been carry'd away through the Air, for there was no other Way; and that Commander who was a discreet Man, not thinking fit to chastize their Negligence, with a smiling Countenance admitted of their Excuse, saying, it was likely enough, because the *Indians* were notable Sorcerers, his Aim being always to gain the Affection of the Soldiers as far as was consistent with martial Discipline, that they might be willing to endure all the Fatigues he expected to meet with in that Enterprize. This Year 1539. expiring, we must now leave him here for a Time to return to the Affairs of *Peru*.

C H A P. II.

The Towns of Arequipa, and Leon de Guanuco founded; Gonzalo Pizarro discovers the Province of Canela.

IT was now the Year 1540, when the Marquess *Pizarro* had founded the City of *Arequipa*, reckoned to be one hundred and thirty Leagues from *Lima*, seated in the Vale of *Quilca*, fourteen Leagues from the Sea, the Situation so temperate, and agreeable, that it is look'd upon as the best in *Peru*, the Soil producing very good Wheat. Within the Jurisdiction of this City are all the Towns, from the Vale of *Huacani* forward till beyond *Tarapaca*; the antient Customs of the *Indians* in those Parts were the same as has been mention'd of the other Parts of *Peru*. Being so near the Sea, this City is plentifully supply'd with all Necessaries, and most of the Treasure drawn out of the Province of *las Charcas* is shipp'd off there. When *Pizarro* founded this City, he did not pitch upon so good a Situation, and therefore it was remov'd to the Place where it now stands, and near it is a burning Mountain, which has done much Harm. The Marquess *Pizarro* being now settled at *Lima*, thought the general Distribution of the Lands in that Country ought not to be any longer delay'd, and resolv'd to proceed upon it, as the King had directed, in Conjunction with the Bishop *F. Vincent de Valverde*, both of them taking an Oath, that they would act therein without Favour, or Prejudice, or any other View but doing Justice to every Man answerable to the Service he had done. The Distribu-

tion

tion was made, and whether it was through the Impossibility of pleasing all People, or rather because it was true, that he bestow'd all the best Lands on his Relations and Servants, many of the Conquerors and Discoverers were left very poor; whereupon he propos'd to build a City at *Guanuco*, tho' there was no occasion for it at that Time, and to that Effect pitch'd upon *Gomez de Alvarado*, Brother to *James de Alvarado*, to gain the good Will of that Gentleman, and by that means pacify the Men of *Chile*, against whom he was so often warn'd to be upon his Guard, because by his having put him to Death, and usurp'd his Government, where they expected to have been well provided for, they were dispers'd, poor, and slighted, and thus push'd on to Despair; so that tho' this Project of his was commended, it came too late, those Soldiers being then incens'd beyond Measure. *Gomez de Alvarado*, who had hop'd that young *James de Almagro* would have been restor'd to his Father's Government, having now spent all he had upon the *Chile* Men, and being out of all Hopes, accepted of the Offer made him by the Marquess, who tho' the Inhabitants of *Lima* complain'd that the building of this new City would be an Incroachment upon their Territory, would not desist from his Design; but instead of making it a City, declar'd it should be a Town subject to the Jurisdiction of *Lima*, which disoblig'd *Gomez de Alvarado*, who thereupon return'd to *Lima*, and that Place declin'd very much at that Time. The Situation is good and temperate, the Soil fruitful, producing all Things of the Growth of *Spain*, there are considerable Breeds of Cattle, and great Numbers of all sorts of Fowl, besides wild Beasts in the Woods, and there are Roads made by the *Ingas* to all Towns of Note; the Natives were in all Respects like the rest of that Country. The *Conchucos*, the great Province of the *Guaycos*, *Tanaca*, *Bombon*, and other

242 The HISTORY of America.

greater and smaller Places are subject to it; the Houses are of Stone, but thatch'd, and in several Parts of its Territory there are rich Silver Mines.

THE Soldiers who had been in *Chile* were reduc'd to such Distress, that they went about the *Indian* Towns, almost naked, to get something to eat, complaining against the Governour for using them so ill; and he to add to their Resentments, had turn'd young *Almagro* out of his House, and he was afterwards put out of another to flatter the Marquess. *John de Herrera* and *John Balsa*, who had been his Father's Friends, laying aside all Dissimulation, in Compassion to his Misfortunes, found out a Place for his Residence, and gave him part of what they had, which encourag'd others, who honour'd the Memory of his Father, to countenance him; so that about thirty or forty attended him barfac'd, whilst others endur'd great Want, which the Marquess well knew, and yet he took no care to provide for them, as he might, and was his Duty to do, he being Governour, and they Soldiers that had serv'd the King. Such was the Distress those People were reduc'd to, that *Francis de Chaves*, *John de Saavedra*, *Christopher de Sorelo*, *Salzedo*, *Don Alonso de Montemayor*, *John de Guzman*, and other Commanders and Gentlemen of Note, suffer'd as much as the rest, and it hapned, that they had but one Cloak between twelve of them, so that when one went abroad, the other eleven were to stay at home, the Cloak was always in Use, and their Wants increas'd daily, finding no Charity among all the Inhabitants of *Lima*, either for fear of disobliging the Marquess, or for some other reason. All their Support was from *Dominick de la Presa*, who privately lov'd *Almagro*, and having a Town near *Lima*, by his *Indians* sent them Mayz, Wood, and other Things. At this Time, the Factor *Illan Suarez de Carvajal*, who was Deputy-Governour at *Cuzco*, writ a Letter in
Cyphers

The HISTORY of *America*. 243

Cyphers to the Marquess, acquainting him that many of the *Chile* Soldiers resorted to *Lima*, and it was likely they might have some ill Design, for which reason he desir'd him to look to himself, and bestow something on them, that Despair might not put them upon some mischievous Attempt; but he took no Notice of it. *Alonso de Alvarado* being now at *Lima*, hapned to have some Words with *Francis de Chaves*, and *Gomez de Alvarado*, whereupon the latter challeng'd him, but the Marquess prevented the Duel, and show'd much Favour to *Alonso*, which disgusted *Gomez*, and all the *Chile* Men.

Gonzalo Pizarro was gone with Commission from the Marquess his Brother, to govern the Northern Provinces, which was a false Construction he put upon the Power granted him by the King, to resign the whole Government of *Peru* to one of his Brothers, or whom he should think fit, but not to divide it. *Gonzalo Pizarro* being admitted into *Quito* without any Difficulty, all was thought to be secure enough against *Belalcazar*, tho' he should return from *Spain*, with the King's immediate Commission to govern those Provinces; for the Marquess was resolv'd that no Man, whether he had the King's Commission, or not, should govern one Foot of Land in all that Part of the New World, as had already appear'd by his Behaviour towards *Almagro*, and *James de Alvarado* pursuant to his Resolution, *Gonzalo Pizarro* having being inform'd, that there was a very rich Vale call'd *Dorado*, and other Provinces, where the Men were arm'd with Plates of Gold, thought fit to undertake the Discovery and Conquest thereof himself, and having drawn together two hundred and twenty Horse and Foot, besides others that afterwards join'd him, he cross'd a snowy Mountain, where above one hundred *Indians* perish'd with Cold, and advanc'd to the Vale of *Zumaque*, thirty Leagues from *Quito*,
R 2 where

where he found Dwellings, and Provisions. Here it was agreed, that *Pizarro* should go before, with seventy Foot, because the Country was rocky, advancing Eastward, with Guides of the Country, and after some Days march, found those they call *Canelos*, that is, Cinnamon-Trees, being like large Olive-Trees, which produce great Buds, with Blossoms, and that is the Cinnamon, excellent good, and substantial, the like whereof had not been seen in any Part of the *West-Indies*, and that Cinnamon was carry'd about to all the adjacent Parts, by way of Trade. The Natives liv'd in little mean Houses, at a Distance from one another, and were very ignorant, had many Wives, and being ask'd, whether there were any of those Trees in other Countries about them? they answer'd, They knew not, nor what the Country was farther on, for that they were acquainted with nothing beyond their own Woods, but if they would proceed, perhaps some others might give a better Account. *Pizarro* being in a Passion because they did not answer to his Mind, ask'd again, and because they persisted in what they had said, he inhumanly caus'd several of those Wretches to be tormented to Death with Fire, and others to be torn in Pieces by the Dogs, the poor Creatures crying, that they dy'd innocent, and that neither they, nor their Parents had any way injur'd him. In this Fret, for finding no Way to proceed farther, nor any Information, he went and lay on the Bank of a River, where such an heavy Rain fell, that the River overflow'd, and had not the Sentinels given Notice, they had been all drowned. Retiring from thence to some Craggs, they agreed to turn back, to find out some other Way. Accordingly, instead of going again to *Zumaque*, they proceeded to the Town of *Ampua*, four Leagues from the other, being carry'd over a River, they could not Ford, in Canoes, by the Lord of the Place, whom *Pizarro* made much of, giving him

him Combs, Scissors, and other Baubles valu'd by those People. Inquiring then about the Way, that Cazique, who knew how the other *Indians* had been treated, told him, tho' it was false, that farther on there were great Towns, and very rich Lords. The *Spaniards* taking the Cazique with them, pass'd a River, where some *Indians* had pretended to oppose them, but fled upon firing a few Muskets, and so they proceeded into a large open Plain, from whence they saw the Woods, with small Towns, and little Provision. All the Forces being join'd here, *Don Antony de Ribera* was sent to discover farther, who having march'd twenty Leagues, passing through very thick Woods, came to a Town call'd *Varco*, in which was some Provision. As soon as *Pizarro* was inform'd of it, he march'd thither, with all the Troops, the Cazique was frighted at the Sight of the *Spaniards*, and their Horses, and would have fled, for which reason he was fetter'd, as were two others that came of their own Accord, and he that told them of the great Towns was also carry'd along, but not as a Prisoner.

THE *Indians* seeing their Caziques in Custody, came arm'd in many Canoes to rescue them, but to no purpose. The River they were now come to, being very large, and emptying itself into that which they call'd the fresh Sea, that falls into the North-Sea, and the *Indians* they had brought from *Quito* being either dead, or disabled, and no others to be had, it was thought requisite to build a Bark, to carry the Provisions, which was soon perform'd. Proceeding along down the River they met with some Towns, and a good Quantity of *Yuca*, Mayz, and *Guayabas*, which was a great Support, but the many Morasses were very troublesome, and deep Streams running out from those Bogs, the Horses were forc'd to swim, and sometimes were drowned with the Ri-

first
notion of
the
American

ders. The *Indians* they had to attend them sought out the Canoes that were hid, made Bridges of Trees, and thus they went down that River forty-three Day's Journey, every Day crossing one or two of those Rivulets, and now they began to be pinch'd with Hunger, having none left of the five thousand Swine they had brought from *Quito*. The *Caziques* that were Prisoners, for Fear of Death, said there was a populous Country farther on, and one Day finding an Opportunity, they threw themselves into the River, with their Fetters, and swam over. The *Indians* still affirming, that fifteen Day's Journey farther, there was a River much greater than that they were upon, on which were large Towns, and Plenty of Provisions, *Pizarro* order'd *Francis de Orellana* to go see it, with sixty Men, and return speedily with the Boat laden with Provisions, because they were in Distress, and he entrusted only him with the Boat, designing to follow as fast as he could. *Orellana* set out in the Boat, aboard which was some of *Pizarro*'s Baggage, and of others, who were willing to send it before. He sail'd some Days, without seeing any Habitations, but at last came to some, and would have return'd to the Place from whence they came, but thought it impossible, because they had run down three hundred Leagues, which *Orellana* confirm'd, and resolving to go on, fell into that great River of *Marañon*, or fresh Sea, as others call it, and what hapned to him in that Expedition shall be shown hereafter.

Gonzalo Pizarro, when *Orellana* was gone, held on his Way to the Eastward in much Distress through Want, the great Rains, Waters, Morasses, and other Difficulties, expecting the return of *Orellana*, and for Hunger eating their Dogs, and Horses, without wasting a drop of their Blood. *Pizarro* being in this Misery, sent Captain *Mercadillo* with some Canoes to seek for *Orellana*, who returning a Week after with-

out

out any News of him, caus'd very much Affliction among the Men, who had nothing then to eat but wild Herbs and Fruit, and some Flesh of Horses and Dogs, but so scantily, that it rather added to their Hunger. *Gonzalo Diaz* being sent out again with much Difficulty, came to a Place, where he found Yuca, and loading the Canoes return'd to *Pizarro*, with a Supply. Being inform'd, that the Country whence that Yuca had been brought was near at Hand, they all cross'd the River in those Canoes. Hunger pressing so hard, a *Spaniard*, whose Name was *Villarejo*, eat a white Root he found, and immediately ran mad. Being come to the Place where the Yuca grew, they halted. There they rested eight Days satisfying their Hunger, and some eating too much dy'd, and others swell'd so excessively, that they could not stand. *Pizarro* concluding that *Orellana* was dead, march'd up the River in hopes to find some good Country, or a Way to return from whence he came. The Sick were set upon the Horses, and those that were able clear'd the Ways. Having march'd forty Leagues through those Fields of Yuca, they came to a little Town, without any Interpreter, or Means to understand the Inhabitants. Those Barbarians being amaz'd at the Sight of the *Spaniards*, talk'd from their Canoes, and barter'd for Provisions, casting them on the Shore for Combs, Knives, Hawk-bells, and such Trifles, which the *Spaniards* were wont to carry upon their Discoveries. They continu'd eight Days longer up the River, among such Habitations, but after that could find no Dwellings, nor Roads, which the *Indians* told them by Signs, for they drove their Trade along the River. *Gonzalo Diaz* was then sent up the River, in two Canoes bound fast together. *Pizarro*, with the Forces, following by Land, in a wretched Condition, and so advanc'd fifty-six Leagues without finding any thing to eat, but the Yuca they carry'd

248 The HISTORY of America.

with them, and some wild Fruit.) *Gonzalo Diaz* having run up the River many Days, without finding any Thing he sought for, and thinking it impossible for the Forces to come thither, went ashore, and towards the Evening (saw a Canoe coming down the River, and after it fourteen or fifteen more, each of them carrying eight arm'd Men.) *Diaz* taking up the Musket, shot one dead, and his Companion *Bustamante* with a Cross-bow, wounded another in the Arm, who drew out the Shafts, and threw it at him. (The *Indians* with mighty Cries, cast abundance of Darts, and the *Spaniards* charging again kill'd two more, and then were for falling on with their Swords and Targets, but the *Indians* making their Way down the River, they shot after them, killing some, whereupon they quitted their Canoes, and the *Spaniards* found some Provision in them, which was a great Relief, for they had fed some Days on Herbs and Roors. Those *Indians* came from a Town, that was at a Distance from the Shore, and one who was Fishing, spy'd *Gonzalo Diaz's* Canoe, and went to give Notice of it, whereupon those People went out to seize him, and that hapned which has been related. *Diaz* and *Bustamante* cut Crosses on the Trees, that *Pizarro*, when he came, might know they had been there. The next Day being very bright, they discover'd high Mountains, which they suppos'd to be the *Cordillera*, or Mountain of *Quito*, or that near *Popayan*, or *Cali*, and found Stones in the Channel of the River, which they had not seen in three hundred Leagues. They went back down the River to find *Pizarro*, who was advancing in miserable Distress, having only two Dogs left of nine hundred he had carry'd out. They met about the End of this Year 1540, which therefore calls upon us to say what hapned before in other Parts.

AFTER the Battle of the Salt-pits near *Cuzco*, the Alcalde *James Nuñez de Mercado*, one of *Almagro's* greatest

370
286

The HISTORY of *America*. 249

greatest Friends, made his Way from *Peru* into *Spain*, where he gave an Account at Court of all that had hapned at *Cuzco*, concluding that all had been thro' the Ambition of the *Pizarro*'s, who would ingross all the Command, in Breach of the most solemn Oaths and Contracts that could be made among Christians. This same was confirm'd by Don *Alonso Enriquez*, and soon after by *James Gutierrez de los Rios*, and *James de Alvarado*. *Ferdinand Pizarro* arriving soon after, this Affair was press'd so home, that the Council thought fit the King should send over some Person knowing in the Law, and of Authority to do Justice in that Affair, and accordingly the Licentiate *Christopher Vaca de Castro*, a Judge in the Court of *Valladolid*, was pitch'd upon. In the mean while *Ferdinand Pizarro* was not idle, but placing his Bribes into proper Hands, prevail'd to have this same *Vaca de Castro* chosen to go into *Peru*, as knowing him to be a fit Instrument to serve his Brother's turn, which was recommended to him by some of the greatest Persons; and *James de Alvarado* and others sent Word to young *Almagro*, and his Friends, that the Judge *Beltran*, and others of the Council, had been corrupted by *Pizarro*, whence they concluded that *Vaca de Castro* would not do them Justice. After much Contention between *Ferdinand Pizarro* and *James de Alvarado* before the Council, *Alvarado* offer'd *Pizarro* to decide that Quarrel by single Combat, and to prove his Breach of Oath, Disloyalty to the King, and his Cruelty and Ingratitude to *Almagro*, which was prevented by *Alvarado*'s Death, hapning within five Days after, not without Suspicion of Poison. The Judges appointed to try this Cause, in the first Place order'd *Ferdinand Pizarro* to be secur'd, and he continu'd Prisoner several Years; but there being none left to stand up for the *Almagro*'s, and the Son of the *Adelantado* acting afterwards as he did, besides several other Accidents, this

250 The HISTORY of *America*.

this Cause was laid aside for Political Reasons, and *Ferdinand Pizarro* was at last dismiss'd.

As to the Course to be taken for regulating the Affairs, there was great Variety of Opinions, some for having a Council and President establish'd at *Lima*, to govern that whole Monarchy, others for a Viceroy, and others for erecting several Councils, or Courts. All these Forms being laid aside, the worst Method was pitch'd upon, which brought nothing to effect, and was the sending of *Vaca de Castro*, as was pretend- ed, to regulate the Execution of Justice, and to assist and advise *Francis Pizarro* with Orders to examine in- to the Disorders that had hapned, and endeavour to prevent the like for the future. He was also charg'd to give all Encouragement towards the Conversion of the *Indians*, to take Care that they were no way op- press'd, to enjoin all that had Lands given them to marry in a limited time, with much more to the same Effect, as has been before-mention'd in the Instru- ctions given to others. All this Affair was manag'd with Political Views, in which is little regard to Justice, the King being afraid quite to disoblige *Pizarro*, and at the same time endeavouring to have a Check upon him, as knowing he had said, That none but himself should govern between *Peru* and *Flanders*; for which Reason, in all Dispatches *Vaca de Castro* and *Pizarro* were call'd *Our Governours*, and thus *Vaca de Castro* was dismiss'd to go upon his Voyage.



C H A P. III.

Captain Orellana's Voyage down the great River of the Amazons, to the Sea, and his Arrival at Cubagua ; with the best Account he could gather of those Countries.

IT has been said before, that Captain *Orellana* being sent by *Gonzalo Pizarro* down the River, to seek for Provisions, having run above two hundred Leagues, and considering the great Difficulty of returning so far back against the rapid Stream, resolv'd to hold on his Course into the North-Sea. The next Day after he parted from *Pizarro*, he had like to have perish'd, because the Boat ran foul of a Piece of Timber, which broke a Plank, but being near the Shore the Men dragg'd the Boat to Land, and having repair'd it proceeded on their Voyage, running twenty or twenty-five Leagues a Day, by the Force of the Current, entering several Rivers on the South Side, and thus they went on three Days, without seeing any Dwellings. The Provisions they had brought being spent, and they so far from *Pizarro*, they thought it better to follow the Stream down, being reduc'd to such Want that they boil'd and eat all the Leather they had, with some Herbs that could be gather'd, which was about the End of the Year 1540. On the 8th of *January* 1541, when they expected nothing but Death, the Captain heard *Indian* Drums, which rejoyc'd them all, believing they could not then perish with Hunger, and being upon their Guard, in the Morning, when they had run two Leagues, they discover'd four *Indian* Canoes, which immediately made away, and they saw a Town with a great Number of arm'd *Indians*.
The

252 *The HISTORY of America.*

The Captain commanded all his Men to Land, and keep their Order, without forsaking one another, and they were so encourag'd by the Sight of the Town, that falling on resolutely, the Inhabitants forsook it, leaving good Store of Provision behind them, which reliev'd their great Want, and about Two in the Afternoon the *Indians* return'd in their Canoes, to observe what strange People those were. *Orellana* spoke to them in the *Indian* Language, which though they did not perfectly understand, they could gather so much as to conceive, that he invited them, whereupon some drawing near, he gave them a few *Spanish* Toys, desiring them to call their Lord, who came in great State, and being courteously treated, and presented, was satisfy'd, promising to furnish what they wanted; and nothing being demanded of him but eatables, he immediately caus'd good Store of Turkeys, Partridges, Fish, and other Things to be brought. The next Day thirteen other Lords came, who were entertain'd after the same manner, they wearing great Plumes of Feathers, and Gold Plates on their Breasts, besides Jewels on other Parts. *Orellana* spoke to them very courteously, requiring them to submit to the King of *Spain*, which they agreed to, and he took Possession. Finding those *Indians* well dispos'd, and that they willingly brought him Provisions, having refresh'd his Men, and considering the Danger of running into the Sea in that Boat, and Canoes, he propos'd to Build a Brigantine; and here as *F. Gaspar de Carvajal*, who was present, relates, that one of those *Caziques* gave Intimation of the *Amazons*, and of the great Wealth there was farther down, as also of another rich and mighty Lord up the Country. The Work of the Brigantine was no farther carry'd on here than the making of about two thousand Nails, to which Effect it pleas'd God, that two Men did that which they had never been taught, and another undertook to make
Charcoal.

The HISTORY of *America*. 253

Charcoal. Bellows were made of Buskins, and so other Things, some hewing Fewel, others carrying, and the rest labouring other Ways, the Commander putting his Hands to every thing. When they had spent twenty Days in that Work, which Stay was prejudicial to them, as consuming the Provisions, that might have serv'd them afterwards, having run two hundred Leagues to that Place in nine Days, and lost seven of their Company that dy'd before for Hunger, they resolv'd, for fear of being troublesome to the *Indians*, to set out on *Candlemas Day*. Twenty Leagues from that Place, another smaller River fell into the great one, but so swollen, that the two Waters struggling, the Boat had like to have been cast away. This Danger being over, they found no other Town in another Run of two hundred Leagues, and endur'd many Hardships, till they came upon some Habitations, where the *Indians* were altogether undisturb'd, and to avoid alarming them, the Captain order'd twenty Men to go ashore, and civilly intreat them to find Provisions, of which they were in great Want. The *Indians* were glad to see the *Spaniards*, and gave them good Store of Tortoises, and Parrots. The Captain went to another Town on the opposite Side of the River, where no Resistance was made, but they also gave him Meat. Proceeding thus in Sight of good Towns, the next Day four Canoes came to the Boat, offering Tortoises, good Partridges, and abundance of Fish, *Orellana*, in Lieu thereof giving them such things as he had, with which and perceiving that he understood them, they were so highly pleas'd, that they invited him to see their Lord, whose Name was *Aparia*, and he was then coming with some Canoes. Both *Spaniards* and *Indians* landed, and as soon as *Aparia* came, *Orellana* discours'd him about the Law of God, and the Grandeur of the King of *Spain*, which those People listned to with much Attention. *Aparia* said,
that

254 *The HISTORY of America.*

that if they were going to see the *Amazons*, whom in their Language they call *Coniapuyara*, signifying Great Ladies, they were too few, and those Women very numerous. The Captain then desir'd they would summon all the neighbouring Lords, who being come to the Number of twenty, he repeated what he had said, concluding that they were all the Children of the Sun, and as such they ought to look upon them as Friends, which pleas'd them, and they all furnish'd Provisions, being much delighted to talk with the Captain, who having taken Possession, erected a Cross on an Eminence to the great Satisfaction and Astonishment of those People.

Orellana being thus lovingly entertain'd, resolv'd to Build the Brigantine he had before intended, and it pleas'd God that there hapned to be a Carver among his Men, and though of so different a Profession, he prov'd very useful. In thirty-five Days the Brigantine was launch'd, being caulk'd with Cotton, and daub'd with Pitch, furnish'd by the *Indians*. At this time came to the Captain four *Indians* of a very large Stature, cloath'd, and with Jewels, their Hair reaching down to their Wastes, and laying much Meat before him, in very humble manner, said, they were sent by a great Lord, to know, who those Strangers were, and whither they went. He gave them some of his Toys, which they much valu'd, discours'd them as he had done the others, and so they went away. Here the *Spaniards* stay'd all the *Lent*, two Religious Men they had with them performing the Divine Service, and exhorting them to be courageous under all the Difficulties they might meet, till they came to the end of them. The new Brigantine being furnish'd, fit to Sail in the Sea, and the Boat repair'd, they set out on the 24th of *April* from the Residence of *Aparia*, and advanc'd eighty Leagues, without meeting any warlike *Indians*, after which they came

The HISTORY of *America*. 255

came among Deserts, and the River ran furiously; finding no Place to rest, or Fish, and thus feeding on Herbs and some toasted *Indian* Corn, on the 6th of *May* they came to an high Ground, that seem'd to have been inhabited, where they stay'd to Fish, and it hapned, that the Carver, who had been so useful in building the Brigantine, shot with his Cross-bow at an *Iguana*, that was on a Tree near the River, and the Nut of the Bow flew off, and fell into the River; after which a Soldier, whose Name was *Contreras*, threw an Hook into the Water, and drew out a Fish an Ell long, which being so large, and the Line small, he was forc'd to lift out with his Hand, and opening the Belly found in it the Nut of the Cross-bow. On the 12th of *May* they came into the Province of *Machiparo*, very populous, and bordering on another Lord's Territory, call'd *Aomagua*. One Morning they spy'd many Canoes, carrying warlike *Indians*, who had large Bucklers of the Skins of Alligators, Manaties, and Dantas, beating Drums, Shouting, and threatning to eat the *Spaniards*, who standing together, provided for the worst, tho' they met with a great Misfortune, which was, that their Powder had taken wet, so that they could not use their Muskets. The *Indians* drawing near, shot their Arrows, the Cross-bows did them some Harm, but fresh Supplies still coming on, they made several bold Attacks, and thus they ran down the River fighting, till they came to a Town, on the Craggs whereof stood many *Indians*, in spight of whom, and those in the Canoes, half the *Spaniards* landed, and drove those People into the Town, which seeming to be large, and the Inhabitants numerous, the Ensign return'd to acquaint the Captain, who was defending the Vessels that were still attack'd by the Canoes. Understanding that there was Plenty of Provisions in the Town, the Captain order'd a Soldier call'd *Christopher de Segovia*,
with

256 *The HISTORY of America.*

with twelve more, to go fetch some, who being loaded with it, above two thousand *Indians* charg'd him; he and his Men ingag'd them so furiously that they fled, and he proceeded with his Provender; but the *Indians* returning with Reinforcements from other Towns, wounded four of them, whereupon they were for retiring to their Vessels, had not *Segovia* told them they should not leave the Victory to the *Indians*, and accordingly they got the better of that Multitude, and went off safe. In the mean Time another great Parcel of *Indians* had attack'd the Brigantine and Bark two Ways, however after an obstinate Engagement of above two Hours, it pleas'd God to deliver them, some Persons from whom little had been expected having done Wonders. When the *Indians* were gone, they took care of the wounded, and had nothing to dress them with but blessing and praying, and yet they all recover'd, except one *Ampudia*, who dy'd eight Days after. In this Fight it appear'd, that the Commander's Example is a great Encouragement, for *Orellana* fought as well as commanded, and was no less conspicuous for his Conduct than his Valour; however, as fighting avail'd nothing, he resolv'd to proceed, and having put aboard the Provisions, and weigh'd Anchor, above ten thousand *Indians* appear'd on the Shore, who being able to do no other Harm, gave loud Cries, whilst Abundance of Canoes pursu'd the *Spaniards* all the Night, who in the Morning found themselves among many Dwellings, and being tir'd with the restless Night they had, went away to a desert Island, where they found no repose, because of the many *Indians* that landed, for which reason the Commander made away, one hundred and thirty Canoes still pursuing, and in them about eight thousand *Indians*, among whom were four or five Sorcerers, daub'd all over with Lime, casting Ashes out of their Mouths, and Water with Sprinklers, and it was dreadful to see

all

all those Savage People, and to hear the Noise of their Drums, Cornets, Horns, and Cries; so that had it not been for some Muskets they could use, and the Cross-bows, they must all have perish'd, for the *Indians* resolutely boarding the Vessels with their Canoes, their Chief being foremost, one *Cales*, a Musketeer shot him dead, whereupon all the *Indians* flocking about him, the *Spaniards* had leisure to get out into the middle of the River, still pursu'd, without any Intermission two Days and two Nights, and thus they made away from the Dominions of that great Lord *Machiparo*. When the Canoes were gone, the *Spaniards* came to a Town, which the Inhabitants stood ready to defend, and *Orellana* thinking it requisite to rest four Days, after the late Fatigue, order'd his Vessels to be brought into the Shore, and having discharg'd the Muskets, and Cross-bows, the *Indians* gave way, and the Town was enter'd.

THEY rested three Days in that Town, living at Discretion, but several great Roads appearing to go from it, the Captain would not stay any longer. From *Aparia* to this Place they reckned three hundred and forty Leagues, two hundred of them Desert, here they put aboard good Store of Bisket, the *Indians* had made of Mayz, and Yuca, besides much Fruit. They set out on *Sunday* after *Ascension*, and having run two Leagues, found another great River fell into that they were on, having three Islands at the Mouth of it, for which reason they call'd it *Trinity* River; there were abundance of Towns, the Country seem'd to be good and fruitful, and still such Numbers of Canoes came out, that they were forc'd to keep in the Middle of the River. The next Day they came to a small but handsome Town, and tho' some Opposition was made, they enter'd it, and found much Provision, and a Country-House with fine Earthen-Ware, as Jars, Pitchers, and other Sorts of Vessels

258 *The HISTORY of America.*

glaz'd and painted with lively Colours, and good Figures drawn, all which Sorts of Things the *Indians* said were to be had up the Country, besides much Gold and Silver; they also found Idols wove of Palm-tree Leaves in a strange Manner, as big as Giants, with Wheels in the Brawny Parts of their Arms and Legs, like Guards for the Hand on Spears. They also found some Gold and Silver, but their Design being only to discover, and save their Lives, they meddled with nothing. Two great Roads went from this Town, along which the Captain walk'd about half a League, and finding them grow wider, he return'd, and order'd the Men to imbarke, and proceed on their Voyage, because it was not proper to stay all Night in such a populous Country. When they had run above one hundred Leagues among those populous Nations, keeping the Middle of the River, to avoid the *Indians*, they arriv'd in the Dominion of another Lord, call'd *Paguana*, where the Natives were peaceable, and gave what they had, and there were Sheep like those of *Pern*, the Soil being fertile, and producing excellent Fruit. On *Whit-Sunday* they had Sight of a large Town divided into several Wards, with each of them a cut to the River, and Abundance of People, who seeing the Vessels pass by, went into their Canoes, but feeling the Effect of Muskets, and Cross-bows, drew off again. The next Day they came to another Town, which was the last of *Paguana's* Dominion, where they took Provision, and enter'd upon the Territories of another Lord, whose Subjects were warlike, but they knew not his Name. On *Trinity Eve* they landed at a Place where the *Indians* defended themselves with large Bucklers, but they enter'd the Town, and furnish'd themselves, and presently after, on the Left-hand, saw another River falling into the great one, the Water whereof was as black as Ink, and as such distinguishable from the
other

The HISTORY of *America*. 259

other Water for about twenty Leagues. They saw many Towns, tho' small, into one of which they went, and found much Fish, having been first oblig'd to gain a Barrier of a wooden Wall, that enclos'd the whole Place. Proceeding along they pass'd between very large Towns, and Provinces, taking in Provision, and the River was so broad, that when they were near the one Bank they could not see the other. At one Town they took an *Indian*, who said, that the *Amazons* were Ladies of the Place, and there they found an House, in which there were Garments made of Feathers of several Colours, which the *Indians* wore on their Festivals to dance in. They went on between many more Towns, the *Indians* crying out, and calling to them on the Shore, and on the 7th of *June* landed at a Town, without Opposition, there being none but Women, whence they carry'd aboard much Fish, staying there, at the Request of the Soldiers, because it was the Eve of *Corpus-Christi*. At Sun-setting the *Indians* came in from the Fields, and finding those Guests, were for driving them out by Force, but the *Spaniards* defended themselves, and yet *Orellana* would have his Men imbark, and held on his Way, along populous Countries, till he came to some that were more peaceable. Beyond that again they saw a great Town, and in it seven Poles, with each a Man's Head fix'd on it, and therefore call'd it the Province *de las Picotas*. From this Town there went great Roads pav'd, with Rows of Trees along them; and the next Day coming to another Town like the former, they were oblig'd to enter it for Provisions, the *Indians* hiding themselves, to let them Land, and as soon as ashore made up to attack them, with their Lord, or Captain at their Head; but a Cross-bow-man shooting him, they all fled, and the *Spaniards* had Leisure to take Mayz, Tortoises, Turkeys, and Parrots.

260 *The HISTORY of America.*

Being thus well furnish'd, they went to rest on an Island, and were inform'd by an *Indian* Woman of good Sense they had taken, that there were many Men like the *Spaniards* up the Country, and two white Women, with a Lord that had carry'd them down the River, and it was suppos'd they might be some of those that belong'd to *James de Ordas*, or *Alonso de Heredia*. Passing on, without touching at other Towns, after several Days they came to another great one, through which the *Indian* Woman said was the Way to the Place where the Christians were ; but their Intention being otherwise, they pass'd on. Four Days after they came to a Town, where the *Indians* made no Opposition, and they found *Indian* Wheat, and Oats like ours in *Europe*, of which the *Indians* made Liquor, like Ale, a Cellar whereof was found, some good Cotton Garments, and a Place of Worship, with Weapons hanging in it, and two Miters, like those of our Bishops, of several Colours, and according to their Custom went to a Wood to lye, whither many *Indians* came to disturb them. The 22d of *June* they descry'd many Dwellings on the left Hand of the River, but could not come at them by reason of the violent Current. *Wednesday* following they found a Town, through the Middle whereof a Rivulet ran, and there was a great Square, where they got Provisions, and all along there were Villages of Fishermen, and having doubled a Point, saw very many large Towns, where they had Notice of the *Spaniards*, the Inhabitants coming out to them by Water, with an ill Intention. Capt. *Orellana* call'd to those *Indians*, offering them Toys, by way of Barter, which they made a Jest of, and farther on there were Multitudes of People in several Bodies. The Captain order'd the Vessels to steer to the Place where those People were, who shot such Flights
of

The HISTORY of *America*. 261

of Arrows, that they wounded five Men, and among them F. *Carvajal*, whereupon *Orellana* made the more haste to Land, where the *Indians* fought resolutely, and F. *Carvajal* says they did so, as being Tributaries to the *Amazons*, and that he and all the rest saw ten or twelve of them fighting, like Commanders, before the Men, so desperately, that those *Indians* durst not turn their Backs, and if any one hapned to run away, they beat him to Death with Cudgels. Those Women appear'd to them very tall, strong limb'd, and fair, their Hair long, wound about their Heads in Tresses, stark naked, only their Privities cover'd, carrying Bows and Arrows, seven or eight of whom the *Spaniards* kill'd, whereupon the *Indians* fled. I deliver this particular concerning the *Amazons*, as I found it in the Memorials of this Expedition. Abundance of *Indians* flocking together from all Parts, the *Spaniards* launch'd out into the deep, reckning they had till then run fourteen hundred Leagues, without knowing how far they had to the Sea; and here they took an *Indian* Trumpeter, about thirty Years of Age, who talk'd much of what was up the Country.

HAVING landed again, and seeing vast Multitudes of *Indians*, *Orellana* thought fit not to expose his Men at every foot. Here they observ'd the Nature of the Country, which seem'd to be temperate, and fruitful; the Woods were of Oaks, bearing Acorns, and Cork-Trees, the Land high, with spacious Plains, and Abundance of all Sorts of Grain. This they call'd the Province of *St. John*, extending above one hundred and fifty Leagues along the Coast, well peopled, because they enter'd upon it on *Midsummer* Day. They kept along the Middle of the River till they came to many Islands, which they thought Desert, but there came from them above two hundred *Piraguas*, and in each of them thirty or forty gay *Indians*, with

all their sorts of noisy Musick, who making an attack, were repuls'd by the Muskets and Cross-bows. The Islands appear'd high, fruitful, and very delicious, and they judg'd the largest of them to be fifty Leagues in Length. Being pass'd that Province of St. *John*, when the Piraguas left them, they went to rest them in a Wood of Oaks, where Capt. *Orellana*, having made an *Indian* Vocabulary, ask'd the Prisoner he had many Questions, and was inform'd by him, that the Country was Subject to Women, who liv'd like *Amazons*, and were extraordinary rich in Gold and Silver, and had five Temples of the Sun, plated with Gold, the Structures of Stone, their Cities wall'd, and so many other Particulars, that I neither dare believe nor report them, because the Relations of the *Indians* were little to be depended on, and Capt. *Orellana* having before own'd that he did not understand those *Indians*, it is not likely that in so short a Time he could compose such a copious Vocabulary, as to understand all those Particulars, every Man may believe as he pleases.

AFTER having rested in the Wood, they went on, expecting not to find any more Habitations, but they still saw many on the Left, yet did not draw near, to avoid provoking the *Indians*; however many of them came out to gaze at the Vessels, as in a Consternation, and the *Indian* aboard said, that those Lands, being above one hundred Leagues in Length, belong'd to the Lord *Cheripuna*, who had much Silver. There wanting Provisions, they landed, and the *Indians* kill'd a *Spaniard*, by which it appear'd, that those People poison'd their Weapons, and at this Place they first discern'd the Turn of the Tide. Farther on they rested in a Wood, and there were Fights made to the Vessels, against the poison'd Arrows. F. *Carvajal* affirms, that one Bird follow'd them above one thousand Leagues, and that he heard it several Times cry'd, *Huy, Huy*, and other Time when they

they came near Places inhabited, it said, *Huis*, signifying, Houses, other wonderful Things are related, and that the Bird left them at this Place, so that they never saw it again. After another Day's run, they came to other inhabited Islands, and with much Satisfaction plainly perceiv'd the Tide, and a little farther saw an Arm of the River, not very large, from which came two Squadrons of Piraguas, which attack'd the Vessels, and the Fights prov'd of great Use; but the *Indians* feeling the Effect of the Muskets, and Cross-bows, made away, one *Spaniard* being kill'd with a poison'd Arrow. This populous Country belong'd to a Lord call'd *Chipayo*, and the Piraguas again returning, two *Indians* were kill'd with one Musket-shot, many more falling into the Water, with the Fright of the Report. A Soldier call'd *Perucho* shot a Prime *Indian*, whereupon the Piraguas left the Vessels.

THE Country being so populous on the Right, they pass'd over to the Left, where they rested three Days, and the Captain sent some Men to go up the Country about a League, who returning, said, that the Country was good and fruitful, and that they had seen many People, who seem'd to be hunting, and here they began to find low Land, and many Islands inhabited, among which they steer'd their Course to get something to eat, but could never return again to the Continent on either Side, till they were carry'd into the Sea, judging they had run two hundred Leagues among those Islands, all which Way they drove down very rapidly. In this way, being in much Want of Provisions, they saw a Town, and making to it, the Brigantine took the Port, but the Boat struck upon a Log of Wood, and breaking out a Plank, sunk downright. They landed to seek Provisions, and were charg'd by such a Multitude of *Indians*, that they were forc'd to retire to their Vessels, one of which was sunk, as has been said, and the o-

264 *The HISTORY of America.*

ther on Ground, the Water being fallen off with the Ebb. In this Distress, *Orellana* order'd the one half of the Men to fight, whilst the other half set the Brigantine afloat, that they might repair the other. This was perform'd in three Hours, and then the *Indians* drawing off, they made away into the middle of the River, having got some Provisions. The next Day they took up in a Wood, where they stay'd eighteen Days to put their Vessels into a better Condition, being forc'd to make Nails, and in their great Distress for Meat, it pleas'd God to relieve them with a *Danta*, as big as a Mule, that was driving down the River, having been drowned, on which they fed four or five Days.

WHEN come near the Sea, they made Rigging and Cordage of Weeds, and Sails of the Blankets they had to lie on, which took them up a Fortnight, having nothing to eat but what they found on the Shore; and thus poorly furnish'd, they set out from that place on the 8th of *August* 1541, sailing as the Tides would permit, using great Stones, instead of Anchors, which very often dragg'd; but they had the good Fortune ashore to meet with *Indians*, who gave them *Indian* Wheat, and Roots, and treated them civilly. They put Water aboard in Pitchers, and Jars, every one taking what toasted Mayz he had, and Roots, and thus they made ready for Sea, to go as Fortune would guide them, without any Pilot, or Compass, or other Help for Navigation, nor did they know what Course to steer. The two Religious Men that perform'd this Voyage affirm'd, that all the Natives along the River were very understanding, and ingenious, which appear'd by the Figures, Drawings, and Paintings in very lively Colours they made. They pass'd out of the Mouth of the River into the Sea, between two Islands, that were about four Leagues distant from each other; and judg'd that the Mouth
of

The HISTORY of *America*. 265

of the River was fifty Leagues wide, its Water running out into the Sea twenty-five Leagues, and that it ebb'd and flow'd five or six Fathoms. They came into the Sea on the 26th of *August* 1541, the Weather proving so favourable, that they had no great Rains either in the River, or at Sea. They kept along in Sight of Land all the Day, bearing off at Night, seeing many Rivers that fell into the Sea. The Boat being one Night parted from the Brigantine, they never saw it again; but after nine Days sail, they got into the Gulph of *Paria*, where they row'd seven Days, and could not get out, all their Food being a sort of Fruit like Plums, which they call'd *Hogos*, till at length they got through the *Dragon's Mouth*, or *Boca del Drago*, and two Days after, not knowing where they were, or whither to go, or what would become of them, they arriv'd at the Island of *Cubagua* on the 11th of *September*, the little Boat being come thither two Days before. They were very well receiv'd, and treated in *Cubagua*, whence Captain *Orellana* thought fit to come over into *Spain* to give the King an Account of his extraordinary Discovery on that River, which some call *Dorado*, others of the *Amazons*, and others from this Discoverer *Orellana*, and *F. Carvajal* says, they run one thousand eight hundred Leagues down it, reckning all the Windings.



C H A P.

C H A P. IV.

Some Ordinances of the King for the West-Indies ; Ships sent by the Marques del Valle Cortes to discover along the North-West Coast of America.

IT is not fit to forget the Family of the ever Renowned *Christopher Columbus*, first Discoverer of *America*, for which Reason we must observe, that in the Year 1540, his Grandson *Don Lewis Columbus*, being then Hereditary-Admiral of the *West-Indies*, after much Suit for his Right, was sent to the Island *Hispaniola* with the Title of Captain-General. At the same time many *Portugues* Caravels trading to that Island, which at their Return did not carry their Cargoes to the *India House* at *Sevil*, by which means the King was defrauded of his Duties, it was order'd, that none should be permitted for the future to take in any Lading there without giving Security, that they would enter their whole Cargoe faithfully at the said *India House*. The Judge *Basco de Quiroga* of the Council of *Mexico* having labour'd very zealously in advancing the Conversion of the *Indians* there, was now appointed to visit the Kingdom of *Mechoacan*, for regulating all Affairs in those Parts, and most particularly to take Care that the *Indians* were well us'd ; all which that Gentleman perform'd with much Honour and Conscience, in return for which his Labour he was constituted the first Bishop in that Kingdom. *F. John de Zumarraga*, the first Bishop of *Mexico*, a most pious and virtuous Person, at his own Cost built an Hospital in that City for the needy Sick, and to the end that it might be the better supported, intreated the King to accept of the Parronage thereof, which His Majesty

The HISTORY of *America*. 267

Majesty readily agreed to, and gave bountiful Alms for the Improvement of it. In several Parts of this History it has been observ'd, that the King frequently sent Judges over to receive Informations against the Governours in all Parts, who misbehav'd themselves, many of whom were carry'd Prisoners into *Spain*, with their Processes, but they were generally clear'd there, tho' their Crimes were ever so heinous, which must be ascrib'd to the great Wealth they had amass'd, wherewith they corrupted those that should have punish'd them, making Friends of their Mammon, which could not be so well prevented in those Times of Confusion; but since that Government has been regulated, all Things proceed in an orderly manner. But of this enough at present, we will now proceed to farther Discoveries.

Ferdinand Cortes, now Marquess *del Valle*, perceiving that the Viceroy of *Mexico* *Don Antony de Mendoza*, would not desist from the Conquest of those large Provinces, which *F. Mark de Niza* had discover'd, as was said before, with Hopes of mighty Treasures to be found, and the Report of that vast City of *Cibola*, which was never after heard of; having several Ships in a Readiness, and depending on his Authority as Captain-General, and the Contract he had made with the King for carrying on Discoveries to the Westward, resolv'd to send out three of his Ships, under the Command of Captain *Francis de Ulloa*, and having so done, went away himself into *Spain*. The three Ships were call'd *St. Agatha*, *St. Thomas*, and the *Trinity*, under two hundred Tons Burden, which set sail on the 28th of *July* 1539, from the Port of *Acapulco*, the Ship *St. Agatha* being Admiral, which having spent her Mast, in a desperate Storm, they were oblig'd to put into the Port of *Colima*, where they stay'd twenty-seven Days to refit, and sail'd again on the 23d of *August*. On the 28th they had another

268 *The HISTORY of America.*

another Tempest, that carry'd them to *Guayaval*, on the Coast of *Culiacan*, having lost the Ship *St. Thomas*, which they never saw again, they took into the Port of *Santa Cruz*. The two that remain'd set out from thence on the 12th of *September*, (holding along the Coast from the River of *St. Peier* and *St. Paul*, they saw many other Rivers, and Lakes, with an agreeable Country, till they came into the Latitude of twenty-nine Degrees forty-five Minutes, where they call'd a *Cape Cabo Roxo*, whence standing still Northward, they enter'd a good Harbour, where they found Fishing-Nets, and Fishermen's Cottages, with much Fish, and some *Indians*. Proceeding on from thence they call'd another *Cape de las Llagas*, and beyond it the Sea look'd white as Lime, which was very surprizing; beyond which again it was ruddy and black like a Pool, and finding five Fathoms Water they drew near to the Land, where they anchor'd, and at Night heard the Sea set in to the Shore in a violent manner, the Ebb returning in the same sort, observing it to be every six Hours. Looking out from the Round Tops, they saw all the Country was sandy, and many Islands. Advancing still with the Wind scant, and sometimes quite calm, they saw high naked Mountains, and some Fires. Beyond that again they perceiv'd a spacious Harbour, with an Island out at Sea, about a Cross-bow-shot from it, several Rivers falling into that Harbour. The Captain sent out a Boat with twelve Men, who going ashore saw the Rivers running down from the Breaks in the Mountains, and that in the Island there was a Multitude of Sea-Calves, some of which they kill'd to eat, and the Weather being fair, the Captain went ashore, and found twelve *Indians* fishing on a Float, who fled, yet one of them was taken, naked, and could not be understood, whom because he wept bitterly the Captain let go, giving him a Cap, and some Fishing-Hooks. After some Days farther

The HISTORY of America. 269

ther sail, sometimes finding the Land high, and sometimes low, and barren, having perceiv'd Fires in the Night, the two Boats went ashore, and in some Cottages found two *Indians* of a large Stature, who fled so swiftly, that they could not be overtaken, then coming to an Anchor close by, they call'd it Port St. *Andrew*. From thence they steer'd their Course between the Continent, and an Island, at about two Leagues distance from Land, which Island they judg'd to be about one hundred and eighty Leagues in Compass. Three Days the Wind prov'd scanty, the Continent appearing pleasant, and agreeable, with some Tokens of Fire, and here the Wind freshned so much, that they were forc'd to take off the Bonet of the Main Sail. *Sunday* the 12th of *October* they were nearer Land, which was still more fresh and green than that they were past, (saw some Towns at Night, and at Break of Day spy'd a Canoe made of Reeds rowing towards the Ship, but though the *Indians* spoke, they were not understood, and so it return'd. Five other Canoes came out next, and being within a Stone's throw of the Vessels, spoke, but though Signs were made to them to come nearer, they would not; whereupon, as they return'd, the Commadore's Boat row'd after them, and overtook one; the *Indian* leap'd into the Water, and some *Spaniards* after him, and when they thought to lay hold on him he div'd, by which means he got off.)

WHEN they had held their Course some Days longer, the Country still appear'd more agreeable, with some Rivers falling into the Sea; the Captain landing saw the Track of People, and abundance of Fruit-Trees, and the 16th of *October* they were near a Point of high Mountain Land, and the 18th enter'd the Port of *Santa Cruz*, or the Holy Cross, where they stay'd eight Days to rest, wood, and water. Twelve Soldiers going ashore hid themselves at *Grijalva's* Well, waiting

270 *The HISTORY of America.*

waiting to see some *Indian*, and at their return saw two that lay conceal'd in a Spot of Reeds, but could not take them. The 29th of the said Month, (as they were making out of the Port,) the Ship *Trinity* stuck a-ground, and was got off with much Difficulty, and could not make out to Sea in eight Days, by reason of the contrary Winds, Rains, Lightning, and thick Weather, lying in much Danger because of the Nearness of the Land. At this time the Sailors saw the Light over the Ship, which the *Spaniards* call'd *Santelmo*, and the *Romans* nam'd *Castor* and *Pollux*. The 7th of *November* the Weather clear'd up, and they proceeded along the Coast, a delightful Country, with fine Plains, and some Woods, discovering Smoaks at Night, so that there seem'd to be People. The 10th of *November*, the same beautiful Prospect continuing, they were within fifty-four Leagues of *California*, finding no Bottom at fifty-four Fathoms, the Ebb running off very far, as appear'd by the Sands. From the 11th of *November* till the 15th, they advanc'd but ten Leagues, by Reason of the contrary Winds, and here the Ship *Trinity* was separated for three Days, after which she again join'd the Commadore, saying, they had been separated by a strong Current. Nothing remarkable hapned till the 2d of *December*, when they water'd, and about Two in the Afternoon two Parties of *Indians* came upon them, without having been perceiv'd by the Sentinels, fighting most desperately with Arrows, Stones, and Spears. The Captain, and two others being wounded, the other *Spaniards* with their Dogs ran in upon them, and then they retir'd, and halted at a Distance, making a Fire, because of the sharp Cold. About Night the *Indians* went off, every one carrying a lighted Firebrand in his Hand, and the *Spaniards* return'd to their Ships. Ten Leagues from thence they found the Port of *San Abad*, which is very good, as is the Country, and so proceeded till the

The HISTORY of America. 271

the 9th of *December*, discovering very pleasant Hills and Plains, and every Morning the Ships were cover'd with hoar Frost. On the 10th there blew such a violent Storm, that they lost two Anchors, and split their Sails, being forc'd to put into the Port of *San Abad*, where going to water, above two hundred *Indians* came upon them, adorn'd with great Plumes of Feathers, and obstructed them. The next Morning early when their Vessels were almost full, some *Indians* came, who by Signs barter'd for Beads, giving Plumes of Feathers and Sea-shells for them, which pass'd the time, till they had water'd and went off, when the *Indians* desiring still to barter, and not being regarded, shout-ed and turn'd their Buttocks by Way of Contempt, throwing Stones at the Seamen that went to weigh the Anchors, for which Reason two Muskets were fir'd at them, which having kill'd one of them, the rest fled, where it was observ'd that those People did not understand the Interpreter the *Spaniards* had, who was a Native of *California*.

FROM that time till New Year's Day 1540, they sail'd forty Leagues, and on the 5th of *January* they felt the Cold very sharp, concluding that the Winter was there as it is in *Spain*, and found the Latitude to be thirty Degrees. The 13th they landed to water on a very stony Soil, and found the Track of Men; but the 18th they came to better Land, and saw many Canoes with *Indians* that stood to gaze at the Ships, as if they had been amaz'd. The 20th they had done Coasting the Island of *Cedars*, when Landing again, the Natives threw Stones at them, yet the Captain would not suffer any to be kill'd, but set the Dogs at them, who seiz'd two, that were taken, and set at Liberty by the Captain, giving them Beads and Pendants. Here in a Cave an *Indian* was found so old, that his Chin almost touch'd his Knees, whom they
left

272 *The HISTORY of America.*

left there. The North Wind driving them back to the Island of *Cedars*, they stay'd there till the 8th of *February*, finding there good Water, Wood, and some Fish, which with the Shelter was a Comfort to them. The 22d of *February* they went a Hunting, and kill'd a Deer and some Rabbits, and then came on such stormy Weather that their Cables gave Way, and had not the Pilots been skilful they had all perish'd. Having recover'd their Anchors, and refitted, they sail'd again, but were drove back to the same Station, where they continu'd till the 24th of *March*, when being in Want of all Necessaries, and the Ships much shatter'd, it was thought fit to return to *New Spain*; but Captain *Francis de Ulloa* would not consent to it, whereupon it was concluded, that since the Ship St. *Agatha* was not fit to go any farther, the *Trinity* should be well refitted, for the Captain to proceed on his Discovery, and the other should return to *New Spain*, with such Persons as he appointed. Accordingly, having found a very proper Place for it, the Ship was patch'd up in five Days, and then they took Leave of one another with very heavy Hearts. The Ship St. *Agatha*, with the Long-Boat a-stern, came within three hundred Leagues of the Port of *Colima*, and thence with a fair Gale to near the Port of *Santa Cruz*, where they saw an infinite Number of Whales, in Conclusion, this Ship arriv'd safe in *New Spain*; but *Francis de Ulloa* went on, and was never after heard of.



CHAP. V.

Francis Vasquez de Cornado discovers the Provinces of Cibola, and Quivira by Land; by Sea Ferdinand de Alarcon makes Discoveries to the Northward.

DON Antony de Mendoza, Viceroy of Mexico, having employ'd F. Mark de Niza to make Discoveries Northward, and heard the Account given by him of those Parts, as has been said before, resolv'd that those Discoveries should be carry'd on by Francis Vasquez de Cornado from Culiacan. Pursuant to his Orders that Gentleman set out from Culiacan in May 1539, with one hundred and fifty Horsemen, many of whom had two Horses, two hundred Foot well arm'd, with Store of Ammunition, some small Field Pieces, and Abundance of Sheep, Swine, and other Provisions, and in four Days March came to the River of Putatlan, where the Natives were peaceable. In three Days more he advanc'd to the River of Cinalo, where he order'd ten Horsemen to proceed, making double Marches, as far as the Brook of Cedars, and there to turn into a Break the Mountains made on the Right, to discover what was in those Parts, and he would expect them at the aforesaid Brook. Those ten Horsemen holding on their Way, found nothing remarkable, but only poor Indians, as far as the Brook de los Coracones, or of Hearts, so call'd by Orantes, and Cabeza de Vaca, on Account of a Present of the Hearts of Beasts there made them by the Natives;

274 *The HISTORY of America.*

tives ; and there those People had *Indian* Wheat, Kidney-Beans, and Pompions to feed on. Thence they proceeded to the *Vale* of *Señora*, being the same Country, and Inhabitants. The *Indians* of this *Vale* at first appear'd peaceable, but afterwards call'd in their Neighbours, and kill'd some *Spaniards* with their poison'd Arrows. The ten Horsemen returning with an Account of what they had seen, the Forces march'd on some Days Journey, through Deserts, till they came to a Brook call'd *Nexpa*, down which they proceeded two Days longer, and leaving it then on the Right Hand, at the Foot of a Ridge of Hills, in two Days pass'd them, and came to another Brook, where there was Water, and Grass for the Horses, and in three Days more went on to the River of St. *John*, so call'd, because they arriv'd at it on the Festival of that Saint, or *Midsummer* Day. Two Days after they came to the River of *Balsas*, or Floats, so call'd, because they were oblig'd to make them in order to pass it. The next Day they were at a Brook call'd *del Pinar*, or of the Pine-Tree Grove, in such Want of Provisions, that Men were oblig'd to feed upon Herbs, and three *Spaniards* dy'd of eating such as they knew not. Two Days after they were at another Brook, by them call'd *Bermejo*, or Red, (always advancing much about North-East) and where they saw two *Indians*, who, as it afterwards appear'd, belong'd to the first Town of *Cibola*, where the *Spaniards* arriv'd a few Days after, being the Place where *Esteruatico*, the Black was kill'd, as has been mention'd in its Place. In this Province were five Towns, containing about two hundred Houses each, built with Stone, and having flat Roofs ; the Country cold, as appear'd by their Houses, and the Stoves they had, but seem'd to yield Plenty of Mayz, Kidney-Beans, and Pompions. The said Towns are within the Compass of six Leagues, the Soil somewhat sandy, and not well stor'd with Grass; the

the Woods are Sabine; the Natives cloath'd in Deers-Skins very well dress'd, and some in Cows-Skins, after the manner of Rugs, and they have Cotton Mantles, which the Women wear over one Shoulder, like Gipsies, and girt lapping over. About five Days Journey North-East from *Cibola* is a Province call'd *Tucayan*, in which are seven Towns, all the Houses with flat Roofs, better than the others before mention'd, and the People cloath'd after the same Manner; and these, it is likely were the seven Cities F. *Mark de Niza* meant. All the Streams found in the Way to *Cibola* ran towards the South-Sea, and from thence forward to the North-Sea. The *Spaniards* march'd some Days about this Country, and in their way found a Town fortify'd with Earth, and upright Rocks, all the *Indians* every where receiving the *Spaniards* in friendly Manner, except only in the first Town of *Cibola*. At the River *Huex*, there are along it in the Distance of twenty Leagues fifteen Towns, of flat roof'd Houses built with Clay and Stone Walls, some of them on other Brooks that fall into it. There are other Towns worth observing, for that Country having Houses two Stories high, their Provisions and Cloathing as before, and they have very warm Mantles of Feathers twisted together, and wove, with very close Stoves under Ground, tho' not very neat, and the Country produces some Cotton. This River runs North-West, and South-East, which shows it falls into the North-Sea. In seven Days Journey still North-East they came to the River *Cicuynque*, and in five more enter'd upon the Plains, where the Cows graze, and in three Days more were amidst an infinite multitude of Cows, Bulls and Calves. Here the *Indians* made their Houses of long Poles ty'd together at the Top, and stretching out below, cover'd with Cows-Hides, those Creatures being their whole Support, affording them Meat, Cloathing, and Shoes,

276 The HISTORY of *America*.

besides they have very large Dogs, whom they load with their Equipage, when they remove.)

buffalo
THE Forces march'd eight, or ten Days among those Waters, where the Cows are, and the Guide who had talk'd of great Wealth, either by his own malicious Contrivance, or some others, led them into those Plains, out of their Way, in Hopes to destroy them, and their Horses. It pleas'd God, that another *Indian* of that same Country, who was among the *Spaniards*, said, they should cut off his Head, if that were the right Way. When they had held on the same Course twenty Days, they came to another Parcel of *Indians*, who liv'd like the rest, and met with an old blind *Indian* with a Beard, who by Signs gave them to understand, that he had before seen four Christians, suppos'd to have been *Orames* and his Companions. (In this Perplexity *Francis Vasquez de Coronado* advis'd with his Officers, and it was resolv'd, that the Forces should return to the Place from whence they came, and thirty Horsemen should go seek out that rich Country, the *Indian* had spoken of, which had occasion'd so much Labour in vain. The *Indian* who gave them Notice that they were out of their Way, offer'd to be a good Guide to them, desiring no other Reward, than that they would leave him in his own Country, and that the other *Indian* should not go with him, because he rail'd at, and always oppos'd him; both those *Indians* had been found in *Cibola*.) *Francis Vasquez* resolv'd to be one himself of the thirty Horse, that were to proceed upon Discovery, and accordingly they march'd thirty Days Northward, tho' their Journeys were not long, always finding Water, and numerous Herds of Cows, and on the Feast of St. Peter and St. Paul they were upon the River they call'd by that Name, which the *Indian* knew, and said, it was the same he had look'd for. Having pass'd it, they travell'd down the Stream, turning to
the

The HISTORY of America. 277

the North-East, and three Days after met *Indians* hunting Cows to carry to their Town, (who began to fly, carrying off some Women they had) but the *Indian* Guide talked to and appeas'd them, and having got Quarters, treating the *Indians* civilly, seeing that Country was very good, and hearing the Account their Guide gave of the Government of a Province farther on, call'd *Harac*, they guess'd there must certainly be some *Spaniards* there of those that escap'd upon *Panfilo de Narvaez's* unfortunate Expedition. *Francis Vasquez* writ a Letter, which he sent by the faithful *Indian*, having always kept the other in the Rear, that they might not see one another. In that Letter he gave an Account of the Place where he was, directing them to come to him, or send Word how they might be deliver'd, if detain'd. (Then those thirty Horsemen proceeded towards the populous Country, where they found good Towns, near Brooks, falling into a great River, which they cross'd, and spending five or six Days among those Towns, came to the farthest part of *Quivira*, where was a larger River, with more Dwellings along it than the others.) Enquiring what was farther on, they were told, that there was nothing but *Arac*, just like what they then saw. (The Lord of the Place being call'd, came, who was of a large Stature, strong limb'd, and well shap'd; and with him two hundred Men almost naked, or ill cover'd, with their Bows, and Arrows, and Plumes on their Heads. Seeing little Encouragement to go on, and Winter drawing near, for it was the latter End of *August*, it was resolv'd to go home, in order to return again better provided at a proper Season. The wicked *Indian* understanding that the *Spaniards* were for turning back, alarm'd the Country to kill them, whereupon the Commander caus'd him to be put to Death, and thus they march'd back to join their other Forces.)

ALL this Country of *Quivira* is more promising than the best in *Europe*, for it is not very mountain-

278 The HISTORY of *America*.

ous, but has pleasant Hills, Plains, and Rivers, very proper to feed Cattle, as visibly appear'd. There were Plums, like those in *Spain*, between Red and Green, of a very agreeable Taste. Among the Cows was found Flax, of the natural Product of the Soil, and very good, for the Cattle not eating it, the whole stood, with its Buds and Blossoms. Near some Brooks there were well relish'd Grapes, Mulberries, Walnuts, and other Sorts of Fruit. The Houses here were of Straw, many of them round, the Straw reaching down to the Ground, and at the Top a Sort of Lanthorn, or Sentinel's Box, where they look'd out. Here the good *Indian* desir'd to be left behind, as had been promis'd him, which was accordingly perform'd, the General giving him a good Present, for his faithful Service, with which he was well pleas'd, and promis'd to serve the *Spaniards* whensoever there should be occasion. When those thirty Horsemen had join'd the other Forces they before left behind, *Francis Vasquez de Cornado* had a Fall from his Horse, and hurt his Head, whereupon he resolv'd to return to *Culiacan*, and *New Galicia*, notwithstanding all the Remonstrances made by his Officers, and some thought he did it only to see his Wife. Many would willingly have stay'd to settle in that Country, but it was not permitted, (only F. *John de Padilla*, (of the Order of St. *Francis* remain'd, to endeavour to serve God in the Conversion of those *Indians*), and with him a Lay-Brother of the same Order, a little Slave belonging to a Captain, to learn the Language, some Christian *Indians* of *Mechoacan*, and two Blacks, one of whom had a Wife and Children; besides *Andrew de Campo*, a *Portuguese*, and another Black, that took the Habit of a Frier. He had likewise Sheep, Hens, Mules, and one Horse, with Vestments, and other small Matters; but he was kill'd, whether it was to take what he had, or for any other Motive is not known. The

News

The HISTORY of America. 279

News of it was brought by the *Portuguese*, and a *Mexican Indian*, call'd *Sebastian*, who made their Escape, a shorter Way than that the Forces had march'd. The *Portuguese* made his Way to *Panuco*, and said, that after having once fled, he was taken again, and that carrying a Cross in his Hand, the People every where respected, and gave him Meat. The Forces at their going out march'd three hundred and thirty Leagues, and but two hundred in their return, having found a shorter Way. *Quivira* is in forty Degrees Latitude, where it was as dangerous travelling over the Plains as at Sea, because there is no Way, but where the Cows go, so that those who went out to hunt Cows were quite lost, when once out of Sight of the Forces. Two several Nations live among those Cows, and are Enemies to each other, well shap'd, and limb'd, and all painted. They worshipp'd the Sun, and no other Religion was discover'd; they exchange'd Cow-Hides, and Deer-skins well dress'd with their Neighbours for *Indian Wheat*. The Viceroy was much displeas'd at the quitting of those Countries; for though there was neither Gold, nor Silver, the Men would willingly have stay'd to build a Colony there.

At the same time that *Francis Vasquez* went by Land to discover the Inland Northern Provinces, the Viceroy of *Mexico* sent *Ferdinand the Alarcon* to make Discoveries in that Part of the World by Sea. He sail'd from *Acapulco* on the 9th of *May* 1540, with two Ships, call'd *St. Peter* and *St. Catherine*, and met with such a Storm, that the *St. Catherine* threw overboard nine of her Guns, and other Necessaries, which oblig'd them to put into the Port of *Santiago* to refit, and coming at length to the Shoals where *Francis de Ulloa* had been, notwithstanding all their Care they were both a-ground, and must have perish'd had not the Flood brought them off. The 26th of *August*,
the

- being
apparently
written

280 *The HISTORY of America.*

the Boat going up a River, the Men discover'd a few Cottages, out of which the *Indians* convey'd all they had into the Woods, and then return'd threatning the *Spaniards*, and bidding them be gone; however, no Injury being offer'd them, they drew nearer, and many more began to appear, whereupon *Alarcon* made all Tokens of Peace, laying down his Sword, and showing them Toys, and after much Consultation one of them advanc'd, and gave the Commander some Shells at the end of a long Staff, who return'd some Strings of Beads, after which they all flock'd to him, he gave them several Baubles; after some other Precautions on both Sides, the Interpreter not understanding those People, *Alarcon* made Signs for something to eat, they brought Mayz, and desir'd he would fire a Musket, which he did, and they all fled, except some old Men, who reprov'd the others for running away; but they all took up their Arms, and *Alarcon* retiring to his Boat, advanc'd farther up the River, the *Indians* following along the Bank, and bidding him Land, and he should have Meat, some of them at the same time carrying it through the Water to the Boat, their Number being increas'd to about one thousand. These *Indians* were naked, smutty, having on their Heads Deer-skins made like Helmets with Plumes of Feathers; their Weapons Bows and Macanas; of a large Stature, and Limbs; their Wives and Boys with them; their Noses bor'd with something hanging; their Arms wrought; their Hair before cut short, the rest hanging down to their Waistes. The Women were also naked, saving that to cover their private Parts, they had abundance of Feathers before and behind, their Hair like the Men.) The next Day there was a great Noise on both Banks, and many arm'd *Indians* appear'd, but without Colours, and because they did not understand the Interpreter, Signs were made to them to lay down their Arms, which they did; (*Alarcon* landed, and

went

went among them, giving them little Glafs Beads of several Colours, and they return'd *Indian* Corn, and Skins well dress'd, by which means they grew very familiar. He perceiving that they worshipp'd the Sun, signify'd to them that he came from those Parts where he was, from which time they paid him much Respect, brought Presents, came unarm'd, and were wonderful courteous, he giving them part of what he had, but it was impossible to have enough for them all; whereupon he caus'd Crosses to be made of Paper and Wood, which they kiss'd and hung about their Necks. Those People being so affectionate, were easily prevail'd on to tow the Boat up the River, with a Rope from the Shore, because the Current was too strong to go up otherwise.

Alarcon order'd his Interpreter to speak loud, to try whether any Body understood him, and at last one answer'd, whereupon stopping, that *Indian*, who understood, ask'd, What People those were, whether bound, and whether they came out of the Earth, or Water, or had dropp'd from Heaven? The Interpreter answer'd, That they were Christians, and sent by the Sun. The other ask'd, How that could be, since the Sun was so high and always in Motion, and he had never seen any such before? *Alarcon* reply'd, That he might see the Sun at his Rising was near the Earth, and always came from the same Place, and that he was born in the Country from whence the Sun came, as were many others that went to several Parts, as he was sent to view that River, to be their Friend, and to advise them not to make War. The *Indian* again ask'd, Why the Sun had not sent him before? To which he said, He came not sooner because he was then a Boy. In fine, they had much more such discourse, and the *Indians* understanding that *Alarcon* was the Child of the Sun, invited him to stay, and be their Lord; which he refus'd, saying, he would be their
Brother,

Brother. Then the *Indian* being persuaded to come into the Boat, upon Enquiry said, he had never seen any such Men, nor knew any Thing of *Cibola*; but as to their Religion, they only worshipp'd the Sun, because he warm'd them, and produc'd all that they fed on, for which reason they threw some part of all they gather'd in up into the Air for him; but they had no Lord, only the eldest and bravest commanded; that in War they did sometimes tear out the Hearts of the slain, and then eat them, and burnt others, but were then for making no more War, as the *Spaniards* advis'd; though a Nation beyond the Mountain made War on them.) The *Indian* being then weary went his Way, and the next Day, the Chief among those People call'd *Naguachato* invited *Alarcon* ashore to eat, where he had Cakes of Mayz, and Pompions given him, after a little had been toss'd into the Air for the Sun. (Abundance of People waited on the other Side of the River, calling *Alarcon*, to give him Provisions; he went over to please them, where an old Man having given him what he had, turn'd to the People, and said, This is our Lord, you know that our Forefathers said, there were white bearded Men in the World, and we would not believe them; let us serve him, since he is for no War, and has Eyes, and Mouth, and talks as we do. (Passing still up the River, the principal *Indian* said, There were People farther on that could understand the Interpreter, there being twenty-three several Languages along that River; that still farther on there was a Nation that had Stone Houses, clad in Skins, and came thither to Barter for Mayz, as to their Marriages, he said, They were allow'd to have only one Wife, whom the Father conducted to some Place where many People were assembled, saying, he had a Mind to marry her off, and if any Man lik'd, he gave her, with some Present, and so the Wedding was celebrated with singing, dancing, and eating;

The HISTORY of *America*. 283

eating; that Brothers did not marry their Sisters, or other near Relations; that the Women did not converse with Men till marry'd, but stay'd at Home to Work, being look'd upon as scandalous, if unchaste; that Adulterers were put to Death; that the Dead were burnt, and Widowers continu'd six Months, or a Year unmarried; and that they believ'd the Dead went into another World, where there was neither Bliss nor Punishment; that the greatest Distemper among them was spitting of Blood, for which there were Physicians, who cur'd by blowing, and uttering some Words. Their Food was Mayz, Pompions, and a sort of Seed like Miller. They had Grind-stones, and Pots to boil in. Here the Interpreter not daring to go any farther, because those Nations were his Enemies, went away.

ADVANCING still up the River, they found abundance of People, and another Interpreter, and *Alarcon* being ashore, an *Indian* came, and touching his Arm, show'd him two Parties of arm'd Men coming out of a Wood, whereupon he retir'd into the Boat, and was inform'd that those were Enemies to the other *Indians*. *Alarcon* ask'd this Interpreter, Whether he knew any Thing of *Cibola*? Who answer'd, It was about a Month's Journey from thence, that the People there had Stone Houses, and such Weapons as themselves, were cloath'd, and had a Lord; the Women white, and all cover'd, wearing abundance of blue Stones, which they took out of a Rock, and when bury'd, all they had was laid with them. (Holding on his Course up the River, well receiv'd and entertain'd by all the People, he came into a Country, where they were subject to one Lord, and the Interpreter seeing Dishes to eat on, said, That the Lord of *Cibola* was serv'd on such) but that they were green, and none had them but the Lord; and seeing a Dog, *Alarcon* had said, the Lord of *Cibola* had such another, which he

284 *The HISTORY of America.*

he had taken from a Black Man, whom, he had been told, that Lord had put to Death; and here the Interpreter took his Leave. Travelling one Day's Journey farther, he came to a Town that was abandon'd, where five hundred arm'd *Indians* appear'd, with the Lord *Naguacharo*, bringing a Present of Rabbits, and Yuca Roots. Farther on still abundance of People came out of some Cottages, with an old Man before them, who presented him such as they had, in very respectful manner, and the Interpreter understood that they had Cotton, but did not weave it. At another Place higher *Alarcon* found many People sitting on the Ground, that waited for him, and gave Provisions. The Lord being call'd, came, on whom *Alarcon* put a Shirt, and gave him some other Things, where-with he was well pleas'd. The like hapned in several Towns he came to, where he also heard of *Cibola*, and saw some Women walking more freely among the Men, which they told him were immodest, and leud; till at last one *Indian* was brought, who said, he had been at *Cibola*, and seen many Men that call'd themselves Christians, having Beards, certain large Beasts, and others smaller, Black, and Fire-arms, like those there show'd them; and that they had punish'd the Lord of *Cibola* for having kill'd a Black Man; by all which it appear'd, that the Forces under *James Vasquez de Cornado* were meant.

TURNING back from this Place, *Alarcon* ran as far in two Days, as he had been fifteen running up, seeing many People on the Banks, who cry'd out, asking, Why he would go and forsake them, since he was their Lord, and they hop'd to live in Peace under him? That if any Man had offended him, he should declare it, and they would revenge his Quarrel. Being come to the Ships, he made ready all the Boats to go up the River again to join *James Vasquez de Cornado*, calling that River *de Buena Guya*, or of the good Guide.

The HISTORY of *America*. 285

Guide. He began to go up on the 14th of *September*, and as he pass'd on gave the *Indians* some Seeds to sow, and Hens to breed, recommending it to them to live peaceably among themselves, to wrong no Man, and to be kind to Strangers. In his Passage he desir'd an old Man to give him a Draught of the several Countries and Towns along the River, which he did upon *Alarcon's* promising to give him another of his Country. (Being come to some Mountains, where the River was very narrow, they told him that a Sorcerer had set some Reeds a-crofs it, to obstruct his Passage, yet he went on much farther; but having gone up eighty-five Leagues, without hearing any thing of what he look'd after, he turn'd back to the great Grief of the *Indians*, because he would leave them.) Just as they were upon parting, they heard the Cries of a Woman, who cast her self into the Water; and being taken into a Boat, crept under a Bench, or Thowl, whence they could not remove her, saying, She would positively go with the Christians, because her Husband had forsaken her, and liv'd with another Woman, by whom he had Children. *Alarcon* consented that she should stay with him, as did an *Indian* Man, who would not remain in his own Country; but was always very pleasant and merry, and prov'd a good Christian. (After this the Ships held on their Voyage, coasting along, and landing at several Places, making the best Observations they could of the Country, and enquiring after *Francis Vasquez de Cornado*; but hearing nothing of him, though all possible Endeavours were us'd, sending several *Spaniards* and *Indians* many Leagues up the Country, when they had pass'd four Degrees farther than the Ships of the *Marquess del Valle*, before spoken of had done, they return'd to *New Spain*.)

The End of the Sixth Book.

T H E



THE
General HISTORY
Of the vast CONTINENT and ISLANDS of
A M E R I C A, &c.

DECAD IV. BOOK VII.

CHAP. I.

*The Licentiate Christopher Vaca de Castro
sent by the King to examine into the Af-
fairs of Peru ; his Behaviour there, and
other Transactions during the Year 1541.*



THE Licentiate *Christopher Vaca de Castro* ha-
ving been appointed by the King, as has
been said before, to go over into *Peru* to
enquire into the Mismanagements of the
Marquess *Pizarro*, and do Justice to such as were
wrong'd; among his other Instructions, was directed
to see that the Lands should be divided according to
the Merit of every Person, and their Service, that
none

The HISTORY of America. 287

none might go unrewarded, nor *Pizarro's* Friends and Relations be unreasonably promoted, to the Prejudice of others; that (for the future the *Spaniards* should keep no fierce Dogs to terrify the *Indians*, since there was no longer need of them; that the *Indians* should not be permitted to work on *Sundays* and Holy-Days, though they were not Christians; that towards Suppressing of Idolatry, all their Places of Worship should be destroy'd; that *Spaniards* who went about marauding should be punish'd, and the *Indians* not oblig'd to work more than they were wont before; that Religious Men, who were not very regular should be banish'd; that all *Spaniards* who had Lands should keep Arms, and Horses; that special regard should be had to the honourable Entertainment of the *Inga Paul*, and an Account taken of the Children of *Guaynacava* and *Atahualpa*, in order to make Provision for them; that no Person should under any Colour or Pretence whatsoever carry any *Indian* into *Spain*; that the *Caziques* should not make Slaves of any of their Subjects for Offences committed, &c. *Vaca de Castro* having dispatch'd all his Affairs, imbarck'd at *Sevil*, and having touch'd at *Hispaniola*, proceeded to *Nombre de Dios*, and *Panama*, where he arriv'd about the Middle of *January* 1541, whence, with all speed he sail'd for *Peru*. Advice being brought into that Country of *Vaca de Castro's* coming, the *Chile* Men began to conceive Hopes that they should have Justice done them; though in the mean time they were miserably poor, and some of them liv'd in a Farm *Dominick de la Presa* had either given or sold them, which, he dying, *Pizarro* took from them, so that their Distress became greater; after which he sent Word to the Captains *John de Saavedra*, *Christopher de Sotelo*, and *Francis de Chaves*, that he would assign them Lands for their Maintenance; but they being thoroughly inrag'd, answer'd, that they would rather perish than receive any thing
at

at his Hands, and agreed, that *Alonso Puerto Carrero*, and *John Balsa* should go in Mourning to meet *Vaca de Castro* at *Piura*, to acquaint him with the Cruelty of the *Pizarro's* towards them, and the late *Adelantado Almagro*, and to demand Justice.

THE Marquess *Pizarro* was in a Consternation about *Vaca de Castro's* coming, yet endeavour'd to conceal it, and sent *Alonso de Cabrera*, his Chamberlain to compliment him. (At this time the *Spaniards* began to live at their Ease, and very orderly in their several Colonies, the *Indians* being peaceable, and all Things that had been brought out of *Spain* thriving and encreasing, which Tranquility in all Likelihood might have continu'd, had it not been for the Insolence of *Antony Prado*, the Marquess's Secretary, who continually incens'd him against the Men of *Chile*, persecuting and insulting them) which gave those People occasion to suspect that, after all their Sufferings, they should be Massacred, and put them upon providing of Arms for their Defence, whereupon the Marquess's Friends advis'd him to keep Guards. In the mean time *Vaca de Castro* was sailing for *Pernu*, but met with such Storms, that he had lik'd to have perish'd, and with much Difficulty got into the Port call'd *Buena Ventura*; but the other Vessels that were with him being lighter, made their Way, and came safe to *Lima*, where upon this Advice that *Vaca de Castro* was coming, *Pizarro's* Party seem'd to rejoyce, but the *Chile* Men looking upon this as a longer Delay to their Deliverance from all their Sufferings, came to a Resolution to kill *Pizarro* on *Midsummer* Day, alledging, that it was intolerable that they who had serv'd so well should be starv'd to Death in the *West-Indies*) however the Execution was put off by the Advice of *Christopher de Sotelo*, who was one of the twelve Gentlemen mention'd before to have had but one Cloak among them, thinking it better to wait the coming of *Vaca de Castro*, and

in case he favour'd *Pizarro*, as they were inform'd he would, then to kill them both. (*Pizarro* had several Intimations given him of the Design against his Person, whereupon he gave Orders for securing the Heads of the *Chile* Men.) This was on a *Sunday* Morning, (when one) *Peter de San Millan* (went with haste to *John de Rada*, a Chief Leader of those discontented People, and told him, that they were all to be hang'd and quarter'd within two Hours. *Rada* then arming himself with all speed, and joyn'd by seventeen others, all able, and daring Men, they resolv'd to kill the *Marques* immediately, and acquainting twelve others no way inferior to themselves with the Design, they also agreed to carry it on. These bold Men being all together, *John de Rada*, with much Resolution told them, That if they had Courage, and kill'd the *Marques*, they should revenge the Death of their Friend *Almagro*, and obtain the Reward due to their Services; but if they fail'd, their Heads would be soon set upon Poles in the Market-Place, and therefore it behov'd them to mind their Hits. Being all desperate Persons, they answer'd to his mind, and accordingly that being *Sunday* the 26th of *June*, this Year 1541, they all set out arm'd from *Almagro's* House, he neither commanding, nor contradicting, and marching in a Body towards the *Marques's* House, publicly said, May the King live, and Tyrants die; sometimes naming *Almagro*. Upon a Signal given with a white Cloth, from a Window in *Almagro's* House, several others sallied out from the Houses where they had lurk'd, waiting for the Time. Some stay'd to secure the Streets that none of the other Party might go in to defend *Pizarro*, so that those who made to his House were only Nineteen; and it was very unaccountable that so small a Number should pass through the Streets, and the Market-Place, where above a thousand

290 *The HISTORY of America.*

Men were, and yet no Creature offer'd to oppose them, but said, They are either going to kill the Marquess, or *Picado*. The Conspirators came to the Marquess's House, which was strong, and had two Courts, with a Gate, which, if bolted, could not have been forc'd by two hundred Men, besides the Door where the Marquess was, if it had been defended, would have disappointed the Conspirators, but nothing was regarded. In the Court, they found three of his Servants, and in the Room with him were the elect Bishop of *Quito*, twenty Gentlemen, and some Servants, with a Page, who having seen the Conspirators march through the Market, came in running, and crying, To Arms, for all the *Chile* Men are coming to kill my Lord the Marquess. Upon this Cry, the Marquess, and all the rest started, and went down as far as the half Pace of the Stairs, to see what was the matter, at the very Time when the Conspirators enter'd the second Court, crying, *Long live the King, and let Tyrants die*. Those who came down the Stairs, return'd into the Chamber, some scampering one Way, and some another, and two leaping out of the Windows into the Garden. The Marquess, and four others went into the with-drawing Room to arm themselves, five others stood astonish'd in the Room. The Conspirators came up the Stairs, *John de Rada* saying, *Happy Day, when it will be known that Almagro had such Friends as durst revenge his Death*. They found the Door of the Room latch'd, but Capt. *Francis de Chaves* order'd it to be open'd, tho' he was told, it were better to keep it shut, till some Relief came. The Door being open'd, *John de Rada* was the first that went in, and *Francis de Chaves* said, *What is the meaning of this, Gentlemen? Let not me share in your Prejudice to the Marquess, for I was always a Friend; take heed, for you are ruining yourselves*. The foremost of them took no

Notice

The HISTORY of *America*. 291

Notice of him, but they passing on, *Arbolancha* ran him through, and he fell down dead, they also kill'd *Francis Mendo*, and *Peter*, Servants to *Francis de Chaves*.

When come into the Room, they said, *Where is the Tyrant?* *Martin de Bilbao* coming to the Marques's

Bed-chamber, was wounded by *John Ortiz de Zate*, who was with the Marques.

Francis Martinez de Alcantara, with his Sword and Cloak made good the Door of the Anti-chamber, but seeing the second Door lost, retir'd to the Bed-chamber. The Con-

spirators cry'd aloud, *Kill the Tyrant for we lose Time*.

The Marques said, *What Insolence is this? Why will you kill me?* They press'd on, calling him Traytor;

whilst he guarded the Door, with his two Pages, so that they could not get in, till thrusting on *Narvaez*

upon him, they all rush'd in, and fell upon the Marques, wounding him till he fell, calling upon

JESUS CHRIST, and then *John Rodriguez Borregan*

gave him such a Blow in the Face with a Glass-Bottle full of Water, that he presently expir'd, being

then sixty-three Years of Age. This great Man who

ru'd over Countries extending nine hundred Leagues in Length, from the City *de la Plata* to that of *Car-*

ago, was born in the City of *Truxillo*, and had by several Noble Indian Women three Sons and one

Daughter. With him dy'd, as has been said, *Fran-*

cis Martinez de Alcantara, and the two Pages *Escan-*

don and *Vargas*; besides whom *Don Gomez de Luna*,

Gonzalo Hernandez de la Torre, *Francis de Vergara*,

and *Hurtado* were much wounded, and tho' the Con-

spirators might have kill'd them, they would not.

The Conspirators leaving *Pizarro* dead, went out

into the Streets, crying, *Long live the King, the Ty-*

rant is dead; let Justice be administer'd in the Country.

Then all the *Chile* Men being their own Paray, who were

in the City, amounting to above two hundred Soldiers

joyn'd them, and Proclamation was made that all the

292 *The HISTORY of America.*

Inhabitants should retire into their Houses, and none to stir out upon Pain of Death. As soon as *Antonio Picado* heard what had hapned, he went away to hide himself in the House of the Controller *Alonso Riquelme*, and the Licentiate *John Velasquez* retir'd to the Monastery of St. *Dominick*. *Don James de Almagro* attended by all the Prime Men of his Faction, took up his Quarters in the *Marques's* House, his Friends, with much Joy, declaring, that he should be Governour, and the King would approve of it. Order was taken to secure all the Arms and Horses in the City, and some Insolencies were committed, as is usual upon such Confusions. The Houses of the *Marques's Pizarro*, *Francis Martinez de Alcantara*, and *Picado* were plunder'd, what was taken belonging to the *Marques's*, being valu'd at above ten hundred thousand Pieces of Eight; his Brother's at fifteen thousand, and *Picado's* at sixty thousand, and above the value of fourteen thousand in Gold was taken from *James Gavilan*, the Conqueror. The *Mercenarian* Friers, to prevent more Mischief, brought forth the Blessed Sacrament, and the Conspirators having secur'd whom they thought fit, propos'd to have *Don James de Almagro* own'd as Governour, till such Time as the King should confirm him, which after some Controversy was perform'd, and new Magistrates appointed. Advice was sent of the *Marques's* Death to all Parts, and many submitted to *Almagro*; but *Alonso de Alvarado*, who was among the *Chiachiapoyas*, went away to St. *John de la Frontera*, where he caus'd himself to be proclaim'd Governour, and Captain-General, against all Persons whatsoever, that should presume to usurp those Provinces against the King's Will, declaring himself an Enemy to the *Chile* Men, and sending away a Messenger to the Licentiate *Vaca de Castro*, to acquaint him, that he had two hundred Men well arm'd, ma-

ny of them with Silver Armour, and their Spears headed with the same Metal, for want of other Arms, Ambition began to stir up some Emulation among the Men of *Chile* at *Lima*. The Bishop, his Brother, and sixteen more *Spaniards* attempting to go away by Day, to the Licentiate *Vaca de Castro*, and putting into the Island *Puna*, were there kill'd by the Natives. Twenty *Spanish* Traders travelling for *Quito* with abundance of Goods, were all Slain by the Cazique *Chaparra*, in the Province of *Carrochancha*, and all they had carry'd away. Several *Spaniards* were also beheaded by the then prevailing Party, as Mutineers, for encouraging others to rise in Arms, against those in Power.

At *Cuzco*, after some Struggle, *Almagro* was own'd Governour-General, and *Gabriel de Rojas* his Lieutenant in that City; but those that were of the *Pizarro* Faction withdrew themselves, and sent to *Peralvarez Holguin*, who was then on his March to subdue the *Chuncos*, offering, in case he would return and espouse their Quarrel, to declare him Captain-General. *Peralvarez* proud of that Title, return'd immediately, joyn'd all that had invited him, and marching to *Cuzco*, compell'd them to receive him as such, dispatching Messengers to several Towns to persuade them to espouse his Party. The Licentiate *Vaca de Castro* being on his way from Port *Buenaventura* to *Popayan*, receiv'd Advice of the Death of the Marquess *Pizarro*, but said he would not give Credit to it till he had a Confirmation. At *Lima*, *Almagro* and *John de Rada*, having often press'd *Antony Picado* to discover where *Pizarro's* Treasure was hid, upon his Refusal, put him to the Rack, where he bid them ask *Hurtado*, the Marquess's Servant, who said, his Master had nothing but what they found, and if there were he would declare it, whereupon he was dismiss'd; but *Picado* had his Head struck off the

next Day, being the 29th of September 1541. In the mean Time, the Cities of *la Plata*, and *Arequipa* declar'd against *Almagro*, putting themselves under the Conduct of *Peralvarez Holguin*; and *Alonso de Alvarado* mov'd from *St. John de la Frontera* as far as *Cotabamba*, looking upon it as a Place of Strength and sent to acquaint *Vaca de Castro*, that he expected his Orders there; the said *Vaca de Castro* then receiving the Confirmation of the Death of *Pizarro* with other Particulars that ensu'd upon it. Hereupon he resolv'd to assemble what Forces he could, and being himself no Soldier, summon'd all the Commanders in those Parts, and particularly the Adelantado *Belalcazar*, desiring him to bring all the Troops he could gather, since it was the greatest Service he could do the King. *Belalcazar* readily comply'd, and being come to *Popayan*, *Vaca de Castro* produc'd the King's Commission he had for governing the Dominions of *Peru*, in case the Marquess *Pizarro* were dead, which all there obey'd, and began to consult what was fit to be done. Some advis'd him to return to *Panama* to gather Forces, and come with great Power, others were against admitting of that Delay, which would give Time to *Almagro* to grow stronger, whereas, if he advanc'd, Men enough would come in to him to serve the King, and thus he march'd to *Quito*, where he was admitted as Governour, and receiv'd the Message sent him by *Alonso de Alvarado*, to whom he return'd Thanks for his good Will, and was well pleas'd to find so agreeable a Reception. *Vaca de Castro* sent Word to all the Spanish Towns in *Peru*, of his being Governour, many of which submitted to him; and the more to strengthen himself, he also sent to invite *Gonzalo Pizarro*, who was then upon the Discovery that has been before spoken of, in the Vale of *Canela*, as concluding that he would readily come in to revenge his Brother's Death.

The HISTORY of America. 295

AT Cuzco, *Peralvarez Holguin* having drawn together three hundred Horse and Foot, march'd out to meet *Vaca de Castro*, and to fight *Almagro*, if he met him. On the other hand, *Almagro's* Party had Intelligence of all that was done, but were not very unanimous among themselves, *Gomez de Alvarado* and *John de Sarvedra* being disgusted that *John de Rada* should be General, because he had been a private Soldier, tho' he wanted neither Valour nor Conduct. They likewise differ'd in Opinion, some being for marching directly to secure *Vaca de Castro*, others rejecting that Design, as too bare-fac'd against the King's Authority, after which they should be able to make their own Terms. In Conclusion, they march'd out from *Lima* to the Number of five hundred and seventeen *Spaniards* well equipp'd and arm'd, of which one hundred and eighty were Horse, the rest Foot, arm'd with Pikes and Muskets, carrying five Pieces of Artillery. The General *John de Rada*, being in Years, and much broken with what he had endur'd, fell sick, and being unfit to Command, which prov'd the Ruin of *Almagro*, desir'd that *Christopher de Sotelo* and *Garcia de Alvarado* might take the Command in his Stead, which was pernicious Advice. On their march towards *Xauxa* some deserted from, and others to them. Before the Forces came thither, twelve Soldiers who had been sent before to get Intelligence had been surpriz'd there by *Peralvarez Holguin*, who hang'd two of them, and dismiss'd the rest, bidding them go tell *Almagro*, not to proceed in his Courses lest he should be punish'd; and that he was going to *Caxamalca*, to avoid fighting, not for Fear, but to give him time to see his Error, and beg Pardon of the King. Upon the Advice brought by those Soldiers, *Christopher de Sotelo* would have march'd the shortest Way to fight *Peralvarez Holguin*, but *John de Rada* oppos'd it, whereupon *Sotelo* quitted his Command. This was very agreeable

to *Peralvarez*, who thereupon advanc'd in good Order, and the *Chile Men* coming to *Xauxa*, and being sensible of the Opportunity they had lost, thought to have retriev'd it by speedy Marches, but the Floods in the River, and want of Provisions obstructed them. Not being able to overtake *Peralvarez*, though they did some Harm among his Baggage, the *Chile Men* resolv'd to proceed to *Guamanga*, and thence to *Cuzco*, to reinforce their Army, get some Artillery, and wait to see how *Vaca de Castro* would behave himself. *John de Rada* dy'd at *Xauxa*, to the great Grief of all that Party, for his great Prudence, and (because he was a faithful Friend to both the *Almagro's*, Father and Son.) At the same time *Peralvarez* march'd on with the utmost Precipitation, over Rivers and Mountains, the *Indians* telling him, that the *Chile Men* were at his Heels, till he came to *Tambo*, a strong House of the *Ingas*, half way between *Xauxa* and *Caxamalca*, where he made an halt, to rest the Men and Horses, both being much fatigu'd; and from thence he sent to *Vaca de Castro*, for Orders, and to *Alonso de Alvarado* to join him, but he would not, because every one aim'd to Command in Chief. However *Alvarado*, upon second Thoughts, proceeded to *Guaylas*, and halted one Day's March from *Peralvarez*, and thus both Parties lay waiting for *Vaca de Castro*.

HE being at *Quito* with one hundred and twenty good Soldiers, and the Adelantado *Belalcazar*, upon the Advice, that Captain *Peter de Vergara*, who was then among the *Bracamoros*, would join him with his Men, and that *Alvarado* and *Peralvarez* expected him with their Forces, resolv'd to move forward from that City, having first sent the Adelantado *Belalcazar* to discover, because he was known to and respected by the *Indians*, as having conquer'd that Country. *Belalcazar* soon after met Captain *Francis Nuñez de Paredose*, who had been concern'd in the Death of the

Marqueis

The HISTORY of America. 297

Marquess *Pizarro*, and was going to *Quito* to sue for his Pardon, but he advis'd him rather to make the best of his Way to his Government of *Popayan*, where he should be safe. This could not be done so privately, but that *Vaca de Castro* was inform'd of it, and *Lawrence de Aldana*, who was an Enemy to *Belalcazar* made the most of it, adding, that the said Gentleman had declar'd, that young *Almagro* could do no less than revenge his Father's Death. Upon these Whispers, *Vaca de Castro* growing daily stronger, sent Orders to *Belalcazar* to return to his own Government; and though he urg'd, that it would be a dishonour to him, yet the other persisting, he went himself to *Vaca de Castro*, to whom he represented, how great a discredit it would be to him to be sent away at that time, when he might serve the King, as if he were not to be trusted. *Vaca de Castro* alledg'd against him, what has been said, of his having assisted Captain *Francis Nunez de Pedroso* in making his Escape, and saying that *Almagro* did well in revenging the Murder of his Father. *Belalcazar* with much good Breeding, told him, he spoke like a Lawyer, there being nothing more frequent among Soldiers than to suffer one another to escape upon such like Occasions; and that for himself he came not from his Government to revenge the Marquess's Death, but to serve the King, against all that should be Disloyal to him, the Difference being very great between *Almagro's* revenging his Father's Death, and his Majesty's Service, since all the World must approve of the Son's revenging the Murder of his Father. All he could say not availing, he desir'd that the sending of him away might not be misrepresented to his Prejudice, and *Vaca de Castro* promis'd to give the most favourable Account of him, yet he did the very reverse. This Behaviour of *Vaca de Castro* was much condemn'd, as being an Affront put upon so loyal and worthy a Person as *Belalcazar*, besides that

it

298 The HISTORY of *America*.

it discover'd his Partiality, as if he were come rather to punish those who had kill'd *Pizarro*, than to restore Peace to the Country ; and this his Management drove *Almagro* to despair of any Accommodation, and was the Occasion of the Civil War.

Vaca de Castro being advanc'd to the Vale of *Xayanque*, was there met by *Don Alonso de Montemayor* and *Vasco de Guevara*, as also *Peter de Vergara* with his Troops from the Province of the *Bracamoros*. Here some advis'd him, rather to endeavour to adjust Affairs in a peaceable manner, than to decide the Quarrel by Force of Arms. He having resolv'd upon the contrary, and knowing that *Peralvarez Holguin* and *Alonso de Alvarado* both aspir'd to the Post of Captain-General, declar'd he would take that Command upon himself, promising to reward the Pretenders to it otherwise, and accordingly he was receiv'd and own'd as such by the Forces under both those Commanders. In this he was judg'd to have proceeded discreetly for preventing of all Animosities. These Things hapning about the beginning of the Year 1542, it will be convenient to leave him with those Forces for a while, to see what hapned in other Parts during the Year 1541.

C H A P. II.

Actions of Peter de Valdivia in the Kingdom of Chile in the Year 1541, and the Description thereof.

THAT the Affairs of *Chile* may not be forgotten, we must turn back to speak of the second Enterprize undertaken into that Kingdom by the *Spaniards*, the first having been that which has been before spoken of under the unfortunate *Almagro*, who desisted from it to his own Destruction. When that Gentleman

The HISTORY of America. 299

Gentleman had been put to Death, the carrying on of that new Conquest had been laid aside, for some time, till at length *Peter de Valdivia*, who was settled at *los Charcas*, having serv'd *Pizarro* at the Battle of the Salt-pits, begg'd of him a Commission for that undertaking, which was easily granted, and he set out with about one hundred and fifty *Spaniards*. Being come into the first Part of that Kingdom, that is, the Vale of *Copayapo*, which signifies Seed Plot of Turkey-Stones, because there are many of them on an Hill, though little valu'd on Account of their Plenty, he would not build a Town there, notwithstanding it is the most fruitful Part of the whole Kingdom, for the Reeds of the Mayz, or *Indian* Wheat are as long as an Horseman's Sphear, and the greatest Ears about half a Yard in Length the shortest a full Quarter, for which reason they gather no more of it than they have occasion for, leaving the rest upon the Reed, only twisting the Knot of the Ear, that it may not shoot out again. A Bushel yields above three hundred, and all other Things sown in this Vale, whether of the Growth of the Country, or brought from *Spain*, increase wonderfully, and are very good. A small River falling from the Mountain, and running about twenty Leagues across the Vale, waters it, and falls into the Sea at a Bay, which serves for an Harbour, where Ships may anchor, being in twenty-six Degrees of South Latitude. From this Vale to the Port and Vale of *Gnasco* there are thirty-five Leagues, the Coast bearing South and by West, the Port of *Gnasco* in twenty-nine Degrees, being a Bay into which a small River empties it self, coming down from the snowy Mountain to the Eastward, serving to water the Lands, and this Vale is almost as fruitful as that of *Copayapo*. In this and the other Vales there are abundance of Partridges, with Sheep, and Ash-colour Squirrels, whose Firs are very fine. The reason why *Peter de Valdivia* would not settle

settle a Colony in the first Vale, but go on to the second, was suppos'd to be, because if it were left in peaceable Disposition, there would be a ready open way for his Men to go back, being sensible of the great Difficulties People are to struggle with upon the first building of a Town, and therefore he proceeded to the Vale of *Guaſco*, to the Place the Natives call'd *Mapocho*, (where) on the 24th of February 1541, he founded the City of *Santiago de la Nueva Estremadura*, fourteen Leagues from the Sea, where is a small Harbour. At the same Time, he rais'd a Fort, for the Defence of the Inhabitants, as knowing that the Natives were Men of Valour, tho' he from the first endeavour'd to reduce them by Art, and fair Means, and accordingly they submitted to him. When the *Indians* had kept the Peace some Months, they began to hold private Cabals, without any Provocation given them, and resolv'd to kill all the *Spaniards* *Valdivia* had with him, and in regard that the Ground was plain, and proper for the Horses, and that they might find the *Spaniards* divided, they agreed to make the Onset, when *Valdivia* went out with the Horse, as he was wont to do.)

Valdibia had learnt Experience in the Wars of *Europe*, and was very vigilant, so that by his Industry, he got Intelligence of the Conspiracy, seiz'd some of the Lords, put them into the Fort, and nevertheless went out with sixty Horse, to scour along the River *Cachapoal*, which is fourteen Leagues from *Santiago*. The *Indians* laying hold of that Opportunity, without any Regard to the Prisoners, attack'd the Fort, which was defended by Capt. *Alonso de Monroy*, Lieutenant to *Valdivia*, who having Notice, that he should be attack'd, sent after *Valdivia*, who was overtaken eight Leagues off, and answer'd, that might be *Indian* News, and therefore he would not hinder his March; but in case it should prove true, they must stand

stand to it, and he would do the same. The *Indians*, without losing Time, (attack'd the Fort, and fought from Break of Day till Night. Whilst the Men were engag'd, the Lady *Agnes Suarez*, to prevent the *Indians* releasing the *Caziques*, without any Orders for it, kill'd them all with an Axe, a wonderful Boldness, and no less Cruelty, which Women have at other Times been known to be guilty of. The most prejudicial Thing to the *Spaniards* in this Attack, were the Enclosures, or Yards they had made of Timber, and Boughs to their Houses, where the *Indians* fortify'd themselves, because the Horse could not come at them; which was a Reflection upon *Valdivia*, because, being a Soldier, he had not made an Esplanade to the Fort. The *Spaniards* all abandon'd the Fort, and in a Body march'd to a plain gravelly Ground near the River that runs by the City, the Lady *Agnes*, and all the Children and *Indian* Servants being in the Center. The *Indians* thereupon drew out into the Plain, setting Fire to the Baracks, and then the Horse charg'd and routed them, killing very many, to the great Satisfaction of the *Spaniards*, for when Things succeed no Fatigue is troublesome. *Valdivia* returning, found all his Houses burnt, but was most concern'd for the Destruction of his Provisions; however being resolv'd rather to dye than to abandon that Kingdom, he fell to build again, and seek out for Provisions, wherein his Men suffer'd so much through Want, and continual Toil, that they began to think of returning to *Peru*, and in order to it, resolv'd to murder their Commander. He being inform'd of it, punish'd the Ring-leaders, which quell'd the Commotion, and he took the Title of Governour, and behav'd himself with such Bravery and Conduct, that at length the *Indians* of the Vale of *Chile*, being the Chief of all the rest, submitted to him, and were content to be directed by him, and then

302 *The HISTORY of America.*

then he began to work the Mines of *Quillota*, which prov'd so rich, that he built a Fort for the Security of the Men employ'd at them, put a Garrison into it, order'd a Frigate to be built on the River, to trade to *Peru* by Sea, and that there might be a Communication by Land, he sent thirty Horsemen to the Vale of *Guasco*, ordering Capt) *Monroy*, with six others to the Vale of *Copiapo*, and thence into *Peru*, which was a Matter of much Difficulty, and Danger. And in order to made a Show of the Wealth of the Country, he order'd six pair of Stirrups, the Buckles of the Girts, Breast-plates, and Hawks-bells to them all, and the Pommels of the Saddles to be made of pure Gold, to draw People to him, but the *Indians* of the Vale of *Copiapo* falling upon Capt) *Monroy* by surprize, as he was preparing to pass the Desert of *Atacama*, kill'd five of his Men, whilst he and *Peter de Miranda* leap'd upon their bare Horses, and fled over the Vale to some sandy Hills, wounded in several Places with Arrows, and pursu'd by a Commander call'd *Coto*, with one hundred Archers; and they being wounded, and their Horses tir'd, he overtook, and carry'd them back, with their Hands ty'd behind them to a prime Cazique of the Vale, whose Wife was Heirefs of the whole Vale, for there the Inheritance comes by the Mothers, and when they are marry'd, the Husband rules.

THE two *Spaniards* being bound in order to be kill'd, it pleas'd God to touch the Heart of that Lady, who commiserating their Condition, started up, and unbound them with her own Hands, caus'd Water to be brought to wash off the Gore from their Wounds, gave them some of her Liquor to drink, taking the Essay of it as is their Custom, bidding them not to fear, for they should not dye; for which *Peter de Miranda*, who understood the Language, return'd her Thanks. Then came the

Indian

The HISTORY of *America*. 303

Indian Commander, who had taken them, saying, they might be easy, since the Lady that commanded them all, had given Orders that they should not dye. Those two *Spaniards* continu'd six Months in that Vale, and Capt. *Monroy* advising the Lord of it to learn to ride, he was pleas'd with it, and rode about with some others, on the Horses they had taken, the Caziqne having a Spear, and a naked Sword carry'd before him, with his Guard of Archers. *Monroy* and *Miranda* were also mounted, as was another *Spaniard*, call'd *Casco*, who had been among the *Indians* ever since the Time when *Almagro* was there. Capt. *Monroy* resolving to make his Escape from among those People, seriously consider'd how he might recover his Liberty, and when he found a proper Opportunity, as he was riding with the Caziqne, clos'd with, and wounded him in several Places with a little Knife he had, so that he fell, but dy'd not in four Months after. *Miranda* ran at the *Indian* that carry'd the Spear, and snatch'd it from him, as he did the Sword from the other. The rest of the *Indians* being in a mighty Consternation, fled; then *Monroy* and *Miranda* turning to *Casco*, commanded him to go on, or they would kill him, and thus driving him before, they took the Way to the Desert. As they were going out of the Vale, they met an *Indian* Woman going from one Town to another, driving a Sheep loaded with some Sacks of toasted *Indian* Corn, which they took up behind them, and by that Support pass'd the Desert, which is ninety, or one hundred Leagues over. Being come to the Vales of *Atacama*, which were then in Arms, they turn'd away towards the snowy Mountain, and with much Difficulty arriv'd safe at the Mines of *Porco*, where they rested, furnish'd themselves with Necessaries, and proceeded to meet the new Governour *Vaca de Castro*; who considering the great Importance of

of the Kingdom of *Chile*, supply'd *Monroy* with what was requisite for raising Men; and he accordingly return'd to *Chile* with sixty, being the first Reinforcement the Governour *Valdivia* receiv'd, without which he could not have stood his Ground. (Upon the Report spread abroad of the great Wealth of the Country, Capt.) *John Baptist de Pastena* (went thither with a Ship carrying Cloaths, and other Necessaries, much wanted at that Time, and then the Governour sent him to discover all the Northern Coast, of which he gave a good Account at his Return.)

By means of the Fort *Valdivia* had rais'd at the Mines of *Quillota*, great Advantage was made, and he had posted *Gonzalo de los Rios* there, to gather the Gold; but the *Indians* slyly carry'd him a Pot full of Grains of Gold, as a Sample, saying, they would give much more of the same. The *Spaniards* going to see it, fell in among a Number of *Indian* Archers, who kill'd all the Soldiers, none but *Gonzalo de los Rios*, and a free Black, call'd *John Valiente*, escaping on the bare Horses. The Governour being inform'd of it, and that the *Indians* had burnt his Frigate, which was almost finish'd, took fifty Soldiers with him, and built a strong House in the Vale of *Quillota*, which is that of *Chile*, where he plac'd a Garrison, and having made some Examples, Peace was restor'd, and the Work of the Mines carry'd on again. This being as much as hapned in the Year 1541, before we proceed to other Parts, it will be convenient to give some Description of this Kingdom.

It is generally call'd *Chile*, tho' more properly *Chilile*, the Name of a River running through the Vale of the Denomination, from whence the *Ingas* carry'd away much Gold, lying along the South-Sea, which extends from thence to *China* two thousand one hundred Leagues. The first inhabited Part of this Kingdom

The HISTORY of *America*. 305

dom of *Chile* is the Vale of *Copiapo*, whence the Coast extends to the Streights of *Magellan* Southward four hundred seventy-two *Spanish* Leagues, in the midst of which Length, being the Province of *Gnadalanguen*, was founded the City of *Valdibia*, two Leagues from the Sea, up a River, in bare forty Degrees of S. Lat. Here the Spring begins in *September*, the Summer in *December*, Autumn in *March*, and Winter in *June*, being the opposite of our Summer, and Winter, because beyond the Line, and accordingly their Seasons for reaping, sowing, and planting are directly the reverse of ours; the longest Day there being St. *Lucy's*, and St. *Barnabe's* the shortest. There is never any Thunder, or Lightning, but so great a Dew falls in some Vales at certain Seasons, that it congeals, and is gather'd like Loaf-Sugar, and is so wholesome, that they give it the Name of *Manna*. (There is so much Moisture, that the Grass is green all the Year about, and the Trees are never without Leaves, so that the Horses graze continually.) The Pastures, Woods, and Fisheries are common to all by the King's Order. Travellers from one End to the other of the inhabited Country pay nothing for their Diet. The Foreheads of the Natives are downy, and they have throve under the *Spaniards*, for they went naked, and now they have much Cattle, are cloath'd with their Wooll, and eat the Flesh, they are good Pay-masters, and given to gaming; play at the Sport call'd *Chueca*, like our Bandy, one Party against another, and do not regard the Inequality of Numbers, but the Women use it as well as the Men. (There were no Caziques in *Chile*, and tho' the Name is sometimes made use of in this History, it is only to denote the Heads of the Kindred, or Clan, who were richest, and most powerful, and as such respected, yet they paid no Tribute to them, but only Obedience in War, and such like Occasions, which did not give them any Sovereignty.

VOL. V. X

306 The HISTORY of America.

reignty. (As far as thirty-four Degrees Lat. they water their Lands with Trenches, and from thence Southward, they have Rain.) As far as twenty-three Degrees South, the Wind is always at S. and from that Lat. forward towards the Streight of *Magellan*, there are three different Winds; South in Summer; the North when the Weather is fair in Winter, and some rainy Days, and the West when the North ceases, sometimes with heavy Rains, being a-thwart the Coast, and so fierce, that it bows the Trees and carries off the Leaves and Branches. The Dew begins to fall in the Evening, whereas in *Spain* it is after Mid-night. This may suffice at present as to *Chile*.

AFTER several Attempts made for carrying on a Trade from *Spain* to *Peru* and *Chile*, through the Streights of *Magellan*, to save the Trouble of the Land Carriage between *Nombre de Dios*, and *Panama*, *Don Guierre de Vargas*, Bishop of *Plasencia* fitted out three Ships which sail'd from *Sevil* in *August* 1539, and enter'd those Streights in *January* 1540, where one of them perish'd, another pass'd through, and arriv'd at the Port of *Arequipa* in *Peru*, of which more shall be said hereafter, and the third having been oblig'd to winter in the Streight, after many Difficulties and Hardships, return'd into *Spain*, which being all that is worth mentioning as to those Ships, we will also return to see what was doing in *Florida*.



C H A P. III.

The Continuation of the Actions of the Adelantado Ferdinand de Soto, in the Province of Florida, during the Years 1540, and 1541.

WE left *Ferdinand de Soto* wintering, with his Forces at *Apalache*, in the Province of *Florida*, having sent *John de Anasco*, with thirty Horse, back again to *Herriagua*, towards the Sea, to bring away Capt. *Calderon*, and the Men that had been left in those Parts to joyn him. *John de Anasco* being come to the River *Ocali*, was oblig'd to make a Float, in order to pass it, because there was a great Flood, and tho' they us'd the utmost Diligence, the *Indians* on both Sides of the River were ready in Arms to oppose them, so that the *Spaniards* were oblig'd to fight on both Sides, whilst their Baggage, and themselves were waisted over, which being done, they resolv'd to go to the Town, because one of them was quite benumm'd in passing the River, and the *Indians* believing their Number had been greater than it was, defended themselves till their Wives and Children were convey'd into Safety, and then abandon'd the Place. The *Spaniards* made four Fires in the Marker, endeavour'd to cherish the Person before-said to be benumm'd, gave him the only clean Shirt they had among them, and dry'd their Cloaths, and Saddles, furnishing their Wallets with Provisions, ten Horses feeding, whilst the rest stood Bridled. About Midnight one of those that stood Sentinel, heard a great Number of *Indians*, they all mounted,

308 *The HISTORY of America.*

and made the Man that had been benumm'd and was then somewhat recover'd, fast on his Horse, led by another, and then march'd so fast, that by Break of Day they had gone above five Leagues, trotting on where the Country was inhabited, and walking over the Desert. The seventh Day after they parted from the other Forces, *Peter de Atienza* was taken ill, and within a few Hours dy'd on his Horse. Having that Day travell'd near twenty Leagues, they came to the great Marsh, which was then overflow'd, and lay on the Edge of it that Night, making good Fires. The next Day they would have begun to pass, but the Horses would not, because of the violent Cold, till towards Noon, the Sun yielding some Warmth, they went over. The third Day, advancing with the same Speed, they saw the Track of Horses, and some Tokens of Lye and Washing in a Pool, which much rejoyc'd them, and the Horses took Heart, smelling the Track of the others, which was a great Satisfaction, because they fear'd that Capt. *Calderon*, who had been left behind with the forty Horse and eighty Foot, might have been gone away to *Cuba*, or slain by the *Indians*. They came in Sight of *Hirrihiagua* about Sun-setting, when the Horse Patroulle was going out of the Town, then the new Comers giving a Shout for Joy, Capt. *Calderon* came out, and they met with mutual Satisfaction. The Cazique *Mucozo*, being told, that *John de Anasco* was come, went to visit him, and brought the Horse belonging to the Man that dy'd by the Way, which being tir'd, had been left in a Meadow, with the Saddle hanging on a Tree, and brought by the *Indians* on their own Backs, because they knew not how to girt it on. *Mucozo* enquir'd after the *Adelantado*, and said, he was sorry that all the Caziques were not of his mind. They presently began to consult about going back, and there being

good

good Store of Provisions, Shoes, and Cloaths, which the Adelantado as a rich Man had plentifully provided, they resolv'd all should be carry'd to *Mucozo's* House, to be secur'd, and order'd two Brigantines to Coast along, as far as the Bay of *Aute*, which *John de Anasco* had discover'd, and march'd down, when sent by the Adelantado to discover Southward.

Seven Days after, all things being in Readiness, *Anasco* set out with the Brigantines for the Bay of *Aute*, and Capt. *Calderon* by Land for *Apalache*, with seventy Horse, and fifty Foot, the rest going by Sea. The second Day, *Calderon* came to *Mucozo*, where he was well entertain'd by that friendly Cazique. Nothing remarkable hapned till they came to the great Morals, besides one Horse being kill'd with an Arrow, which penetrated through his Breast to his Bowels, those *Indians* being such Archers that they have been known to shoot through four Folds of Mail, for which reason the *Spaniards* laid aside their fine *Spanish* Armour, and us'd Escapiles, stuff'd with Cotton, for themselves and their Horses. In short, they travell'd one hundred and thirty-five Leagues without any Opposition to the Morals of *Apalache*, where the *Indians* attack'd them, kill'd one Horse, and fought desperate'y. The next Day they were again attack'd, and disturb'd all the Night, the *Indians* calling them Robbers and Vagabonds, and threatening to quarter them. The Day after that again, they reach'd *Apalache*, where ten or twelve men dy'd of their Wounds. The Brigantines arriv'd at the Bay of *Aute*, and *Anasco* came that Day safe to *Apalache*. *Ferdinand de Soto* having got his Men together, sent *James Maldonado* to coast with the Brigantines Westward, ordering him to return in two Months, with a Particular of all the Ports, Creeks, and Points he saw, which he did, and

310 The HISTORY of *America*.

said, there was a very fine Harbour call'd *Achusi*, sixty Leagues from *Aute*, and brought two *Indians* he had taken there. He then commanded him to go over to *Havana*, with the Brigantines, to visit his Wife, and to give out in *Cuba* his finding of that good Harbour, and that the Country was good, to the End, that the People there might incline to come and settle at it, which was all punctually perform'd by *Maldonado*, as being a very industrious Man. Seven Horsemen going out of *Apalache* a Horseback, saw an *Indian* Man and a Woman, gathering old Kidney-Beans; the Man seeing the Horses, took up the Woman in his Arms, and carry'd her into the Wood, after which he return'd for his Bow and Arrows, attack'd the Horsemen, who would have sav'd his Life for his Bravery, calling to him to yield, but he was so desperate, that he wounded them all, and when his Arrows were spent, gave one such a Stroke with the Bow, on the Head-piece, that it stunn'd him, upon which Provocation he kill'd the *Indian* with his Spear. Whilst the *Adelantado* lay at *Apalache*, he made it his Business to get Intelligence about the Country to the Westward, in order to proceed on his Discovery, and among other *Indians* taken there hapned to be one seventeen Years of Age, Servant to Merchants that travell'd up the Country. This Man said, and another confirm'd it, that about thirteen or fourteen Days Journey farther on was a Province call'd *Cofachiqui*, where there was Gold, Silver, and Pearls, which was pleasing to the Forces, and made them wish for the Season to march. When any Parties of *Spaniards* went out, the *Indians* seldom fail'd of killing some of them, or their Horses, with their Arrows, at a Distance, tho' they would not encounter them in open Field, but always kept within the Woods.

The HISTORY of America. 311

THE Season being come for taking the Field, the Forces march'd Northward, and the third Day lay on a Peninsula form'd by a Marsh, with wooden Bridges to it, and being high, several Towns could be seen from it, still in the Province of *Apalache*, where they rested two Days, and seven Men going out of that Place, without Orders, before they had gone two hundred Paces, six of them were kill'd by the *Indians*, the seventh escaping with two Wounds. Leaving the Province of *Apalache*, they enter'd upon that of *Atalpaha*, the first Town whereof was abandon'd, however six *Indians* were taken, who had stay'd to see all the People out, because they were Commanders, who very boldly ask'd, *What are you for, Peace, or War?* The Adelantado by his Interpreter answer'd, He was not for War, as only intending to pass through, and should do no other Harm, but desire Provisions. They reply'd, There was no Occasion to make them Prisoners, if that were all their Business, for they would treat them better than the others had done at *Apalache*; and accordingly they sent some Servants to order the People to come in and serve the *Spaniards*, whom they conducted to a better Town, whither the Cazique came to ratify the Peace, which was punctually observ'd, during three Days they stay'd there. From thence they advanc'd ten Days Northward, along the Banks of a River, the Country fruitful, and the Natives peaceable, who behav'd themselves friendly. They came into the Province of *Achalaqui*, which is poor, barren, and thinly inhabited, having few young *Indians*, the old ones short sighted, and many quite blind. Proceeding thence in haste to get out of that Country, the next they came to was *Cofachi*, the Adelantado among other Things giving the Cazique Boars, and Sows to breed, for he brought above three hundred of them into *Florida*, which increas'd

312 *The HISTORY of America.*

very much, none being kill'd, because they found Plenty of Provisions. It was the *Adelantado's* Custom, before he enter'd any Province, to send Word to the Lord of it, and offer Peace, that they might not be frighted at the Sight of such strange People, besides that it was always his Intention rather to make use of fair than foul means. Having accordingly sent a Message to the Lord of *Cofa*, he comply'd, and came out to meet the *Spaniards*, appointing them all their Quarters himself, where they rested five Days, the Lord requiring it, and they had Plenty of all Things, the Land being fruitful, and the Natives peaceable. The next Province belong'd to a Brother of *Cofa*, whose Name was *Cofaqui*, who came out to meet the Forces, with many of his People, all finely dress'd with Plumes of Feathers, and rich Mantles of Sables, and other valuable Furs, where when the *Spaniards* were quarter'd, the Cazique went away to another Town, to leave that entirely to them. The next Day the Cazique *Cofaqui* return'd, offering arm'd *Indians*, and Provisions, to pass a Desert of seven Days Journey to *Cofachiqui*, and immediately came four thousand *Indians* to carry Burdens, and the like Number arm'd. There was much Store of Mayz, which in those Parts is us'd as Wheat is among us, as also much dry Fruit, but no Flesh, for they had none but what they hunted. The *Adelantado* seeing so great a Number of Men, was upon his Guard, like a good Soldier, and discreet Man. The Cazique told a Commander, who was to lead his Forces, that since he knew the antient Enmity there was between him, and the People of *Cofachiqui*, he should not let slip that Opportunity, when he was supported by those brave Strangers, but execute his utmost Revenge on them. That *Indian*, taking off a Mantle of Furs he had on, flourish'd a two-handed-wooden Sword he wore as Captain-General,

telling

The HISTORY of *America*. 313

telling the Lord, what he intended to do in his Service; and the Cazique took off a rich Mantle of Sables, thought to be worth in *Spain* one thousand Ducats, which he put upon his General; which giving of the Mantle and Plume of Feathers was the greatest Favour those Lords could bestow. The Night before they set out, two *Indians*, the one call'd *Mark*, and the other *Peter*, tho' they were not Baptiz'd, being as familiar as if they had been *Spaniards*, cry'd out, that *Peter* was in Danger to be kill'd. All the Forces were immediately at Arms, and found *Peter* quaking, who said, That the Devil, attended by many of his Companions, had threatned to kill him, in case he conducted the *Spaniards* as he had promis'd; that he had dragg'd and beaten him, so unmercifully, that had they not come in to his Assistance, he would have kill'd him, and since the great Devil had fled from two Christians, he desir'd they would Baptize him, that he might be a Christian as well as they. This appear'd to be no Fiction by the Bruises, and Swellings, whereupon the *Adelantado* deliver'd him to the Priests, who stay'd with him all Night, Baptiz'd him, and the next Day he was mounted a Horseback, because of his Hurts.

THE two Armies march'd a-part, the *Indian* with a Van, and Rear Guard, and those that carry'd Burdens in the Center, in excellent Order, and at Night they lay asunder, keeping Guards. The third Days Journey from *Cofaqui*, they enter'd upon the Desert, travell'd six more thro' it, the Country agreeable, and forded two rapid Rivers, making as it were a Wall with the Horses, from the one Side to the other, and by their Help they all pass'd safe. The seventh Day, both *Spaniards* and *Indians* were in much Confusion, for the great Road they had follow'd was at an End, so that they knew not which way to take in that Wilderness. *Ferdinand de Soto* ask'd the *Indian*

dian General, How it could be possible that among eight thousand Men he had there, no one should be able to lead them out of that Distress, and that having been always at War with those Nations they were then going to, they should all be unacquainted with the Place they were in? He answer'd, That no Man among them had ever been there, and that their Wars had never been manag'd with compleat Armies, but that they kill'd and made one another Prisoners whensoever they hapned to meet at the Fisheries on the Rivers, or in Hunting, wherein those of *Cofachiqui* having prov'd most successful, his Countrymen did not go so far, which was the reason of their being unacquainted with the Country; and if he suspected any Fraud, he might rest satisfy'd, that neither his Lord, nor himself, being both Men of Probity, could ever be guilty of such a Thought; for farther Security whereof he might take what Hostages he thought fit, and if that were not sufficient, he would be content that he should cut off his Head, and those of all his Men, whensoever he found them faulty. The Adelantado was satisfy'd with this Answer, and then call'd *Peter*, the *Indian*, who was also at a Loss, because he had not been there in five Years. They march'd on the remaining Part of the Day, as they found the Woods most passable, without knowing any thing of the Way, and came to a great River, that could not be forded, which was an Addition to their Sorrow, for that having only seven Days Provision, it would not hold out till they could make Floats to pass over the River. The next Day the Adelantado sent out four Parties, two of them up and down the River, and the other two up the Country, ordering them to return within five Days, with an Account of what they found. With each of those Parties of *Spaniards* went one thousand *Indians*, to endeavour to find out

some

The HISTORY of America. 315

Some Way. The *Indians* that carry'd Burdens went out in the Morning with their Arms, and return'd at Night with Herbs, Roots, Birds, some small Land Animals, and a little Fish, of which they gave the *Spaniards* part, but all this was inconsiderable, whereupon having held out with hungry Bellies, the *Adelantado* order'd some Swine to be kill'd, and eight Ounces to be distributed to every Man, including the *Indians*, which was only protracting their Misery, and yet all show'd wonderful Patience, because the Commander in Chief gave them a good Example. The Companies sent out to discover march'd six Days, and three of them found nothing; but *John de Anasco*, who commanded the fourth, and went up the River met with a Town seated on the same Side of it as he was, which tho' small, had good Store of Provisions, and higher still saw several Towns, and Land sow'd. He sent back four Horsemen to carry this good News to the Forces, and by them many Ears of *Zara*, and some Cows Horns, without knowing whence they came, for till then they had seen no Cows. The *Indian* General *Patosa*, and his Men, the first Night they lay in that Town, kill'd all the Natives they could lay Hands on, took off their Skulls, and plunder'd the Temple, which was the Place of Burial, where they had the best of their Effects, this Town being in the Province of *Casabiqui*, where much Mischief was done by the other *Indians*, whereupon the *Adelantado* dismiss'd those People, to prevent any farther Injury being done under his Protection; and having given their General and other Commanders some Presents, with Provisions for their Journey, they went away well pleas'd.

Soto advanc'd through a pleasant, and plentiful Country, but abandon'd by the Natives, on Account of the Slaughters committed by his *Indian* Friends. Three Days after, to avoid going on at random, he

316 *The HISTORY of America.*

he sent *John Anasco*, with thirty Horfe, to make some Discovery in the Country. He fet out a little before Night, and having advanc'd somewhat above 2 Leagues, heard Dogs bark, and Children cry, and saw Lights, when preparing to feize some *Indian*, they perceiv'd that the Town was on the other Side of the River, they halted at a Place where Canoes us'd to come ashore, and when they had fed and rested their Horfes, return'd to give the Adelantado an Account of what they had found, and then he went with one hundred Horfe, and as many Foot to view the Town, the two Christian *Indians*, *Peter*, and *Mark*, calling to some *Indians* that fled at the Sight of the *Spaniards*. At the Call of those *Indians* six came over in a Canoe, the Adelantado being seated on a Chair, that was always carry'd for him to receive Compliments with State, as the Custom of those People requir'd. Those six *Indians* approaching made their Obeysance, first to the Sun, then to the Moon, and next to the Adelantado, and then said, Sir, Are you for Peace, or War? He bid the Interpreter tell them, he was for Peace, and requir'd nothing but Provisions, desiring they would excuse him for giving them that trouble. They reply'd, they accepted of Peace, but were concern'd about Provisions, for they had but little, by reason of a Plague; that they were Subjects to a Maiden Lady, whom they would acquaint with it. As soon as ever they had deliver'd their Message to her, two great Canoes were set out with Awnings, seven or eight Women went into one of them, and the former six Men in the other. Among the Women was the Lady, and being come to the Place where the Adelantado was, she sat down on a Stool they had carry'd for her, and after some Compliments, said, She was sorry for the Scarcity of Provisions there was in the Country, but that she had two Store-Houses for the Relief of the Needy, one of which she gave them,

them, and desir'd they would leave her the other ; for she had two thousand Bushels of Mayz in another Town, which she would also give him, and would quit her own House, and half the Town to quarter his Men, and if he requir'd it, it should be all clear'd. The Adelantado answer'd in most courteous manner, returning Thanks, and telling her he would be satisfy'd with what she pleas'd to give him. Whilst he was speaking, she took off a String of Beads she had round her Neck, and deliver'd it to the Interpreter *John Ortis*, to give to the Adelantado, saying, She did not give it with her own Hand to avoid transgressing against Modesty. The Adelantado stood up, receiv'd it with much Respect, and presented her with a Ruby he had on his Finger. Thus the Peace was ratify'd, the Lady went away, all the *Spaniards* admiring her Beauty, and good Behaviour. The Forces were carry'd over on Floats, and in Canoes, four Horses were drowned in the Passage ; the Forces were all quarter'd in the Middle of the Town, and the Adelantado enquiring into the Affairs of the Country, found it was extraordinary fruitful, and that the Lady's Mother liv'd retir'd like a Widow twelve Leagues from thence. Tho' her Daughter sent for her to see those strange People, she was so far from complying, that she reprov'd her for being so easy in admitting those she knew nothing of. The Adelantado sent *John de Anasco*, with thirty Horse, and an *Indian* of Quality to desire her to come. When they had travell'd some Leagues, they sat down under a Tree to eat, and the *Indian* Gentleman being very pensive, put off the Sable Mantle he had on, and one by one drew out of his Quiver the Arrows, which were of Reeds, most curiously wrought, headed with Deers-Bones that had three Points, and Fish-Bones, feather'd Triangularwise, and the Bow was dy'd with colour'd Bituminous Matter, which look'd like Enamel.

318 *The HISTORY of America.*

mel. The last Arrow the *Indian* drew out was headed with Flint, shap'd like the Point and Edge of a Dagger. He observing, that the *Spaniards* were intent upon observing those curious Arrows, cut his own Throat with that which had the Flint Head, and fell down dead, which the *Indians* said, they thought he had done, believing he was going on a Message that was disagreeable to the Widow. As they were going on, one of the *Spaniards* said to *John de Anasco*, that they went on blindly to seek for a Woman, who they had heard was remov'd to another Place, to hide herself from them; that since the Adelantado had the Daughter in his Power, he had no Occasion for the Mother, and that since, their Number being so small, they were expos'd to much Danger, it was better to return to the rest of the Forces. This Advice being well lik'd, they turn'd back. Three Days after, the Adelantado sent twenty *Spaniards* up the River in two Canoes, by the Advice of the Daughter, to seek for the Mother, an *Indian* offering to conduct them to the Place where she was. Those Men remembering that the two Christian Youths had said, there was much Gold and Silver in that Province, upon search found much Copper of a Golden Colour, and great Pieces of Oar, which were very light, and moulder'd like Earth, was perhaps what deceiv'd the young Men. A wonderful Quantity of Pearls was found, and the Lady gave them leave to go to an House they held as sacred, being the burial Place of the Nobility, and to take what Pearls were there, and those in another Temple near the Town, being the burial Place of her Forefathers, where they found great Plenty.

WHEN *John de Anasco* return'd, they found wooden Chests laid by in the Temple; in which were the Bodies of the Dead; for no other use being made of those Temples, or Houses, they regarded not the

the ill Scene. In Baskets made of Reeds there were abundance of large and seed Pearls, as also Garments for Men and Women, of Furs, and Skins; the King's Officers soon weigh'd five hundred Weight of Pearls. The Adelantado order'd, that the Forces should not be encumber'd with Loads, since half an hundred Weight would be sufficient to send to the *Havens*, to know their Fineness and Value; however the Officers desir'd, that since they were weigh'd, he would permit them to be carry'd, to which he consented, and gave the Captains two Handfuls of them, to make Beads, for they were as large as Peas. Going on to another Town, call'd *Tolomeco*, on the upper Part, opposite to the Palace, was an House, or Temple, where they found very large Strings of Beads hanging, and others in Chests, with many very fine Garments, like those before-mention'd, and in Rooms about the Charnel, which is the proper Name, there were great Numbers of Pikes, with Copper Heads, that look'd like Gold, Clubs, Staves, and Axes of the same Metal, Bows, Arrows, Targets, and Breast-plates. The Adelantado would take none, resolving to march on, and accordingly took his Leave of the Lady of *Cofachiqui*, dividing the Forces into two Parts, for the Conveniency of Provisions, the one under the Adelantado, and the other under *Baltasar de Gallegos*. Thus they mov'd towards the Province of *Chalague*, and the next Day there was such a Storm of Wind, Lightning, and Hail, as big as Pigeon's Eggs, that had not they taken Shelter under the Trees, many of them had perish'd. The sixth Day they came into the Vale of *Xanla*, a pleasant Country to the North-North-East, and talking of the River at *Cofachiqui*, the Sailors said, They believ'd it to be the same that on the Coast of the North-Sea is call'd *St. Ellen's*, and according to the Computation of four Leagues a Day's March, it appear'd that the Forces

320 *The HISTORY of America.*

Forces had advanc'd from *Apalache* to *Xaula* two hundred Leagues, which with a hundred and fifty from the Bay of the Holy Ghost to *Apalache*, made four hundred and ten Leagues. In the Province of *Cofachiqui* there were many foreign *Indian* Slaves, taken in War, whom they put to tilling the Ground, and other Sorts of Labour, and that they might not run away, they us'd to cut their Heels, or some Sinews in their Legs, so that they were all Lame.

C H A P. IV.

Continuation of the Progress of Ferdinand de Soto, in the Province of Florida.

THE Forces rested a Fortnight in the Vale of *Xaula*, subject to the Lady of *Cofachiqui*, tho' a sepearte Province, there being plenty of all Things, and in order to recruit the Horses; after which they march'd one Day, through an agreeable Country, and five over a desert Mountain, tho' not disagreeable, having many Groves, Waters, and Pasture Grounds, the way over it being about twenty Leagues. Four *Indian* Gentlemen went with them by Order of the Lady of *Cofachiqui*, sent to tell the Lord of *Guanale*, that he should be kind to the *Spaniards*, and in case of Refusal to declare War. On their March, *John Terron*, a Foot Soldier pull'd out of a Waller, a little Bag full of large Pearls, not bor'd, and well colour'd, which he offer'd to an Horseman, who refus'd them, bidding him keep them, for that their

General

The HISTORY of *America*. 371

General design'd to send to *Havana*, where he might have an Horse bought for them, to ease him from marching a-foot. Hereupon the Owner threw them out on the Ground, because they were a Trouble to him, and others pick'd them up, which he afterwards repented, for it was judg'd, that they would have been worth six thousand Ducats in *Spain*. The Army stay'd four Days at *Guaxale*, and in five more reach'd *Tchiaba*, a Town seated in an Island on a River, above five Leagues in Length, where the General still inquiring about the Country; as was his Custom, *Tchiaba* told him, That thirty Leagues farther there were Mines of yellow Metal, whereupon two *Spaniards* were sent to view them, and the Cazique presented the Adelantado with a long String of large Pearls, which, if they had not been stor'd, would have been of extraordinary Value, and the Adelantado seeming to value them, that Lord told him, there were very many at the Burial-Place of his Ancestors, which if he pleas'd he might freely take. In return the Adelantado gave him some Pieces of Sattin and Velvet, which much oblig'd the Cazique. The next Day Men were sent out to fish for Oysters in the River, and soon brought a great Quantity, which they laid on the Fire, where they open'd, and the Pearls were taken out somewhat damag'd by the Heat. A Soldier boiling some of the Oysters, said, That as he was eating them, he had almost broke his Teeth with a Pearl as big as an Hazle-Nut; which he presented to the Adelantado for his Lady, because it was bright, and well shap'd; he refus'd it, bidding him keep it to buy Horses, and in return for his good Will, paid the King's Fifth out of his own Money, which was valu'd at four hundred Ducats. *Soto* was generous, and knew how to oblige the Soldiers, making no Distinction between himself and them, in eating, cloathing, and enduring Hardships.

ships. Those that went to the Mines returning, reported that they were of Copper, the Soil fruitful, and that they had been well entertain'd.

The *Spaniards* departing from *Tchiaha*, advanc'd to *Acofte*, where the Lord receiv'd them with ill Looks, and the *Indians* proving refractory, there had like to have ensu'd an open Breach; but the Adelantado prevented it, to continue the Peace he had preserv'd since his coming from *Apalache*. The next Day the *Indians* became better humour'd, and having contented them, the Adelantado cross'd the River, where he enter'd into the large Province of *Coza*, very populous and fruitful, the *Spaniards* were receiv'd in a peaceable manner, and march'd one hundred Leagues through it, all the way well treated, and quarter'd. At *Coza*, the Cazique came out to meet the Adelantado, attended by one thousand *Indians*, wearing Plumes of Feathers, and rich Mantles of Furs. The Town consisted of about five hundred Houses along the River Side, where they were very much made of, and the Cazique dining one Day with *Ferdinand de Soto*, pray'd him to winter in his Country, which was better Land than that he had pass'd through, and to establish a Colony in it. He return'd many Thanks, and said, It was requisite for him to know what there was up the Country, for carrying on Trade, and bringing over Seeds and other Necessaries, for which reason, he would first take a View of those Provinces, and afterwards accept of his Favour. Having stay'd there twelve Days, rather to oblige the Lord, than on any other Account, he set out making towards the Sea, which he had design'd long before, marching about in a Semi-circle, to come to the Port of *Anchusi*. In five Days he came to *Talissi*, a Town fortify'd with Intrenchments made of Timber and Earth, on the Frontiers of the Lord of *Tascaluza*, an Enemy to *Coza*, who, to terrify him, went so

far

far with the *Spaniards*. Thither came a Son of *Tascaluza*, eighteen Years of Age, and so tall, that no *Spaniard's* Head reach'd above his Breast, who offer'd his Father's Friendship. *Tascaluza* receiv'd the *Spaniards*, sitting on a Chair, after their Manner, with abundance of Men standing about him, and tho' the Commanders came up to pay him Obeysance, no Man stirr'd, till the Adelantado came, when the Cazique stood up, and advanc'd twenty Paces, to meet him. He was taller than his Son, like a Giant, well shap'd, and of a good Aspect. The Forces were well quarter'd and treated, and set out again the third Day, when *Tascaluza* would go with them, and one of the Adelantado's Baggage Horses was pick'd out to carry him, and when mounted, his Feet were not a Span above the Ground, not that he was far, his Waste being under a Yard, nor old, for he was not above forty.

THEY came to a fortify'd Town, cross'd the River with some Difficulty by reason they were ill furnish'd with Floats, took up their Quarters, and missing two *Spaniards*, suspected they were kill'd, because enquiring of the *Indians* for them, they ask'd in an haughty Manner, whether they had been given to them in keeping. Upon this Jealousy, the Adelantado sent three notable *Spaniards* to take a view of *Mavila*, a League and half from thence, where, it was said the Cazique had assembled a great Number of Men, on Pretence of serving the *Spaniards* the better. Those Discoverers returning, reported, that they had seen no Body by the Way, but that *Mavila* was a fortify'd Town, and they had not seen such another in those Parts. The Adelantado led the Van with one hundred Horse, and one hundred and fifty Foot, *Tascaluza* bearing him Company, he made haste, and came to the Place at Eight in the Morning, the rest of the Troops marching more slowly, by reason of the Peace.

324 *The HISTORY of America.*

The Town consisted of eighty Houses, but each of them could contain one thousand Men, seated in a Plain, enclos'd with Piles drove down, and Timbers athwart, ramm'd with long Straw and Earth between the hollow Spaces, so that it look'd like a Wall smooth'd with a Mason's Truel, and at every eighty Paces distance was a Tower where eight Men could fight, with many Loop-holes, and two Gates, and in the Midst of the Town was a large Square, into which the Lord of *Tascaluzza*, and the Adelantado being come, as soon as alighted, the former said to the Interpreter, The General shall take up his Quarters in that House, with as many as he pleases, and may have his Kitchen in that other; there are Huts and Barracks provided without the Town for the rest. The Adelantado answer'd, that as soon as his Major-General came, he would distribute the Quarters, and then *Tascaluzza* went into an House, where he had commanded his Officers to assemble, in order to kill all the *Spaniards*, as he had intended long before. It was propos'd among those People to cut them off as they were divided, before the rest could join those in the Town; but their Opinion prevail'd, who advis'd to take them all together, for which Purpose they had a great Number of Men in the Houses. When the Meat was dress'd, *John Ortiz*, the Interpreter went to call *Tascaluzza*, but they would not let him in, to deliver his Message, whereupon he pressing to have him go speedily, out came an *Indian*, in an outrageous manner, crying, *What would these unmannerly People have with my Lord? Down with these Villains, there is no entering of them.* No sooner had he spoke these Words, but a Bow was put into his Hand, and he casting his Mantle over his Shoulder, levell'd at some *Spaniards* that were in the Street, but *Baltasar de Gallegos*, who hapned to be by the Door, gave him a cut

The HISTORY of *America*. 325

on the left Shoulder, that clove him down to the Waste.

THE Moment that the *Indian* was kill'd, the Alarm was given, and above seven thousand of those People sallying out of the Houses drove the few *Spaniards* that were in the great Street, out of the Town. As soon as *Baltasar de Gallegos* had given the afore said Cut, an *Indian* Youth, in a Moment let fly six or seven Arrows at him, which did him no Hurt, because he was in Armour; after which the young Fellow gave him three or four Strokes on the Helmer, with his Bow, which broke his Head, but he kill'd him with two Thrusts of his Sword. The *Spaniards* that manag'd best, ran to mount their Horses, that wery ty'd, without the Town, others cut their Halters, or Reins, that the *Indians* might not shoot them; those that could not get out, left them ty'd, and they were kill'd by the *Indians*, who plunder'd the Baggage that was come up, and lay about the Plain, waiting for Quarters. The *Spaniards* that could mount, with some others that were just come, charg'd the *Indians* that were ingag'd with their Infantry, making Room for them to draw up, and then a Troop of Horse, and a Company of Foot, fell so furiously upon the *Indians*, that they drove them into the Town, and then attempting to get in at the Gate, there came such a Volley of Arrows and Stones, that they were oblig'd to retire, when the *Indians* sally'd with such Fury, that they made the *Spaniards* retire two hundred Paces, but without turning their Backs, for therein consisted their Safety. They then again gave a fresh Charge, and drove the *Indians* to the Town, not daring to come too near the Wall, and thus the Fight continu'd, gaining and losing Ground, several being kill'd and wounded. The *Indians* finding that they had the worst of it in the open Field, kept in the

326 *The HISTORY of America.*

Town, and defended their Walls. The Adelantado alighted, ordering some Horsemen to do so, and attack the Place with Targets, when two hundred Men, with their Axes hew'd down the Gate, and rush'd in, tho' not without much Hazard and Loss. Others battering the Timber, the Earth that was between them fell out, and thus the hollow Parts, and Ligaments being laid open, they mounted that Way, helping one another, and hastening to succour those that had gain'd the Gate. The *Indians* seeing the *Spaniards* in the Town, which they had look'd upon as impregnable, fought desperately and did harm from the Tops of the Houses, and Galleries, for which reason they were fir'd.

Ferdinand de Soto having thus enter'd the Town, like a brave and experienc'd Commander, mounted his Horse again, and charg'd a Body of the Enemy in the Market-place, killing many with his Spear, but as he rais'd himself on his Stirrups to strike, an Arrow pierc'd through his Armour, and penetrated into his Buttock, yet he to avoid discouraging the Men, fought as long as the Action lasted, standing all the while upon his Stirrups. Another Arrow pierc'd quite through *Nuño de Tovar's* Spear, near his Hand, and yet the Staff did not break, but the Arrow being cut off, serv'd again. The Fire grew fierce in the Houses, where great Numbers of *Indians* perish'd. The Fight lasted till Four in the Afternoon, when the *Indians* being sensible of their own weakness, turn'd out the Women, who had fought with the Spears, Swords, and Partesans the *Spaniards* had lost, and some with Bows and Arrows, as dexterously as their Husbands, and some with Stones, boldly exposing themselves to Death. The foremost of the other *Spanish* Forces, who were on their March, little thinking what had hapned, hearing the Noise of the Trumpets, Drums, and Shouts, gave the Alarm, for the rest to haste forward,

ward, and came up towards the latter End of the Engagement. Many *Indians* got over the Wall into the Field, attempting to make Head, but were kill'd. When the Forces were come up, about twelve Horsemen charg'd a Body of Men and Women, that were still fighting in the Market-place, and soon routed them, and thus the fight ended about Sun-setting, when it had lasted nine Hours, being on St. *Luke's* Day, this Year 1541. The *Adelantado* order'd the Dead to be bury'd, and the best Care that could be to be taken of the wounded, some of whom dy'd, for want of proper Necessaries, there being no Rowlers, nor Lint, nor Medicines, nor Oyl, for all these Things being among the Baggage, with the spare Cloaths for Winter, had been plunder'd by the *Indians*, and carry'd into the Town, where all was burnt. Forty-eight *Spaniards* were kill'd in the Fight, thirteen more dy'd of their Wounds presently, and twenty-two some time after, so that the whole loss amounted to eighty-three Men, and forty-five Horses, which last were sufficiently lamented, as being their main Strength. Of the *Indians* it was reckned that eleven thousand perish'd, for near four thousand were found without the Town, and among them young *Tascaluza*. The Streets of the Town were so full of dead Bodies, that they were computed to be above three thousand, and it was taken for certain that upwards of four thousand were consum'd by the Fire in the Houses, for above one thousand perish'd in one House, the Fire beginning at the Door, so that they were all stifled. The *Spaniards* riding out to scour the Country, found many that had dy'd of their Wounds four Leagues about the Place. *Tascaluza's* Body could not be found, whence it was concluded that he perish'd in the Flames, he having premeditated what he did, from the very first Advice he receiv'd of the *Spaniards*. The Women that escap'd,

328 *The HISTORY of America.*

said, that the *Indians* of *Talisse* complaining because their Lord commanded them to carry the Burdens of the *Spaniards*, *Tascaluza* bid them not to be concern'd, for he would soon deliver them up to be their Slaves. This they affirm'd, and added, that they were Strangers, and came thither with their Husbands who had been summon'd by *Tascaluza*, promising to give them Scarlet and Silk Cloaths, Jewels to adorn them at their Dances, and the Horses, as well as the *Spaniards* themselves; that all the Women, marry'd and single went, being assur'd, that after the Destruction of the *Spaniards*, there should be an extraordinary Festival celebrated, in Honour of the Sun, who was to assist them. The *Spaniards* sustain'd another Loss, which they much lamented, being the burning of three Bushels of *Spanish* Wheat, a little Wine, their Chalice, and Vestments for saying Mass, so that afterwards they were oblig'd only to read Prayers, and Preach, without any Consecration, and so they continu'd till they return'd among Christians.

DURING a Fortnight they stay'd at *Mavila*, which was the Name of that Town, making Excursions into the Country, they found plenty of Provisions, and were inform'd by twenty *Indians* taken Prisoners, that there were none left to take up Arms, because all the bravest Men had been kill'd in the Battle. Here they receiv'd Advice, that *Maldonado*, and *Gomez Arias*, were upon Discovery along the Coast, and the *Adelantado* had Thoughts of Planting a Colony at *Achinsí*, to carry on a Trade with another he intended to found twenty Leagues up the Country, which was obstructed by others, who thought the *Spaniards* too few, considering the Fierceness of the *Florida Indians*, by the Experience of the Battle of *Mavila*, to subdue such warlike People; besides that there was no reason to run such Hazards, without Hopes of any Reward, since there were no Mines in all the vast Tract

of

The HISTORY of *America*. 329

of Land they had travell'd over. This was very perplexing to *Ferdinand de Soto*, because he had spent all his Substance, and was afraid that his Men would forsake him, if he came near the Coast, when he was not in a Condition to raise new Forces, whereupon he resolv'd to penetrate up the Country, and being disgusted to see all his Projects disappointed, from that Time forward never succeeded in any thing he undertook. When the sick and wounded were in a Condition to travel, he set out from *Mavila*, march'd three Days through a good Country, and enter'd the Province of *Chioza*, where they would not receive him in peaceable manner, for the Natives having abandon'd their Town, had taken Post to defend the Pass of a very deep River, that had many craggy Places in it, and soon after above eight thousand of them appear'd, several Parties of whom came over in Canoes, and gave Onsets; but the Adelantado caus'd Trenches to be made, where the Cross-bow-men, Musketeers, and Targeteers lay conceal'd, and when the *Indians* came over fell in upon their Rear, which having been done twice, they forbore those Attempts. There being no Way to make any Advantage of the *Indians*, two very large Piraguas were privately built in twelve Days, and then drawn out of the Wood, by Horses, Mules, and the *Spaniards* themselves, and having laid Roulers under them, they were launch'd one Morning, before the *Indians* perceiv'd any thing of it. The Horses, and forty Musketeers, and Cross-bow-men being put aboard each of them, tho' they us'd the utmost Diligence in crossing the River, they were descry'd by five hundred *Indians*, that were scouring the Country, who with loud Cries gave the Alarm to the rest, and they immediately came up to make good the Pass. The *Spaniards*, tho' most of them wounded, the *Indians* shooting at a sure Mark, reach'd the Shore, one of their Piraguas at the Landing-Place,

330 *The HISTORY of America.*

Place, but the other having been drove below it, was oblig'd to tug up again. Two Horsemen landing, drove the *Indians* above two hundred Paces from the Landing-Place, and charg'd them four several Times before any Relief came to them, the others being in Confusion without knowing how to Land; till at length, four more Horsemen recover'd the Shore, which made six, and after several Onsets, the Foot Soldiers being all wounded took into a Town there was. The Adelantado pass'd over at the second Time, with sixty Men, when the *Indians* seeing the Number of the *Spaniards* increase, retir'd to a Fort they had, whence they sally'd to skirmish; but the Horsemen killing them with their Spears, the rest at Night quitted that Post.

The *Spaniards* then broke up the Piraguas, keeping the Iron-work, and advanc'd farther, after four Days march arriving at *Chicoza*, a Town well seated between Brooks, with Abundance of Fruit-Trees. There they resolv'd to stay the remaining Part of the Winter, having gather'd all the Provisions they could, made Huts, and fortify'd the Place. Here they continu'd almost two Months in Peace, the Horsemen scouring abroad for Provisions, the *Indians* that hapned to be taken being presently set at Liberty, with some Baubles given them, and Presents sent to their Lords, desiring them to repair to the Town. They return'd Presents of Fruit, intimating that they would go see the Governour, soon after which, the *Indians* began every Night to alarm the *Spaniards*, and when they thought they had kept them long enough watching, three Bodies of them advanc'd about Midnight in very silent manner, till being within one hundred Paces from the Quarters, they discover'd themselves with mighty Shouts, and Noise of their warlike Instruments, and Lights of a certain Plant, which, when shaken, burns like Straw,

then

The HISTORY of *America*. 331

then fixing Wreaths of it to their Arrows, they fir'd the Town, the Houses being all Thatch'd. The *Spaniards* not being dismay'd at this Accident, repair'd regularly to their respective Posts, and the Adelantado was the first that appear'd with his Head-piece, and the Cotton Armour call'd an *Escampil*, for he always lay in his Cloaths, and being mounted, and follow'd by others, they could not come at the Enemy for the Fire, yet he was the first that kill'd an *Indian*, for wheresoever there was any Action he gave a wonderful Example. Some sick *Spaniards* were burnt, and some Horses, but Capt. *Andrew de Vasconcelos*, with four Horsemen falling in furiously, made the Enemy retire, where the Engagement had been hottest. The Adelantado being eager to wound an *Indian* that particularly signaliz'd himself, lean'd forward so much to reach him, that he fell from his Horse, together with the Saddle, but being bravely rescu'd, and mounted again, he return'd to the Fight. At length the *Indians* dreading the *Spanish* Swords, and Spears, fled, being pursu'd as far as the Light of the Fire could extend, and then the Adelantado sounded a Retreat, after having been two Hours in the Action. Forty *Spaniards* were lost, and fifty Horses, twenty of them burnt; all the Swine perish'd also in the Flames, except some few that broke through the Enclosure of a Yard, where they were shut up. Prodigious Shots of Arrows were observ'd, especially one, that pierc'd both the Blade-Bones of an Horse, and came out four Fingers on the farther Side, which was astonishing, tho' many very extraordinary had been seen before. The Adelantado thought fit to remove his Quarters to *Chicasolla*, as being a better Place for the Horses, but one League distant, where when they had fortify'd themselves, they made Saddles, Spears, Targets, and Cloaths for themselves of Goats-Skins, because all they had was burnt, and there they spent

332 *The HISTORY of America.*

spent the rest of the Winter, enduring much Hardship, for want of Cloathing, the Weather being very cold.

C H A P. V.

A farther Continuation of the Adelantado Ferdinand de Soto's Progress in Florida in the Year 1542.

THE *Indians* being sensible that they had done the *Spaniards* much Harm, return'd again a few Days after; but the great Rain that fell having wetted their Bow-Strings, they went off again, as was own'd by an *Indian* that hapned to be taken; however they came every Night to give the Alarm, and always wounded some Body, notwithstanding that the Horsemen scour'd the Country four Leagues round, who could meet no Natives, and it was wonderful how those People could come from so far to make a Disturbance. In that poor Condition, as has been said, the *Spaniards* shifted till about the latter End of *March 1542*, when they mov'd from thence, and having march'd four Leagues, the Fore-runners return'd, saying, They had seen a Fort, in which there might be about four thousand Men. The Adelantado having view'd it, told the Soldiers, It was requisite to dislodge those People, who would otherwise pester them with Parties in the Night; besides, that they were oblig'd to do it to preserve the Reputation they had gain'd in so many Provinces. The Fort was call'd *Alibamo*, being Square, the
Length

The HISTORY of America. 333

Length of each Side four hundred Paces, and the Gates so low, that Horsemen could not ride in, the manner of it like that before describ'd at *Mavila*. The *Adelantado* commanded three Captains with their Companies, to attack the Gates, those that were best arm'd leading the Van, and as they were just ready to give the Assault, one thousand Men sall'y'd, adorn'd with Plumes of Feathers, and their Bodies and Faces painted of several Colours, who at the first flight shot five *Spaniards*, three of which Number dy'd of their Wounds. The *Spaniards* to prevent the *Indians* spending more Arrows, clos'd with, drove them to the Gates, and enter'd Pelmel, making a most dreadful Havock with their Swords, as may be imagin'd on naked Men, who in that Distress, threw themselves down from the Walls, and there fell into the Hands of the Horsemen, who stuck them with their Spears. Others endeavour'd to make their Escape by swimming a River that was behind the Fort; and one *Indian* that stay'd without the Wall, call'd to and challeng'd *John de Salinas*, who, tho' his Comrade offer'd to cover him with his Target, refus'd it, thinking it a Shame for two to ingage one. The *Spaniard* shot his Shaft through the *Indian's* Breast, so that he fell, and the *Indian's* Arrow went through *Salinas's* Neck. A Squadron of Horse pass'd the River, and kill'd many, so that the whole Number of the slain was thought to amount to two thousand.

The *Spaniards* now wanted Salt, which was very Prejudicial, for they fell into lingring Fevers, of which some dy'd, and their Bodies stunk so violently, that there was no coming near them. The *Indians* taught them a Remedy against this Evil, which was burning a Sort of Herb, of the Ashes whereof they made a Sort of Lye, dipping what they had to eat in it, like Sauce, and found it preserv'd them. There
was

334 *The HISTORY of America.*

was much Trouble about Interpreters, because they were forc'd to use thirteen or fourteen besides *John Ortiz*, by reason of the great Diversity of Languages, in the several Provinces; but the Women of the Country when they had been two Months with the *Spaniards* understood them. Having march'd three Days from *Alibamo*, they came to *Chisca*, upon a River, which they call'd *el Grande*, or the Great, because it was the largest they had yet seen. Most of the Inhabitants of this Town were taken, as having been surpriz'd; some made their Escape to the Lord's House, which stood on a Ridge, to which there was no Way up but by Stairs. He was old, and sick, yet got up, and was coming down the Stairs, threatening the *Spaniards* with Death; but his Women, and Servants stopp'd him. The Place not being proper for the Horsemen, because they had not room to wheel, besides that *Ferdinand de Soto* was always inclin'd to carry on his Designs by fair means, he very courteously offer'd Peace. Above four thousand *Indians* were drawn together in less than three Hours, among whom there was difference in Opinions, some according to their natural Fierceness being for War, to recover their Wives and Children; but the wiser sort, said it was better to make Peace, by which they might retrieve their Losses without Blood-shed, and save the Destruction of their Corn, which was then ripe. This Advice prevail'd, and Peace was concluded, upon Condition, that the *Spaniards* should not go up to the Lord's House. The Prisoners were set at Liberty, the Plunder restor'd, and the *Spaniards* were furnish'd with Provisions. When they had rested sixteen Days in that Town, for the sake of the sick, and gain'd the Friendship of the Caziique, the Forces march'd four Days to find a Place to pass the River, because all the Banks were close wooded, and upright, and tho'

above

The HISTORY of America. 335

above six thousand *Indians*, with Abundance of Canoes, appear'd on the other Side to defend that Bank, it was thought necessary to go over. The next Day four *Indians* came, who after paying Adoration to the Sun, and Moon, and their Respect to the Adelantado, said, They came from the Lord of the Province he was in, to bid him welcome, and offer his Friendship. *Soto* return'd a courteous Answer, and was well supply'd as long as he stay'd there; but the Lord could never be seen, still excusing himself with want of Health, and it was found, that this Peace was concluded to save the Harvest, which was then ready to be carry'd home. In fifteen Days two large Piraguas were finish'd to cross the River, some Damage having been receiv'd in the mean Time by the Canoes plying up and down, but they return'd it by means of their Men lying conceal'd behind Trenches. The Piraguas held one hundred and fifty Foot, and thirty Horse, who went aboard them in Sight of the *Indians*, and ply'd up and down with Oars and Sails, so that those People being astonish'd at those great Machines, abandon'd their Post. Having pass'd the River, they discover'd a Town of about four hundred Houses, seated on high Ridges, near another River, and about spacious Fields of *Indian* Wheat, and several Sorts of Fruit, where the *Spaniards* were well receiv'd, and the Lord, whose Name was *Casquin*, sent to compliment them. Here they rested six Days, and then proceeded up along the Bank of the River, through a plentiful and populous Country, till they came to the Lord's Town, who entertain'd the Forces very willingly.

WHEN the Forces had been three Days at *Casquin*, the Lord went to the Adelantado, and after having made Obeysance to the Sun, and to him, said, He knew the *Spaniards* had a better God than the *Indians*,

336 *The HISTORY of America.*

dians, since he gave so small a Number Victory over many, for which reason he begg'd, he would pray to him that it might Rain, because they were in want of Water. The Adelantado answer'd, That, tho' all those *Spaniards* were Sinners, they would pray to God to shew his usual Mercy; and then order'd a Cross to be erected on an Hill, whither all the Forces, except only a Parry left to guard the Quarters, went in Procession, as did the Cazique, with some *Indians*, the Priests singing the Litanies, and the Soldiers answering; being come to the Cross many Prayers were said, on their Knees, and then they return'd to their Quarters, singing Psalms; above twenty thousand Souls gazing at what the *Spaniards* did from the other Side of the River, now and then giving great Shouts, as it were begging of God to hear them. It pleas'd God to hear their humble Prayers, for at Midnight, such a Rain fell, that the *Indians* were very well satisfy'd, and the Christians return'd Thanks for that Mercy. Nine Days after, they set out from thence, in Company with the Lord, and a great Number of *Indians* carrying Water, and other Necessaries. He had also with him five thousand arm'd *Indians*, because he was at War with the next Cázique, and thought to make use of the Opportunity of the *Spaniards* assisting him. They spent three Days in passing a Morass, and then came in Sight of *Capaha*, which being the Frontier Town to *Casquin*, was fortify'd with a Ditch forty Fathoms wide, and ten in Depth, full of Water, convey'd to it through a Canal from the great River, being the Distance of three Leagues. The Ditch enclos'd three Parts of the Town, the fourth being secur'd with high and thick Palisades. When the Lord of *Capaha* spy'd his Enemies, being unprovided at that Time, he went away in a Canoe along the Canal to an Island he had fortify'd in the great River. Many follow'd him, and the rest perish'd

by

The HISTORY of *America*. 337

by the Hands of the *Casquines*, who took the Skulls of those they kill'd, to carry them home as Trophies. They plunder'd the Town, took many Prisoners, and particularly two beautiful Wives of *Capaha*; went to the Burial-Place of his Ancestors, tore it in Pieces, trampled on the Bones of the dead, and recover'd the Skulls of their own Countrymen, which were hung up there in Token of Victory. All this was done before the Adelantado came up, *Casquin* having never told him any thing of that Enmity, who would have burnt the Town and the Burial-Place, had he not thought it would offend that Commander, who being told of *Capaha's* Flight, sent to offer him Peace by the Prisoners, which he would not admit, resolving to be reveng'd on his Enemies. *Casquin* being inform'd that the Adelantado was making Preparations against *Capaha*, desir'd him to stay till sixty Canoes arriv'd, that were coming up the River from his Country, and would be of use to carry on the War against the Island. The Army march'd with the Front extending a Mile in Length, the *Casquines* wasting the Country, and by the Way found some of their Countrymen, who were there in Captivity, and tho' *Lame*, for, as has been said, they did cut their Sinews, that they might not run away, yet they recover'd their Liberry. Being come to the Island, they found it fortify'd with strong Palisades, and on another Side the Thickness of the Briars and Brambles obstructed their entering. The Adelantado order'd two hundred of his own Men, and the *Casquines* to endeavour to Land. One *Spaniard* was there drowned, endeavouring to be the first that landed, but the rest behav'd themselves well, that they gain'd the first Palisades, which put the Women and Children into such a Consternation that they gave a mighty Skreek. Much Opposition was made at the second Work, wherein con-

338 *The HISTORY of America.*

sisted the Safety of all the Defendants, the *Capaha's* calling the *Casquin's* Scoundrels, asking them, when they had the Courage before to come to that Place? And threatening, that the Strangers would be gone, and then they should pay for all. This struck such a Terror into the *Casquins*, that notwithstanding all their Lord's Threats, they fled in the forty Canoes, and would have carry'd off the other twenty, had not two *Spaniards* that were left in each defended them with their Swords.

THE *Spaniards* thus forsaken by the *Indians*, and having no Horses, began to retire, and when the Enemies would have pursu'd them, *Capaha* would not permit it, thinking that a proper Opportunity to imbrace the Peace he had before rejected. The next Day, without taking any Notice of *Casquin*, he sent four *Indians* to the Adelantado, to sue for Peace, and Leave for *Capaha* to see him; which he was well pleas'd with, excusing himself with their Masters having before refus'd the Peace, and then they all went to the Town. The next Morning *Capaha* came with one hundred *Indians* finely adorn'd after their manner, and before he saw the Adelantado, went to the Burial-Place of his Ancestors, took up their Bones with his own Hands, kiss'd and laid them in the Chests or Coffins. Being come to the Adelantado they complimented one another, and talk'd long about the Affairs of the Country, of which *Capaha* gave a good Account, tho' he was but twenty-six Years of Age, and then turning to *Casquin*, said, *I suppose you are now well pleas'd, having seen what you never imagin'd; thank the Power of these Christians; but they will be gone, and we shall understand one another, I beg of the Sun and Moon to give us good Seasons.* The Adelantado being inform'd of what *Capaha* had spoken, without giving *Casquin* Time to answer, said, *He came not into their Countries*

to add to their Enmity, but to reconcile them. Having spoken more to that Effect, *Capaha* consented to be Friends, they both din'd with him, after which the two Women that had been taken were restor'd, with which *Capaha* was pleas'd, and presented them to the Adelantado, who refusing to accept of them, he bid him give them to whom he pleas'd, for they should not stay with him, whereupon they were admitted. It was thought *Capaha* did it, as not valuing them, because they had been in the Custody of others.

THERE was excessive want of Salt among the Forces, when eight *Indians* that kept among them, said, There was Plenty of it, and of the Metal they call'd Gold, four Leagues from thence. The Adelantado sent *Ferdinand de Silvera*, and *Peter Moreno* with those *Indians*, ordering them to observe diligently all Particulars of the Country they pass'd through. Eleven Days after they return'd with six Loads of Rock-Salt, as clear as Chrystal, which grew naturally, and one Load of fine Copper, saying, the Country they had pass'd through was barren, and not well inhabited. The Adelantado resolv'd to return to *Casquin*, in Order to proceed to the Westward, for he had march'd Northward all the Way from *Mavila*, to remove from the Sea. Having rested five Days at *Casquin*, they march'd five Days down the River, to the Province of *Quignate*, where at a Town that was two Days Journey within, the Inhabitants fled, without any Provocation; but they return'd two Days after, and their Lord begg'd Pardon. During their Absence those *Indians* wounded two *Spaniards*; which the Adelantado conniv'd at, being very discreet in all his Actions. The seventh Day they departed *Quignate*, and the fifth Day after arriv'd at the Province of *Colima*, still down the River, where they were friendly receiv'd, and found another River, the

340 *The HISTORY of America.*

Sand whereof being Blue, they tasted, and it was salt. They cast some into Water, rubb'd, and then strein'd it, which they boil'd made good Salt, for Joy whereof some eat so much of it, that ten of them dy'd. Departing this Province, which they call'd of Salt, in four Days they came to *Tula*, through Deserts, and upon their approaching a Town, both Men and Women came out to fight, but were repuls'd, and the Soldiers rush'd in with them, and kill'd all, because no one would yield. *Reynoso Cabeza de Vaca* going into an House, five Women that were skulking in a Corner, rush'd out, and would have stifled him, had not two Soldiers accidentally come in, who were oblig'd to kill those Women to rescue him out of their Hands.

THE Adelantado sent Parties of Horse to view the Country, and the *Indians* they took laid themselves on the Ground, saying, *Either kill me, or leave me*; refusing to give the least Account of any thing. Cows-Hides well dress'd were found, tho' they could never hear from whence they came. There were also other good Skins. Four Days after, the *Indians* before Day, attack'd the *Spaniards* by Surprise, three several Ways, all crying *Tula*, that they might know one another, whilst the *Spaniards* invok'd the Blessed Virgin, and their Patron the Apostle St. *James*, for they had never been in greater Peril. The *Indians* fought outrageously with great Clubs, which had never before been seen in *Florida*. This bloody Battle held till the Sun was up, with such Obstinacy on the Part of the *Indians*, that the *Spaniards* were forc'd to lay aside all Punctilo's of Honour, often submitting to their Inferiors when it was necessary. At length the *Indians* retir'd, and the *Spaniards* did not pursue them, some being wounded, and four kill'd. Whilst the *Spaniards*, according to Custom, were looking upon the Dead, and observing the dreadful Wounds made by their

Swords,

The HISTORY of America. 341

Swords, and Spears, an *Indian* started up from among the dead, and *John de Carranza* running to him, the *Indian* gave him such a Stroke with a Battle-Axe he had got from the Christians, that it clove his Target, and wounded him in the Arm; *James de Godoy*, came up as to a Man unarm'd, but was himself disabled; *Francis de Salazar* came on next, and having made several Passes at the *Indian*, who skulk'd behind a Tree, at length receiv'd such a Blow on his Neck, that he dropp'd from his Horse. The fourth *Spaniard* that came on was *Gonzalo Silvestre*, who proceeding more cautiously, avoided a Blow of the *Indian*, and at the same Time with his Sword gave him a back-stroke cut on the Forehead, whence sliding down his Breast, cut off his left Hand at the Wrist; the Barbarian rush'd on to aim at the *Spaniard's* Face, but he warding the Blow with his Target, underneath it with another back-stroke cut him almost in two at the Waste. The Adelantado, and many more went to look upon the dead *Indian*, for his Valour, and on Account of the wonderful Cut given him by *Gonzalo Silvestre*, who in the Year 1570, was at the Court of *Madrid*, and well known for his Valour and Dexterity. After twenty Days the *Spaniards* departed from *Tula*, with only one *Indian* Woman, that would go along with *John Serrano de Leon*, and one Boy with *Christopher de Mosquera*. In two Days the Army came to another Province call'd *Vitangue*, where the Town was abandon'd, and the *Indians* continually were troublesome; but because the Situation was good, the Place inclos'd, there was Provision for Men and Horses, and the Winter advanc'd very sharp, the Adelantado resolv'd to stay there; where we must leave him till the next Year, to speak of what was doing in other Places, whilst the Things above-mention'd hapned in *Florida*.

C H A P. VI.

Alvar Nuñez Cabeza de Vaca made Governour of the River of Plate; his Voyage and Proceedings there.

THE King being inform'd, that *Don Peter de Mendoza* had dy'd in his Return from the River of Plate, and that there was no News of *John de Ayolas*, whom he had appointed his Successor, constituted *Alvar Nuñez Cabeza de Vaca*, who was return'd into Spain, after his Captivity in Florida, which has been before spoken of, Governour of the Provinces about the said River, with the Title of Adelantado, or Lord Lieutenant. Among his other Instructions, it was ordain'd, That there should be no Lawyers, Experience having shown, that they sow'd Discord in those Countries; that those who had held Lands five Years, should be entitl'd to them for ever; that the Spaniards might trade with the Indians; that such as would might come over into Spain; that none should be hindred from writing, or sending to the King; that the Rivers should be in common; with several other Particulars much as in other Places. *Alvar Nuñez* having dispatch'd his Affairs at Court, went away to *Sevil*, where having bought two Ships, and a Caravel, he put aboard them four hundred Soldiers well equipp'd, besides the Sailors, with all proper Stores, and sail'd from the Bay of *Cadiz*, on the 2d of *November*, in the Year 1540. On the 29th of *March* 1541, he arriv'd at the Island of *St. Catherine*, which is the Lat. of twenty-seven Deg. bare, where he landed twenty-six Horses he had left of forty he put aboard,

that

The HISTORY of America. 343

that they might recover after the Voyage.) Thither repair'd to him F. Bernard de Armenta, and F. Alonso Lebron, Franciscan Friars, who had been preaching to the Indians on the Continent. The Caravel was sent to the River of Plate, which return'd without having been able to get in, by reason of the bad Weather, but took in nine Soldiers that were fled from Buenos Ayres, on Account of the ill Usage of the Commanders, and gave an Account that John de Ayolas returning from his Excursion to the Port de la Candelaria, or of Candlemas, where he had left his Ships, on the River Paraguay, was slain by the Indians, and that the City of the Assumption was founded one hundred and twenty Leagues below the aforesaid Port, on the Bank of the said River, where were most of the Spaniards, being about three hundred and fifty Leagues above Buenos Ayres; that Dominick de Irala was Governour, and that the King's Officers, and the Commanders much misus'd the Indians, and Christians, for which reason they had stolen that Boat, and were going to give the King an Account of the State of those Provinces. Alvar Nuñez considering his Voyage by Sea would be tedious, sent Peter de Orantes, with some Spaniards and Indians, to find out the Way to go by Land, who after three Months return'd to him, saying, he had cross'd vast Mountains, and a desert Country, and at length came to the Plain, where the Land begins to be inhabited. On Account of these Difficulties, and by the Advice of the Natives, he sent to discover the River Itabuca, twenty Leagues from St. Catherine's Island, up which he was told, he might come into the inhabited Country.)

HAVING found the aforesaid River, he set out to discover that Country, on the 8th of October 1541, with the best Men he had, the twenty-six Horses, and the Mares, taking the two Franciscan Friars, designing to make all speed to Buenos Ayres, and leaving

344 The HISTORY of America.

Peter Estopinan, to follow him to that Place, with the Ships. The Governour *Alvar Nuñez* travelling along the River *Itabucu*, with two hundred and fifty Musketeers, and Cross-bow-Men, endur'd many Hardships for the Space of nineteen Days, crossing many Mountains, and cutting down Woods to make a Passage, and having spent all their Provisions in those nineteen Days, those Men were so fortunate as to discover the first Habitations, call'd *del Campo*, or of the Field, or open Country, being the Lordship of *Aniriri*, and a Day's Journey from thence the Dominion of *Cipoyay*, and next that of *Tocanguazu*, who all gave the Forces a good Reception, furnishing Provisions, for which the Governour gave them Shirts, and other *Spanish* Goods, wherewith they were well pleas'd. Those People are call'd *Guaranies*, who sow, and reap *Indian* Wheat twice a Year, have *Cazabi* always, breed *Spanish* Hens and Geese, had many Parrots in their Houses, did eat Human Flesh, were warlike, and revengeful, and this Country *Alvar Nuñez* call'd the Province of *Vera*. The 2d of December he came to the River *Yguazu*, signifying Great Water, The next Day, with much Difficulty they pass'd the River *Tibagi*, which having broad flat Stones at the Bottom, occasion'd the Horses to slip, and by reason of the strong Current, the Men held Hand in Hand to pass over. They every where found peaceable *Indians*, who supply'd them with Provisions, on Account of *Alvar Nuñez's* courteous Behaviour, and the Presents he made them, the Fame whereof spread through all the Country, and the Natives laid aside all Fear. The next Day came a Christian *Indian* of *Brasil*, call'd *Michael*, who was going from the City of the *Assumption* into his own Country, and gave a good Account of the *Spaniards* of that City, after which, of his own accord, he undertook to guide the Governour to the City of the *Assumption*; whereupon he discharg'd the

Indians

The HISTORY of America. 345

Indians of the Island of *St. Catherine*, that they might return Home, with Gifts of Shirts, and several Toys, that pleas'd them. The *Spanish* Soldiers being raw, and not us'd to those Parts, and the *Indians* very apt to take Offence at small Matters, which might prove of ill Consequence; Orders were given that none should trade with them, nor go to their Houses, or Villages, but only such as were in Company with those that understood the Language, and they alone should trade. No Horses having been seen till then in that Country, the *Indians* admiring such Beasts, brought them Fowls, Honey, and other Provisions, that they might not be angry. *Alvar Nunez* acting so discreetly, and taking up his Quarters without the Towns, the *Indians* securely resorted to him, with their Wives and Children, bringing Provisions from very far, only to see such strange Things as the *Spaniards*, and their Horses.)

ONE of the Lords of *Guaranies* came out from his Town very joyfully, with all the Inhabitants to meet the *Spaniards*, bringing Honey, Fowls, Geese, Meal, and *Indian* Wheat, and they were highly pleas'd with the Knives, Scissors, and other Toys given them. The 7th of December they came to the River *Taguari*, on the Bank whereof stands the Town *Abangobi*, where they were well entertain'd, and *Alvar Nunez* always endeavouring to leave the *Indians* well satisfy'd, the Fame of it spread abroad, and he was every where kindly receiv'd. Being come to another Town, call'd *Tocanguzin*, he rested a Day, because the Men were fatigu'd, and there the Pilots took an Observation, and found the Latitude to be twenty-four Degrees and an half; all this Country very agreeable, and fruitful, with large Plains, Rivers, and Woods. They advanc'd five Days without finding any Inhabitants, enduring very much, by reason of the large Rivers, and bad Ways, being oblig'd to make many Bridges, and passing high craggy Mountains, very often cover'd with prodigious thick Reeds, and Variety

346 The HISTORY of America.

Variety of Trees, so that twenty Men always went before to clear the Way, the Sky being quite hid from them. Having cross'd that Desert, they came to a Town, still of the Race of the *Guaranies*, where they were very affectionately entertain'd, and furnish'd with the above-mention'd Provisions, as also *Batatas*, Flower of Pine-Apple-Kernels, and Fruit, there being abundance of Pine-Trees, so thick, that four Men Hand in Hand cannot grasp them, and they are very tall and strait, the Kernels as big as Acorns, their Shell like that of a Chestnut, differing in Taste from those of *Spain*. The *Indians* gather, and make Meal of them for their Sustenance. There are Abundance of Swine, and Monkeys, and sometimes the Monkeys as they are feeding throw down the Pine-Apples, the Swine run to eat them, and the Monkeys give horrid Cries on the Trees. In this last Town *Alvar Núñez* resolv'd to rest some Days, being encourag'd to it by the good Usage he found, tho' it prov'd Prejudicial to the Soldiers, who lying still, and feeding plentifully, fell into Fevers, which was not so when they travell'd, and it often hapned, that the sick Men marching two Days recover'd with the Exercise; thus Experience taught them, that the Governour had reason not to be pleas'd that they should rest. The same Day they departed that Town, they came to a very great River, the Current whereof was very rapid, and on its Banks were Groves of Cedar, Cypress, and other Trees. Three Days after passing that River, they proceeded among Towns of those *Guaranies*, by whom they were well us'd, and supply'd. At the End of this good Country they came to thick Woods, and Grounds full of Reeds, in the Hollows of which Reeds, they found white Worms, as long and thick as a Man's Finger, which they did eat fry'd, much fat coming from them, and in the same Reeds there was Water so agreeable, that the Men delighted in it; thus they made amends for the Want they had endur'd in the Desert, where they cross'd two

great

great Rivers, which ran to the Northward. The next Day having seen no Habitations, they took up at Night on the Bank of another great River, and the Day after travell'd through a good Country, having good Water, and abundance of wild Swine, and Deer, which the Men kill'd with much Delight. Four Days more they march'd among Habitations of the same *Guaranies*, well supply'd with Provisions. The *Franciscan* Friars going before, and taking the Provisions the *Indians* gave, to distribute among useless People that follow'd them, and not desisting, tho' they had been forbid, the Soldiers were upon the Point of Mutinying, because of the Loss they sustain'd by it, for which reason the Governour would have them part Company, whereat they were so much offended as to take another Way, but some Days after *Alvar Nunez* caus'd them to be brought back from an *Indian* Town, to save them from the Danger they were in. Four Days more were spent in passing several Rivers, Brooks, and difficult Mountains, every one of them having a fruitful Vale, a River, and several Springs, and Groves. These Days they had mov'd Westward. Still they continu'd among the *Guaranies*, who went stark naked, were generous in furnishing Provisions, stood in much Fear of the Horses, and quak'd when they came near them. They came to a great River Westward, in twenty-five Deg. Lat. on the Bank whereof stood a good Town, and they were inform'd, that all the Length of the River was well inhabited, the Lands well sow'd, with numerous Breeds of Hens, Geese, and other Birds, besides Abundance of Swine, Deer, and Dantas; much Honey, variety of Fruit, and Plenty of Fish in the River. From this River, call'd *Piqueri*, the Governour sent two *Indians*, to the City of the *Assumption*, to give Notice of his coming, and left behind him fourteen *Spaniards*, that were sick with
the

348 *The HISTORY of America.*

the Fatigue of the Journey, recommending them to the *Indians*, that they might be sent to him as soon as recover'd. They advanc'd eight Days through a Desert, till they came to the River *Iguazu*, being the same they had cross'd at their first setting out from the Coast of *Brasil*, running East and West, and no Habitation on it. Here they were inform'd that this River falls into the *Parana*, call'd the River of *Plate*, and that there the *Indians* had kill'd the *Portugueses*, sent by *Martin Alonso de Sousa* to discover that Country; whereupon *Alvar Nuñez*, imbark'd on some Canoes he bought of the *Indians*, with eighty Men, and went down the River, ordering the rest of the Men and the Horses to march by Land till they came to the *Parana*. Being come to a Fall the River makes down vast high Rocks, the Water making such a Noise, that it is heard at a great Distance, and foaming prodigiously, they were oblig'd to go ashore and carry their Canoes half a League by Land, beyond the Fall, which was an incredible Labour. Imbarcking again, they came to the River *Parana*, and met those that went by Land, and at the same Time a great Number of *Indians*, still of the same Race, with Plumes of Feathers, daub'd and painted after several Manners, with their Bows and Arrows, drawn up in a Body, but in much Fright and Confusion. *Alvar Nuñez* being acquainted with the Nature of those Barbarians, sending Messengers with Presents, pacify'd, and brought them to his Friendship, so that they were very assisting to him in passing the River *Parana*, which was easily perform'd, joyning together two or three Canoes, for the more Security. This River, where they cross'd it, was above a Cross-bow-shot over, very deep, the Current rapid, for which reason it has many Whirl-pools. Only one *Spaniard* was drown-

ed,

The HISTORY of America. 349

ed, a Canoe sinking, and the Stream carry'd him away, so that he was never seen again. This is what hapned there till the End of the Year 1541; we must now see what was doing in other Parts.

The End of the Seventh Book.



T H E



THE
General HISTORY
Of the vast CONTINENT and ISLANDS of
A M E R I C A, &c.

D E C A D IV. B O O K VIII.

C H A P. I.

The Great Marquess Cortes goes over into Spain ; the famous Don Pedro de Alvarado kill'd in New Galicia ; the Viceroy of Mexico goes to suppress the revolted Indians ; City of Guatemala destroy'd, and other Mischiefs done by a dreadful Tempest.



THE Viceroy of *New Spain* refusing to desist from his Enterprizes in the new Northern Discoveries, the Marquess *Cortes*, who thought that his Right, as Captain-General, went away into *Spain*, to settle that Affair with the King, never considering that Monarchs seldom
care

The HISTORY of America. 351

care to raise any Man so high as to have cause to be jealous of him.) Being at Court he prosecuted *Nuño de Guzman*, for the many Wrongs he had done him, and obtain'd Judgment for several thousands of Pieces of Eight.

(At this same Time) *Don Pedro de Alvarado*, so famous in this History, under *Cortes*, having obtain'd of the King a Commission for making Discoveries on the South Sea, to the Westward, fitted out twelve large Ships, and two Vessels to row, the one of twenty, and the other of thirteen Benches, which he plentifully furnish'd with all Sorts of Stores, eight hundred Soldiers, and one hundred and fifty Horses, besides a great Number of *Indian* Servants, notwithstanding the Opposition made by the Bishop against his taking them out of their native Country. This Fleet he order'd to sail to some Port of *New Galicia*, whilst he travell'd by Land to *Mexico*, to concert Measures with the Viceroy. (At the same Time it hapned in the Kingdom of *New Galicia*, that the Towns of *Suchipitan*, *Apozol*, *Xalpa*, and others, in the District of the Spanish Town of *Guadalajara*, the Inhabitants whereof were *Chichimecas*, a barbarous, fierce, and implacable Generation, to avoid paying their Tributes to their Lords, tho' very moderately tax'd, revolted, and quitting their Habitations, and Lands, withdrew to the Tops of the Mountains call'd *Peñoles*.) The first they fortify'd themselves on, was that of *Mixtlan*, the second *Nuchiztlan*, the third *Acatique*, and the fourth *Cnina*. (Hereupon Captain) *Christopher de Onate*, who was Deputy-Governour to *Francis Vasquez de Cornado*, gather'd about forty Horse, and as many Foot, with some friendly *Indians*, and march'd from *Guadalajara*, to the *Peñol*, or Rock of *Mixtlan*, where he us'd all fair Means to reduce those People, who being perfect Savages, murder'd

352 The HISTORY of America.

murder'd a *Franciscan* Frier that went to offer them Peace, and Pardon, and afterwards, having engag'd their Faith that they would comply, when they thought the *Spaniards* in profound Security, came down one Morning, before Break of Day, to the Number of fifteen thousand, fell furiously upon the *Spaniards*, and tho' they were upon their Guard, press'd so hard, that they made them turn their Backs, leaving many dead, besides friendly *Indians*, and all the Blacks.) Those that escap'd making their Way to *Guadalajara*, sent Advice to *Mechoacan*, *Colima*, *Zacatula*, the *Purification*, *Compostela*, and other *Spanish* Towns, whence about fifty Horse came to their Assistance, who having been there about a Fortnight, were inform'd by some *Indian* Friends, that *Tenamastle*, and *Don Francis*, Lords of *Muchizstan*, and several others were joyn'd, in Order to attack *Guadalajara*. (They that were in the Place, thinking themselves too weak to withstand such a Number of *Indians*, and understanding that *Don Pedro de Alvarado* was then on the Coast at the Towns of *Avalos*, twenty Leagues from them, sent him Advice of what had hapned. He, being a Man of much Honour and Worth, and inclin'd to give his Assistance, where any Danger threatned, set out immediately with a considerable Part of his Horse and Foot, and in one Night and a Day cross'd all the uncooth Desert of *Tonala*, generally reckoned three Days March, by Reason of the Badness of the Way, and of the River, the Banks whereof are inhabited by the *Indians* call'd *Zacatecas*.) Being come to *Guadalajara*, upon Consultation among the Commanders, it was not thought proper to expect the *Indians* in that Place, but to meet them, and accordingly coming to the Town of *Muchizstan*, he found that the *Indians* were withdrawn to the Mountain. Having taken Quarters in that Town, several

Messengers

Messengers were sent to offer Peace and Pardon ; but they persisting in their Rebellion, it was resolv'd to attack them on their Rock or Mount, notwithstanding it was high, steep, and of difficult Access, and the Defendants very numerous, obstinate, strong of Body, able Archers, and very dextrous at casting Darts, or long Rods, hardned in the Fire at the Ends, those Men being every where much dreaded, as being cruel beastly (*Chichimecas*) who sacrific'd Children, ripping up their Breasts with Knives made of Flint, tearing out their Hearts, and eating their Bodies.

THOSE *Indians* positively refusing to submit, *Alvarado* and the other Officers considering, that it would be an Encouragement to them, if they were left there, order'd Captain *Falcon* to attack the Rock, with five thousand *Indians* of *Mechoacan*, commanded by a noble *Indian*, call'd *Don Pedro*, and one hundred *Spanish* Foot, but not to do it till supported by the Horse ; however Captain *Falcon* being too daring, climb'd the Hill, without staying for the Cavalry, and when at the Top, tho' warn'd of his Danger, and charg'd to stay for them, he rashly went on, when he might have been satisfy'd with the gaining of that Post, and the *Indians* being very numerous, and seeing no Horsemen, waited till the others were quite up, when marching forward in good Order to cut off the *Spaniards* and *Mechoacans*, two several Ways, press'd so hard upon them, that the Cavalry not being able to come in to their Relief, they were oblig'd to retire, Captain *Falcon* being the first Man kill'd, with seven or eight *Spaniards*, and several *Indians*, and the Slaughter would have been greater, had not the Retreat been regular. The Rebels not so satisfy'd, went down to the Plain, where, had not the wet Season made the Ground boggy, they would have been sufficiently chastiz'd.

but the *Spaniards* did not think fit for that Reason to engage them, and therefore retir'd to a Country-House call'd *Aqualica*, in the Territory of *Guadalajara*; the *Indians* still pursuing to a River, on the other Side whereof is such a steep Ascent, that there is no riding up it, but the Horses must be led. *Alvarado* staying to bring up the Rear, and Horse that went before fell, and lighted upon him, who being in Armour, and then grown an heavy Man, could not get out of the Horse's Way, but was so bruis'd on the Breast, that he dy'd within three Days. The *Indians* did not pass, thinking they had done enough in obliging their Enemies to retire, but return'd to their Mountain. The unfortunate Death of *Alvarado* disappointed any farther Proceedings of his Fleet, Part whereof return'd to *Guatemala*, many of the Men staying in *New-Galicia*. The Viceroy of *Mexico* hearing of this Misfortune, and being sensible that the *Indians* would grow haughty upon it, sent away Captain *Amuncibay*, with sixty Horse, who arriv'd safe at *Guadalajara*. The Natives, on the other Part, assembled to the Number of fifteen or sixteen thousand, under the Command of *Tenamastle*, who coming near to the Town, drew up in good Order, forming Battalions, with their Files seven Men deep, a Thing never before seen in *New Spain*. They were all stark naked, according to their Custom, having Bows and Arrows, and every Battallion Plumes of several Colours. The Archers led the Van, follow'd by those that threw Darts, with Clubs, and sharp Swords of Flint. They first attack'd a strong House, where the *Spaniards* were, and after two Hours Fight began to flag, for want of knowing how to carry on the Assault. Upon their falling off, Captain *Amuncibay* sally'd with fifty Horse, and after an Hour's Dispute, put them to the Rout, so that they fled in-

to the Woods and Corn-Fields, for which Reason they could not be pursu'd far, and yet above one thousand were kill'd, and several taken, who gave an Account, that all the Country was in Arms, and they doubted not but that they would make another Attempt upon the Fort.

THE Viceroy of *Mexico* had resolv'd to go in Person to quell this Rebellion, fearing that those *Chichimecas*, being a bold and barbarous People, and encourag'd with Success, might occasion greater Troubles than had been imagin'd. But his Enterprize hapning another Year shall be referr'd till then, and before we proceed to other Affairs, it will be proper to say something of those People. This Name of *Chichimecas* is *Mexican*, compos'd of *Chichi*, which is a Dog, and *Mecatl*, a String, Cord, or Leath, as if they meant a Dog in a String, or in a Leath; tho' they are not all call'd by this Name, for there are among them several Nations, Languages, and Appellations; however they were all of the same Sort, savage and beastly, going naked, only covering their Privities, the Women wearing Deer-Skins hanging down from their Navels to their Knees. They did not live in Towns, or till Land, tho' what they had was very good, but fed upon Deer, Rabbits, Hares, Vermin, and wild Fruit, as Tunas and Mezquites, as also Honey, stealing Cows from the *Spaniards*, when they could. They were cruel Thieves and Robbers, their Weapons Bows and Arrows, at which they were very dextrous, but us'd no Poison. These joyn'd with the revolted Troops of *Xalisco*, and being mighty Robbers, as has been said, at first made War in a very cowardly Manner, many of them joyning against one *Spaniard*; but by Degrees they grew bolder, and lay in wait in Places where the Horses could do little Service, and when they met with any Success,

356 *The HISTORY of America.*

which was generally through the Negligence of the *Spaniards*, were wonderful quick in plundering, scarce ever sparing the Lives of any that fell into their Hands, fleaing their Heads and Faces alive, and killing the Women after ravishing them. (When they bolted out of an Ambush, it was done with such Fury and Noise, as frightened both Men and Horses) which Consternation is increas'd by knowing, that if they are vanquish'd, no Man is to expect his Life.

LET us see the Disaster that hapned this same Year 1541, in the City of *Santiago de Guatemala*. On the 8th and 9th of *September*, much Rain fell in that Place, the Season having been very wet long before, and on *Saturday* the 10th, two Hours after Night, such a dreadful Storm came down from the Top of a burning Mountain, which was near by, with so great an Inundation of Water, driving vast Stones, Pieces of Timber and Trees before it, that entring the City it bore down the Walls of the Houses, and among the rest overturn'd an Oratory, in the House of the Governour *Don Pedro de Alvarado* above said, to have been unfortunately kill'd in *New Galicia*, which kill'd his Lady, and several Servants, and other Persons. Two Thirds of the City were entirely destroy'd, six hundred *Indians* perish'd, and a great Number of *Spaniards*, among whom were several of Note, and many were sav'd after a miraculous Manner, after having been carry'd quite out of the Place by the Violence of the Current, among whom some had their Arms or Legs broke, of which they afterwards dy'd. *Don Francis de la Cueva*, who was Deputy-Governour, hearing the Noise, as he was going to Bed, went out, thinking it had been some Quarrel, but coming into his Court found it full of Water, then thinking to go to the Assistance of the Governour *Alvarado's* Lady, saw the Water so high, that he concluded the House would be full, where-
upon

—volcanic
eruption?
water?

upon he ran out into the back Yard, where he was up to the Middle in Mire, not knowing how to get forward or backward, but at last saw some bulky Thing, which he found to be a drowned Horse, on which he mounted, and stay'd there till Morning. The City was quite ruin'd, and the Inhabitants who had escap'd in such a Fright, that they were for leaving it, fearing that the Houses which were then left standing, would fall at the first Shake; besides, that the Stones, so large that four Yoak of Oxen could not move some of them, carry'd away by the Water, as if they had been Cork, with the Mire, Timber, and Trees, had so fill'd up all Places, that it seem'd impossible to cleanse them. Of all the Governour's House nothing was left standing but only his Lady's Bed-chamber; so that had she stay'd there she had been safe, but she ran to her Chapel to pray to God. A Cow was seen in the City that hinder'd many from passing, abundance of Cattle having fled thither out of the Fields in the Fright. The same Night, to the Eastward of the City, not above three Cross-bow-shot from it, there was another Eruption of the same burning Mountain, consisting of Stones and Trees, which overthrew all that stood in the Way, and kill'd abundance of *Indians*, and Cattle, and had both those Eruptions fallen together, not one Man had been left alive in the City. The next Day, the Bishop assembled the Inhabitants in the Cathedral, where after having offer'd up their Prayers to God, he made a short Sermon, comforting and encouraging them, saying, among other Things, That God had taken the best to himself, and given the rest such Warning, that they might for the future live so, as never to be afraid to dye. He advis'd them to fast *Wednesday*, *Friday*, and *Saturday*, to be earnest in Prayer, and the Service of God; and in regard that

358 *The* HISTORY of *America*.

the Inhabitants were then in Mourning for the Death of their Governour, above-mention'd, there being now so many more to lament, he told them, It was no Time to bewail the Dead, but to endeavour to move God to Mercy. He caus'd the Mourning to be laid aside, and the People to cheer up, since all their Sorrow could not equal so great a Loss. This he partly did in Consideration, that too much Dejection and Grief might raise some pernicious Thoughts among the Natives, to the disturbing of the publick Peace, for which Reason strict Guard was kept; notwithstanding that all the *Indian* Lords, and Caziques in the Country about, came to offer their Assistance, wheresoever it should be necessary, and to express their Concern and Affliction for so great a Calamity. Next the *Spaniards* apply'd themselves to build Huts, or Baracks in the Field, to live in till the Town could be repair'd; where much Wealth was lost, and the King favour'd the City, that it might be the sooner rebuilt, exempting it from all Duties, allowing Sums of Money, and granting other Immunities, with which the Inhabitants were well pleas'd.



C H A P. II.

Vaca de Castro admitted as Governour and Captain-General of Peru; marches to Guamanga, where he fights, and defeats Almagro; some Account of the City of Guamanga.

IT is Time to return to Peru, where we left *Vaca de Castro*, about the Beginning of the Year 1542, after he had joyn'd the Forces of the Commanders *Alonso de Alvarado* and *Holguin*, which last had consented to resign the Post of Captain-General, tho' with some Reluctancy, as having expected that *Vaca de Castro* would have made him his Lieutenant, for the Management of martial Affairs. *Vaca de Castro* having assembled all the Commanders, and Men of Note, in a short Harangue commended them for having loyally come into the Service of the King, in Opposition to those that were disobedient to his Commands, promis'd they should be rewarded by his Majesty, and by himself, as far as his Power extended. After which, tho' they had seen Copies of his Commission, he produc'd the Original for their Satisfaction, whereupon they all cry'd, *Long live the King*, and receiv'd him for their Governour, and Captain-General. At the same Time *Don James de Almagro*, having appointed *Christopher de Sorelo* his Major-General, went away to *Cuzco*, where all the Gold and Silver from the Mines of *Porco* was brought him, and all Preparations for War were carry'd on. Upon Advice that *Alonso*

360 The HISTORY of America.

de Alvarado and *Peralvarez Holguin* had joyn'd *Vaca de Castro*, *Almagro* sent to require him not to take up Arms against him, but to act as Governour, till the King should order otherwise. Then calling together all his Officers, and other Persons of Distinction, He put then in mind of his Father's Services to the Crown, the unjust Death he had been put to, the many Sufferings of themselves, through the Cruelty of *Pizarro*, which had oblig'd them to kill him in their own Defence, and declar'd, that he had no Intention to falter in his Duty to his Sovereign, but only to vindicate his own Right, as his Majesty's Governour of the new Kingdom of *Toledo*, which *Vaca de Castro* had no Authority to take from him, and therefore pray'd that they would stand by him. His Commission being then read, and all concluding that they went upon a just Cause, they resolv'd to support that Youth, in whom they thought his Father's Virtues were reviv'd, and in order to it they took a solemn Oath, both Commanders and Soldiers, acknowledging him for their Governour, and he promis'd to requite them. It hapned that soon after, *Sotelo*, who, as has been said, was Major-General to *Almagro*, hang'd a Soldier, for a Murder and Robbery he had committed, whereupon *Garcia de Alvarado*, who was before at Variance with *Sotelo*, took Occasion to pick a Quarrel with, and murder'd him basely. *Almagro* resenting the Loss of so able a Commander as *Sotelo*, would have put *Alvarado* to Death, but perceiving he had too many Friends, and that there was no Possibility of doing Justice at that Time, by the Advice of those he most confided in, he consented to make him his Captain-General, and accordingly sent him his Commission, which was proclaim'd by Sound of Trumpets. All this was nothing but Falshood on both Sides, *Alvarado* resolving to murder *Almagro*, and he to de-

stroy

The HISTORY of *America*. 361

stroy *Alvarado*, as he did a few Days after, in his own House, whereupon all was hush'd again.

Vaca de Castro having taken upon him the Title of Captain-General, as well as Governour, appointed *Paravarez Holguin* his Major-General, ordering him to march his Army to *Xauxa*, going away himself to *Lima*, to secure that Place, and raise Men and Money; where having given the necessary Orders for those Ends, he departed, and join'd the Forces at *Xauxa*. This Vale of *Xauxa* was so call'd by the *Spaniards*, because they had their first Establishment in the *Tambo* of *Atunxauxa*, the Inhabitants of the Vale being call'd *Guamas*, and they are thirty-six Leagues from *Lima*. It was subdu'd by the Marquess *Pizarro*; the Country is rather Cold than Hot, and has Summer and Winter; the Plain extends nine Leagues, one over or under; through it runs a considerable River, issuing from the Lake of *Chincha-cocha*, which neither waters the Land, nor affords Fish; the Pasture is on the upper Grounds; Mayz, Wheat, Papas, and other Grain thrive plentifully; there are Breeds of Hens, Sheep, Cows, and Swine; their wild Game Creatures are Deer, Vicuñas, Guanacos, Foxes, small Lions, Partridges, and Visáchas, which are like Rabbits. The Natives are ingenious, and given to Husbandry. Before they were subdu'd by the *Ingas*, the Inhabitants of the two Sides of the River had Wars together, for Lands, and Dominion; afterwards they learnt the Religion, and Policy of those Monarchs. Their Habit is like the others elsewhere mention'd, only wearing the Mark of Distinction on their Heads, to be known from other Nations. There are Silver, Copper, and Lead Mines among them.

Almagro having made the necessary Dispositions, mov'd from *Cuzco* to *Xaquixaguana*, where all his Forces rendezvouz'd, being very unanimous, and advanc'd in Order, making short Marches, and always upon
their

362 *The HISTORY of America.*

their Guard ; not eating in their Tents, but in publick, their Provisions being in common, and all Things very regular ; the Commanders did their Duty, and exercis'd the Men, for tho' they were good Soldiers, they thought them too few for what they heard *Vaca de Castro* had. It was therefore at first concluded to pass the Bridge of *Apurima*, and then to turn off a little, to gain some Advantage ; but a Priest telling them, that *Vaca de Castro* had not so many Men as was reported, and that they were ill arm'd, the Resolution was taken to march to *Guamanga*, and fight, the Men, being all very willing. Accordingly they advanc'd towards *Andaguaylas*, and sent the Licentiate *Gama*, and others, to propose an Accommodation, to which *Vaca de Castro* answer'd, That they should send *John Balsa*, and some other prime Person to adjust Affairs. From *Bilcas*, *Almagro* sent *Lope de Ydiaquez* and *James Nuñez* to treat, with a Letter from himself, representing, how much his Father had serv'd the King, how unjustly the *Pizarros* had dealt with him, only to usurp the Government given him by the King ; admiring that *Vaca de Castro* should espouse that Party which had acted so disloyally, and protesting his full Resolution never to depart from his Duty to his Sovereign. The Commanders also writ a Letter, complaining of his Partiality, in rejecting them as if they had oppos'd their Sovereign, declaring themselves Loyal Subjects, and praying that all Things might be amicably adjusted, to prevent the Mischiefs that must otherwise ensue, all which would be chargeable upon *Vaca de Castro*. These Letters were dated at *Bilcas*, the 4th of September 1542.

Vaca de Castro being inform'd that *Almagro* was at *Bilcas*, march'd with all possible Expedition, and possess'd himself of *Guamanga*, but incamp'd in the Fields next to *Bilcas*, whither came to him the two aforesaid Messengers *Lope de Ydiaquez*, and *James Nuñez* from *Almagro*,

The HISTORY of America. 363

Almagro, with the Letters above-mention'd, *Almagro* proposing that both Parties should disband their Forces, and *Vaca de Castro* retire to *Lima*, as Governour of *New Castile*, and *Almagro* to *Cuzco*, as Governour of the Kingdom of *New Toledo*, till the King should order otherwise. After advising with the Commanders, *Vaca de Castro* resolv'd to return a mild Answer, only insisting that *John Balsa* should be sent to treat, and he would deliver *Afonso de Alvarado* a Hostage for him. The Messengers returning to their Camp, *Vaca de Castro* sent a *Spaniard* thither as a Spy, disguis'd like an *Indian*, who was taken and hang'd; he also sent a real *Indian* with Letters to *Peter de Candia* to perswade him to play Booty with the Artillery, which he discovering, the two Messengers *Ydiaquez* and *Nunez* had like to have lost their Lives, being suspected of double dealing, because such treacherous Practices were carrying on at the same Time that they were treating; but at last they were dismiss'd with Directions to tell *Vaca de Castro*, that since he acted so basely, they would decide the Quarrel by Dint of Sword. Then *Almagro* made a short Speech to his Men, putting them in Mind of his Father's Generosity, and the Affection he had born them all; of the Ingratitude and Villainy of the *Pizarros* towards his said Father, who had been the raising of them; encouraging them to dye bravely rather than give Way, and promising every Soldier to give him the Estate of any Man whose Head he should bring, and his Wife, if such Person were marry'd. No sooner had he ceas'd speaking, than the Soldiers holding up their Right Hands, call'd out to be led on to Battle, declaring they would willingly dye for him.) Whereupon decamping, they advanc'd to *Pomacacha*, a strong Place. *Vaca de Castro*, on the other Hand, fearing lest the Enemy might make their Way to *Lima*, through *Guayara*, remov'd his Camp
to

364 The HISTORY of *America*.

to the Plain of *Chupas*, where that Night they had such a Storm of Rain, Thunder, and Snow, that they thought they should have all perish'd.) *Ydiaquez* and *Nunez* the afore-mention'd Messengers returning to this Place, with the Resolution of *Almagro's* Men. Hereupon *Vaca de Castro* by Beat of Drum and Sound of Trumpet declar'd all *Almagro's* Party Traitors, unless they submitted within six Days, granting all that belong'd to them to his Soldiers as lawful Booty; tho' it was reported, that he had no Power from the King to act in this manner.

Almagro's Council had resolv'd to march along the rising Ground, and so turning off on the Right to get into *Guamanga*; but *Vaca de Castro* having sent to observe their Motions, order'd Capt. *Nuño de Castro* with one hundred Musketeers to secure that Eminence, being supported by a Troop of Horse, following himself with all the Forces, and it being then past Noon, a Resolution was taken to fight the next Day. The same was agreed on by the Adverse Party, (and accordingly both Sides prepar'd for the Action. It was a notable Sight to behold all the adjacent Hills cover'd with *Indians* of both Sexes, that follow'd the two Camps, some shrieking, and weeping at the Thoughts of seeing their Masters in that frightful Conflict, and others rejoicing, as taking it for some Revenge of the Wrongs done them, and the Loss of their Liberty. The next Day being *Saturday* the 16th of *September* 1542, in the Afternoon, *Almagro's* Men planted their Artillery, being sixteen small Pieces of Cannon, as was thought most Advantageous; their Cavalry form'd two Wings, the Infantry was drawn up behind the Artillery, and the Musketeers made a separate Body by themselves. Their whole Number was about five hundred and fifty Men, all of invincible Courage; and among them many Gentlemen of much Experience in War. *Vaca de Castro* being inform'd by his Scouts

of

The HISTORY of America. 365

of the Enemy's Posture, order'd his Men to march more to the Right, the Horse on the Wings; being in all above seven hundred Men, and among them one hundred and seventy Musketeers.) *Vaca de Castro* would have march'd at the Head of the Horse, but the Commanders would not consent to it, whereupon he form'd a Troop of forty good Horsemen, to remain with himself, as a Reserve, to charge wheresoever there should be occasion. (Both Parties drawing near each other, their Musketeers gave Fire, the *Chile* Men crying, *Long live the King, Almagro*; and the others, *Long live the King, Vaca de Castro*; all calling upon St. *James* the Apostle.) *Peralvarez Holguin* spurring on to charge the Enemy drop'd down dead, with two Musket-Balls in him, as did Capt. *Ximenez*, and *Gomez de Tordoya* was dangerously wounded. The Battle then beginning, *Almagro's* Artillery was unadvisedly remov'd, which prov'd their Ruin, for only one Gun did any Harm among the Governour's Men, the rest of their Shot flying over. Then the Horse charg'd with much Resolution, and *Almagro* being told that there was Treachery among the Artillery, ran to *Peter de Candia*, who commanded it, and kill'd him, appearing in all Parts, to encourage his Men, with wonderful Resolution. The Infantry fought desperately at push of Pike, and it is reported, that being quite tir'd, they ceas'd to breathe. Night drew on, and *Alvarado's* Horse began to flag, which made *Almagro* cry, *Victory, take, and do not kill*; but *Vaca de Castro* perceiving the Distress *Alvarado* was in, charg'd with his Troop, which prov'd the gaining of the Victory, for Numbers began to prevail above Valour. The Sun was then set, and tho' *Almagro* and his Commanders did all that was in the Power of Men, Fortune declar'd for *Vaca de Castro*. When the Action was over, the *Indians* and Blacks kill'd all that they found aliye, and Cruelty prevail'd, for the
Prisoners

366 The HISTORY of America.

Prisoners were hack'd, revil'd and abus'd by the Conquerors, which was barbarous Behaviour. *Almagro* and *James Mendez* fled towards *Cuzco*, the Victors plunder'd their Camp, and the Faction of *Chile* became extinct for ever. *Vaca de Castro* rejoicing for his Victory, order'd the Religious Men to go assist the wounded, gave Directions for burying the Dead, and that Search should be made for the Murderers of the Marquess *Pizarro*; yet Night coming on, there was no regard to any thing but plundering. Two hundred and fifty *Spaniards* were kill'd in this Battle, on both Sides, tho' some say more; besides whom about thirty were afterwards executed, most of them Commanders and Officers; others were banish'd to *New Spain*, but they possessing themselves of the Ship that carry'd them, put into *Panama*, where they appear'd before the Royal Court, pleading, that they had never intended to rebel against the King, but only to defend themselves from the Tyranny of *Vaca de Castro*, and accordingly were all acquitted by that Court, which sent the King an Account of the Victory obtain'd.

PEACE being thus restor'd, *Vaca de Castro* thought fit to disperse the Forces, and accordingly order'd Capt. *Vergara* to return to his Conquest of the *Bracamoros*, which he did, as soon as recover'd of a Wound he had receiv'd in the Battle; and Capt. *John Perez de Guevara* then at *Lima*, to go settle a Colony in the Province of *Moyobamba*. He then went away himself to *Cuzco*, being inform'd that *Almagro* was gone that Way. The Battle here spoken of having been fought near the City of *Guamanga*, it will not be improper, before we proceed, to say something of that Place. The first Foundation of it has been before mention'd. The Province is call'd *Bilcas*, lying between the Cities of *Cuzco* and *Lima*, the Climate so agreeable, that neither Heat nor Cold are offensive;

The HISTORY of *America*. 367

offensive; some Dew falls at the Beginning of the Night, and in the Morning, but is not troublesome; the Sky is serene most Part of the Year, the South Wind prevailing most, and sometimes the North. In the Neighbourhood there are cold and desert Hills, which serve for Cattle to graze, and there are hot Vales, with Rivulets, and Groves in them. Eight Leagues from it is a Mountain cover'd with Snow all the Year, from the Top whereof comes a sharp Wind that occasions Colds, but not very dangerous; all the Territory is uneven Land, and borders on the *Andes*, which are eighteen Leagues Eastward of the City, near which runs a good Brook, from whence a Trench of Water is drawn to serve the Houses and Orchards. Tho' the Province generally wants Water, yet both *Spanish* and *Indian* Wheat thrive well, as do *European* Trees, Clover-Grass, and Vines, but subject to Damage by Frost, Hail, and Fogs. The Natives are of a midling Stature, somewhat brown, their Wits low, inclin'd to mean Things, flegmatick, and sloathful, in so much that the Magistrates must compel them to work for their own Advantage. They are crafty, malicious, and have little Charity among themselves, love to be sincerely dealt with, but not to do so themselves. The Women dress Meat, and make Garments, and the Men would willingly be always drunkening; every Clan has a peculiar Language, but they all speak the general Tongue of *Cuzco*. The City of *Guamanga* is seated in thirteen Degrees of South Latitude, and it has been observ'd, that from the 15th of *October* to the End of the same, the Sun makes no Shade at Noon. In the Territory there are some notable Springs; in a Farm belonging to *Peter de Ribera*, is one that has several Sources, some luke-warm, and others colder, where those bathe that are troubled with gross Humours, and the Itch, and some Women

368 *The HISTORY of America.*

men that had no Children before, have been render'd fruitful by it, and the Water of it fertilizes a Farm consisting of Vines and *Spanish* Fruit. Ten Leagues from the City, in a Desert Place, is another hot Spring, where Persons troubled with several Distempers bathe, especially for the Pox and Itch; and a League and half from thence is another very hot Spring, which heals old Sores, the Itch, and other Distempers, and they sweat within the Water. In this Territory likewise grows the Herb Coca, so much us'd by the *Indians*, and before spoken of; it affords very good Honey, Dantas like Calves, Monkeys, large Snakes, which they call *Bobas*, that is, Fools, Vipers, poisonous Spiders, Mosquitos, or Gnats, and Pismires. The Rivers on the *Andes* produce Fish, and some large Crabs, and the Country is subject to Rain. As for Birds, there are Parrots, Guacamayos, Turkeys, Ring-Doves, Turtles, three or four Sorts of Partridges, Thrushes, Feldes-fares, and other native Fowls, very beautiful, and of several Colours, as also Hens, Eagles, Haggard Hawks, Herons, Ravens, and Geese. There are Abundance of wholesome Herbs, and one poisonous, call'd *Miu*, of which if the Cattle happen to eat they dye; there are also Lions, Bears, and some Tygers, Deer, Tarugas, which are like Deer, Sheep of the Country, and *Vicuñas*, which have fine Wooll, Foxes, and those Creatures whose Urine is so pestilential, that it stinks a Musket-Shot off, and the Stench never departs from any Thing it has once fallen upon, penetrating in such violent Manner into the Nostrils of Men, as to put some into Fevers. Here are many Mines of Gold and Silver, Mercury, Copper, Iron, Lead, Sulphur, and Loadstone. In this District are the Quick-silver Mines of *Guanacavelica*, great Quarries of several Sorts of hard and soft Marble, wonderful Salt-Pits, and an Hill of Salt that seems
miracu-

miraculous, for whatsoever is cut off grows again. The City is in the Arch-bishoprick of *Lima*, has three Parish Churches, one Monastery of *Dominicans*, and one of *Franciscans*, with three Sodalities of the Holy Cross, the Blessed Sacrament, and the Conception of our Lady, consisting of *Spaniards*, and another of *Indians* of the same Conception, and the Blacks have another of St. *Antony*. There is also another Monastery, which is of *Mercenarians*, and a Nunnery of *Poor Clares*; as likewise an Hospital for the Native *Indians*, one of the best in those Parts.

C H A P. III.

Gonzalo Pizarro returns from his Discovery; his insolent Behaviour; Almagro put to Death; Peace, and good Government restor'd in Peru, by Vaca de Castro.

GONZALO Pizarro, of whom so much has been before, and is still to be said, returning at this Time into *Peru*, from the Discovery where we left him, enduring much Hunger, after Captain *Orellana* departed from him, it is requisite here to conduct him back from those Toils, to lay a Foundation for greater Troubles. Those *Spaniards* in their Distress wishing to return into some Country among Christians, *Pizarro* march'd ten Days up the River, to the Place where those who had gone thither on

Vol. V. B b the

370 The HISTORY of America.

the Water had left a Mark, whence he sent *John de Acoſta* to view a Town the *Indians* gave Intimation of, which he found well fortify'd on an Eminence, and the Inhabitants in Readineſs to oppoſe the *Spaniards*, charging them with mighty Cries, and tho' they wounded *John de Acoſta*, and two others, yet were they repulſ'd, and the *Spaniards* enter'd the Town with them, where, to their great Satisfaction, they found Plenty of Proviſions, which recruited and comforted them all, but ſtill they had many Days Journey to go through a Deſert, in Order to return to *Quito*. In fine, ſetting out from thence, after many more Miſeries endur'd, they came to the Town of *Coca* in a wretched Condition, bare-footed, ragged, and diſfigur'd, and it pleas'd God, that the *Indians* receiv'd them in friendly Manner, giving what they had. There they reſted ten Days, and then continuing their March, after many Difficulties arriv'd at *Quito*, two Thirds of two hundred and forty *Spaniards* that ſet out at firſt, having periſh'd with Hunger; and yet they carry'd out with them five thouſand Swine, three hundred Horſes and Mules, and abundance of Dogs, and Sheep, all which were either eaten, or loſt. At *Quito*, *Pizarro* heard of his Brother's Death, and then began to give ſome Tokens of what he afterwards did, for he blam'd thoſe that had admitted of *Vaca de Caſtro*, as Governour, ſaying, that the Government belong'd to him, upon his Brother's Death, and the Victory gain'd at *Chupas* not being as yet known at *Quito*, he prepar'd to go away to *Vaca de Caſtro*, and having thus brought him into *Pana*, we will now return to what was doing there.

Almagro after his Deſeat reſolv'd to go take Shelter under *Mango Inga*, and was in the right, but *Juan Mendez* perſwaded him firſt to go to *Cuzco* to provide Horſe-shoes; but when he was gone out of that City he was purſu'd and taken. *Vaca de Caſtro* ſoon after

The HISTORY of *America*. 371

after came thither, and was receiv'd in triumphant manner; he being very magnificent as well in his Household Furniture, as in his Habit, and Retinue, which gave Occasion to rail at him. He went to the Prison, to see *Almagro*, and ask'd, what had mov'd him to rebel against the King; to which he answer'd, that neither he, nor any of his had ever any Thoughts of Rebelling, but thought themselves in his Service, as acting by his Commission. *Vaca de Castro* reply'd, and concluded, that notwithstanding they were included under the first general Sentence of Death as Traytors, he would leave them to the Tryal of the Law. He had began to divide the Lands among the Conquerors, and because it was impossible to content all Men, he thought fit to disperse them, sending some upon new Discoveries, and Conquests; and some Account being then come of the Countries about the River of *Plata*, the Wealth whereof was cry'd up far beyond the Truth, many were ambitious to go upon that Conquest, which *Vaca de Castro* granted to Capt. *James de Rojas* with the Title of Captain-General, and *Philip Gutierrez* as Chief-Justice, who began to make the necessary Preparations for that Enterprize. At that Time *Gonzalo Pizarro* was travelling from *Quito*, entertaining more haughty Thoughts than became him, (and being come to *Lima*, talk'd audaciously, pretending, that the Government belong'd to him, and charging the King with Ingratitude in having conferr'd it on *Vaca de Castro*. These Discourses publickly bandy'd about among his Friends, came to the Ears of *Vaca de Castro*, who immediately commanded *Pizarro* to repair to him to *Cuzco*, and sent *John Velez de Guevara* to *Lima* to suppress any Comotions there. *Pizarro* comply'd, and *Vaca de Castro* order'd *Gaspar Rodriguez*, who was Captain of his Guard, to have some Men always privately in Readiness for what might happen. Next for the Conveniency of

372 The HISTORY of America.

Travellers, he ordain'd, that all the nearest *Caziques*, and *Spanish* Landlords should keep all Necessaries, and People in the *Tambos*, to supply all Passengers, that they might not be oblig'd to resort to the *Indians*, and oppress them, as was often done on such Occasions, which he prohibited for the future under such severe Penalties, that it was punctually observ'd, to the great Benefit of the Country. Next he directed Capt. *Gabriel de Rojas* to go settle a Colony in the Province of *los Charcas*, because he being a Man of Reputation, many follow'd him, and he thought it necessary to disperse those unruly Soldiers, who were for any Novelty, especially since *Pizarro* was return'd into the Kingdom, and it was reported abroad, that he talk'd audaciously, and using all means to gain Friends, and they on the other Hand encouraging him in his Folly. *John Velez de Guevara* was not admitted as Governour at *Lima*, but turn'd out of that Place, at which *Vaca de Castro* was justly offended, who at the same Time founded a Colony, call'd *Leon* at *Guanuco*, of which a few Words will be proper in this Place.

THE Situation of this City is good, and reputed very healthy, because of the extraordinary Temperature of the Mornings and Evenings. The Country about it produces plenty of *Spanish* and *Indian* Wheat, Vines, Orange, Citron, Lemon, and other Trees carry'd over from *Spain*, besides abundance of excellent Fruits of the Country, vast Store of Plantains, and sundry Sorts of Pulse, as also large Breeds of Cows, Goats, Horses, and other Cattle, and no less Variety of Fowl; not to speak of the wild Beasts on the Mountains, all which Conveniencies have caus'd the City to thrive and increase very much. Add to all which that Great Roads cross most of the Towns in its Territory, where were *Tambos*, or Publick Inns, and Store-houses of the *Ingas*, well furnish'd. At

Guanuco

The HISTORY of *America*. 373

Guamco was a Royal Palace, of a wonderful Structure, being the Capital of the Provinces next the *Andes*, and near to it was the Temple of the Sun, with a Number of Virgins, and other Ministers, which was so great, that thirty thousand *Indians* were constantly deputed to the Service of it, and hither all the Provinces round about brought their Tribute. The Natives were very brave, and many bloody Battles were fought among themselves, upon trifling Occasions, before they were subdu'd by the *Ingas*, and they had Fortresses on the Tops of Hills for their Security in Time of War. As to Religion, they had Temples, in which they offer'd Sacrifices, and receiv'd Answers from the Devil, who convers'd with those that were appointed for the Purpose. They believ'd the Immortality of the Soul, and bury'd Women and Servants with their Lords, as was practis'd in other Parts, those People looking upon it as a great Happiness to go serve them in the other World, and thus being shut up in great Vaults made for that Purpose, they waited the dreadful Hour of Death, thinking those happy that dy'd first, to go to their Lord in the other World. There were many Fortune-tellers among them, who pretended to know what was signify'd by the Motions of the Stars. The *Conchuchos*, the great Province of *Guailos*, *Tamara*, and *Bombon* are within the Territory of the City of *Leon*, all of them Countries most fertile in Provisions, producing many pleasant and useful Roots, and the Number of Sheep is immense. The Houses were built with Stone, and thatch'd; the Men wore their Mark of Distinction on their Heads, like other Nations. The Sin of Sodom has never been heard of in this Nation, where there are rich Silver Mines.

THUS far in the Year 1542, we now proceed to what hapned in 1543. The Governour *Vaca de Castro* having none but *Almagro's* Enemies about the
B b 3 more

374 *The HISTORY of America.*

more to justify his Proceedings, consulted them, what was to be done with him, who readily concluded, that he ought to be put to Death, and accordingly he pass'd Sentence against him, from which he appeal'd to the King, but to no Effect; whereupon he prepar'd for his End, with an undaunted Courage, and yet at the same Time much like a pious Christian. In Conclusion, his Head was struck off in the Market-place, and his Body bury'd in the Monastery of the *Mercenarians*, under his Father's, as he had desir'd. He was of a mean Stature, little above twenty-four Years of Age, virtuously inclin'd, very understanding, brave, and a notable Horseman; generous, and fond of doing good, tho' he was not quite exempt from Faults, as no Man is, but being such a hopeful Youath, he was much lamented. *Vaca de Castro* having ridded himself of *Almagro*, apply'd himself to execute the King's Instructions, both in Spirituall, and Temporals. In the first Place, he took Care of the Conversion of the *Indians*, and by his Perswasion the *Inga Paul*, Son to *Guaynacava*, and Brother to *Mango*, was baptiz'd, and took the Name of *Christopher*, and some pious Servants of his became Religious Men, and went about *Collao*, instructing the *Indians* in the Christian Doctrine. Besides the Governour erected severall Schools to that Effect, and order'd the Sons of the *Caziques* to go to them. He publish'd good Ordinances for preserving the Liberty of the *Indians*, and the regulating of them, by which they were eas'd of many Burdens, the Licentiousness of the Wars had brought upon them. He suppress'd all Vagabonds and idle Persons, and prohibited quartering upon the Natives, whereupon many of them came to settle at *Cuzco*, and in other Towns, by which means the Country was till'd, and the Roads render'd safe. He sought out two Daughters of the *Inga Atahualpa*, and two of *Guaynacava*, whom he marry'd





The Manner of Interiring the Grandees of Peru



p: 375

to *Spanish* Gentlemen, after instructing, and baptizing them; retrench'd some Distributions of Lands, which he thought extravagant; appointed the Limits of the several Dioceses; made skilful Pilots ascertain the Latitude of the City of *Cuzco*, which had occasion'd so many Confusions; sequester'd all the Marquess *Pizarro*'s Estate, till what was owing to the King, and private Persons were paid; oblig'd many *Spaniards* to marry; forbid bringing down the *Indians* from the Mountains to the Plains, because of the Harm that Change of Air did them; prohibited excessive Gaming; restor'd to the *Indians* many Lands that had been taken from them unjustly. These Ordinances being executed with Severity, check'd the Licentiousness of the Soldiers, the *Indians* liv'd at Ease, and Trade began to flourish. Besides, he enquir'd into the Frauds in the Revenue of the Crown, which touching the King's Officers, who had extravagant Estates, they resented it, and occasion'd some Insolencies, that seem'd to threaten great Troubles, all which he redress'd with much Prudence and Celerity; a Thing highly valu'd at that Time, when the Libertinism till then practis'd in those Parts, was not quite suppress'd, those *Spaniards* being very unruly, as us'd to be under no restraint, through the Fault of the Governours, and upon Occasion of the Civil Wars.

Gonzalo Pizarro was now travelling to *Cuzco*, by Order of the Governour *Vaca de Castro*, attended by some of the Soldiers that had been with him in his Expedition to the Province of *Canela*, and others that had join'd him since, who always discours'd him about past Affairs, flattering, and puffing him up, with Perswasions to set a Value upon himself, and not to suffer any Iniquity, or Wrong, but be sensible of the Greatness God had rais'd him to, all which suited well with his Ambition; which those Soldiers, who were fond of Tumults and Mutinies to enrich themselves,



The Manner of Torturing the Grandees of Peru

to *Spanish* Gentlemen, after instructing, and baptizing them; retrench'd some Distributions of Lands, which he thought extravagant; appointed the Limits of the several Dioceses; made skilful Pilots ascertain the Latitude of the City of *Cuzco*, which had occasion'd so many Confusions; sequester'd all the Marques *Pizarro*'s Estate, till what was owing to the King, and private Persons were paid; oblig'd many *Spaniards* to marry; forbid bringing down the *Indians* from the Mountains to the Plains, because of the Harm that Change of Air did them; prohibited excessive Gaming; restor'd to the *Indians* many Lands that had been taken from them unjustly. These Ordinances being executed with Severity, check'd the Licentiousness of the Soldiers, the *Indians* liv'd at Ease, and Trade began to flourish. Besides, he enquir'd into the Frauds in the Revenue of the Crown, which touching the King's Officers, who had extravagant Estates, they resented it, and occasion'd some Insolencies, that seem'd to threaten great Troubles, all which he redress'd with much Prudence and Celerity; a Thing highly valu'd at that Time, when the Libertinism till then practis'd in those Parts, was not quite suppress'd, those *Spaniards* being very unruly, as us'd to be under no restraint, through the Fault of the Governours, and upon Occasion of the Civil Wars.

Gonzalo Pizarro was now travelling to *Cuzco*, by Order of the Governour *Vaca de Castro*, attended by some of the Soldiers that had been with him in his Expedition to the Province of *Canela*, and others that had join'd him since, who always discours'd him about past Affairs, flattering, and puffing him up, with Perswasions to set a Value upon himself, and not to suffer any Iniquity, or Wrong, but be sensible of the Greatness God had rais'd him to, all which suited well with his Ambition; which those Soldiers, who were fond of Tumults and Mutinies to enrich themselves,



376 *The HISTORY of America.*

and live lawless, perceiving, they proceeded, to put him in Mind, that he had been admitted as Governour of *Quito*, by his Brother's Appointment, which he ought not only to preserve, but to endeavour to be Governour of the whole Kingdom, else he would be look'd upon as a Man of a mean Spirit, who had little Regard to the Opportunity Providence put into his Hands, to reward his Friends, and promote himself, with what of Right belong'd to him. Hereupon they agreed, and conspir'd together to murder *Vaca de Castro*, by that means to get the Government into their own Hands; but one *Villalva* being present, and abhorring the Design, as soon as he could, went away before, and gave notice of the Project to *Vaca de Castro*, who being of a sharp, and vigilant Temper, consulted with his greatest Confidants, resolv'd to keep a better Guard about his Person, and since he had four hundred arm'd Men, that when *Pizarro* came to *Cuzco*, and any Token appear'd of the least Commotion, he should be immediately seiz'd, and his Head struck off, to prevent farther Troubles. (When *Pizarro* drew near *Cuzco*, he receiv'd Letters from some Friends, advising him to take Care of his Person, for that *Vaca de Castro* intended to kill him. Upon this Advice, he conferr'd with) *John de Acofta*, and others, who agreed to kill *Vaca de Castro* upon a Signal given. Being come into the City, where the Discovery made by *Villalva* was publick, *Pizarro* affirm'd that he ly'd, and he stood to what he had said, naming the Conspirators, some of whom fled, when they saw the Secret reveal'd. (*Pizarro* went to visit *Vaca de Castro*, and found a good Guard of Musketeers, and Halberdeers at the Door, and in the House, and *Don Martin de Guzman* had Orders to let none in but only *Pizarro* himself. *Vaca de Castro* receiving him with all outward Demonstrations of Civility, and Affection, discoursing him familiarly about his Expedition into the

The HISTORY of America. 377

the Vale of *Canela*, thinking it convenient to deceive that haughty Man by Shows of Affability; and in Conclusion, by way of Advice, bid him to suspect nothing, and to live peaceably. Tales being still carry'd on both Sides, that they intended to murder one another, *Vaca de Castro* by the Advice of his Friends, concluded it was requisite to prevent Disorders that might ensue, and therefore in solemn manner, before a Notary, commanded *Pizarro*, to go away to *los Charcas*, an Inhabitant of which Place he was, and to stay there, without making any Assemblies of People, that might occasion Jealousies, on Pain of being reputed a Traytor, and Forfeiture of his Estate. When this Command had been notify'd, to avoid adding to the Scandal, when *Vaca de Castro* went abroad, *Pizarro* came to speak to him, and he honourably commanded his Guard to stand aside, saying, he had no need of it, where *Don Gonzalo (Pizarro)* was; who being still more puff'd up with this Honour, went away to live at the Town of *la Plata*, where he had a greater Revenue than the Archbishop of *Toledo*. Having thus brought the Affairs of *Peru* to some seeming Settlement, which yet lasted not long, they may remain in that Condition whilst we proceed to see what was acted in other Parts till the End of the Year 1543, which is the Period of the aforesaid Affairs.



C H A P.

C H A P. IV.

Discoveries made by George Robledo, in those they call the lower Provinces, which are about the Equinoctial; he founds the Town of Antiochia, and is sent Prisoner into Spain; other Discoveries from the New Kingdom of Granada.

IT has been before mention'd, that the Adelantado *Belalcazar* having taken Possession of the Government of *Popayan*, and turn'd out *Pasqual de Andagoya*, *George Robledo* submitted to him, yet under the Restriction of some Protections, till the King upon farther Information should order otherwise; wherein *Robledo* acted not discreetly, for that he having been put in Commission by *Lawrence de Aldana*, and confirm'd by *Pasqual de Andagoya*, could not pretend to any Right to exempt himself from the Jurisdiction of the Government of *Popayan*, for having subdu'd some new Lands, and *Belalcazar* took some Umbrage at it, looking upon it as a Design to divide his Government, under Colour of his having discover'd that Part which contains the City of *Cartago*, and the Provinces of *Quimbaya*, *Carrapa*, *Pucara*, *Paucura*, *Arma*, and some others. *Robledo* after having thus own'd *Belalcazar*, went away into the Province of *Pucara*, where the Tributes laid up for the Lords were receiv'd, and the same he did at *Paucura*, with eighty Foot, and twenty Horse he had under him. From thence
he

The HISTORY of America. 379

he sent a Captain, with forty Horse and Foot, to pass the snowy Mountains, and find a Way to the Vale of *Arby*. These Men returning, said, they had march'd several Days over desert Mountains, till at last one Morning about Break of Day, they attack'd a Town in the Vale, and took some *Indians*; but that being charg'd by a Multitude of those People, they had been forc'd to retire, for want of Horsemen, who could not pass those uncooth Mountains. That Way being thus found impracticable, *Robledo* coasted along the Foot of the Ridge of Mountains, to the Province of *Arma*, and tho' he sent to summon the Lords, only two came, one an old Man with a long Beard, and grey Hair, a Thing never before seen in the Country, the other an handsome Youth, his Face painted Yellow, Blue, and Black, and his Body smear'd with sweet scented Rosin of certain Trees, strew'd with a sort of Powder, call'd *Bina*, which those People use to defend them from the Sun. The old Man carry'd a Gold Portage Pot, for a Present, and the Youth a long Rod, with many Gold Plates hanging at it. This is a very craggy Country, some Horses fell Headlong; the Natives made several Excursions, and took some *Indians* that were in the Service of the *Spaniards*, whom they immediately kill'd, and either boil'd, or roasted. From *Arma* he went to the Towns *de la Pasqua*, and that they call'd *Blanco*, subdu'd the *Indians* that were revolted, and finding that there was no crossing of the Mountains that Way, he travell'd fifteen Leagues through a Desert, till he came into a Province call'd *Zermefana*, which was in Arms, but some *Indians* being taken, and kindly dismiss'd, they all came in peaceably. Thence he sent *John de Frades*, with some Men, to discover *Rio Grande*, or the Great River; who coming to some Towns, the Inhabitants ran into the River, and pass'd over to the other Side, so that he return'd with a few Prisoners,

380 The HISTORY of America.

Prisoners, and some Cotton, which was welcome, as serving to make Armour.

Robledo then proceeded to the Town of *Peras*, where the People being in Arms, the Ensign *Alvaro de Mendoza*, who was sent to reduce them, with some Foot, because the Horse could do no Service by reason of the Cragginess of the Country, took some Prisoners, and in his Return was met by four thousand *Indians* carrying Cords to bind the *Spaniards*, their Flint Tools to cut them in Pieces, and Pots to boil them in; but being spoke to by the Interpreters, they concluded a Peace, and the Prisoners were dismiss'd. (*Robledo* being inform'd that there were some Towns at the Foot of the Mountain) sent *John de Frades*, with twelve Men, to find out the Way, who within a few Leagues discover'd a Town, where the Natives having spy'd him, assembled to about one thousand, whereupon he secur'd himself on the Top of a Rock, where speaking friendly to them by means of the Interpreter, and they admiring such strange People, for they had never seen any *Spaniards*, a prime Man came to him, with a Garland of Straw curiously wrought on his Head, many Plumes of Feathers, and painted, and when he was grown more familiar by talking with the Interpreter, he call'd others, who carry'd the *Spaniards* much Provision, and the next Day they all went away together to *Robledo*, who proceeded to their Town, which he call'd *de la Sal*, or of Salt, because they found much of it there, made up like Sugar Loaves, somewhat greyish, and taken from Salt Springs. This Province being reduc'd, *Robledo* sent *Jerome Lewis Texelo*, with some Horse and Foot, to pass through a Breach there was in the Ridge of the snowy Mountains, as he did, and at Sun-rising came into a Vale, where there was a Town, the Inhabitants whereof spying him, beat the Alarm, and about one thousand came out to ingage
the

The HISTORY of America. 381

the *Spaniards*, who were twelve Horse and twenty Foot, of which Number six were wounded, and the *Indians* admiring the Strangeness of those Men, and their Valour, fled, the *Spaniards* went into the Town, and *Texelo* sent *Robledo* advice of what had hapned. The next Day, the *Indians* return'd more numerous, fought about an Hour and a half, and suffer'd so much that they came no more. Their Weapons were Darts, made of Palm-Tree Wood hardned at the Fire, Macanas of the same, Slings, and Estolicas, which are Rods they cast stuck in a Stick, too Spears long, with which they cast them out, and they fly like Arrows. *Robledo* then came, having been inform'd, that there was plenty of Provisions, as Mayz, Kidney-Beans, Rabbits, dumb Dogs, and Fruit. This Province was call'd *Aburra*, and the *Spaniards* gave it the Name of the Vale of St. *Bartholomew*. In this Province some *Indians* hang'd themselves in their own Mantles, as two did in the House where *Robledo* quarter'd, and being cut down, and ask'd, why they did so, they answer'd, Because they were frighted to see the Countenances, Beards, and Habit of the *Spaniards*. Several Horse and Foot were sent to discover towards *Rio Grande*, or the great River, and other Ways, still in Quest of the Vale of *Arbi*, and *Robledo* finding nothing but Deserts, on St. *Bartholomew's* Day, this Year 1542, departed that Province of *Aburra*, repass'd the snowy Mountains, and after six Days Journey through Deserts, they lighted on the River, the Descent whereof was very craggy, and saw a Town in which there were Salt Loaves as high as a Man; went down to another Town, where they took abundance of very gay Cotton Cloth, with which the Soldiers were cloath'd, and the *Cazique* signify'd, that farther on there was a very rich and populous Country, with Graves that had much Gold in them, telling *Robledo*, the *Indians* there were as thick as the Grass in the Field, and

382 *The HISTORY of America.*

and if he would go thither, he would furnish him with Guides.

(CAPT) *Vallejo* went with some Men to see something of it, and after travelling eight Days over such cold Mountains, that they thought they should have perish'd, they came to a River, which was so deep, that there was scarce seeing what was at the Bottom, and the many Rocks were dreadful, as was the Noise of the Water among them; the Bridge over it being a Tree eighty Foot in Length, and thicker than six Men's Bodies, lying on a Rock, and from thence forwards, Wattles made of Osier, three Spans wide, with Parapets of the same, to which they held with their Hands, but the Horses not being able to pass were left behind. Two Leagues from thence, they came to another Town on the River, and another Bridge of Wattles, which being pass'd, two Leagues from thence they came to some Cottages, where the Inhabitants stood upon their Guard. Having gain'd them, from the Eminence they discover'd large Vales, and many Dwellings, and a few Hours after heard much Noise of Horns and Drums, and saw several Bodies of Men, whereupon the *Spaniards* thought fit to retire to the Bridge, and just came Time enough to prevent the *Indians* hewing it asunder, to which End they had Axes of Flint, yet they charg'd so fiercely, that the Bridge being so narrow that they could pass but one by one, *John de Torres* was kill'd with the Arrows, and another thrown off the Bridge, by shaking it furiously, and the Stream being very rapid, and full of Rocks, the *Indians* took him alive. Others were kill'd in passing the Bridge, and all the rest wounded, who made their Way to the other Bridge, whence they sent to *Robledo*, for Blacks to carry those that could not march, and Provisions, without which they could not proceed any farther, being oblig'd in the mean Time to eat the Horses

that

The HISTORY of *America*. 383

that had been kill'd by falling. The *Indians* had suffer'd so much, that they did not think fit to pursue the *Spaniards*. *Robledo* having heard the Account given by *Capt. Vallejo*, resolv'd to enter that Province with all his Men, which occasion'd much muttering, they alledging that it was exposing them to certain Slaughter; whereupon *Robledo* discours'd them, representing the Honour they should gain, their own Poverty, how base it would be to turn back, the Want they must always live in, a Thing intolerable to Men of high Spirits; that as for himself he had enough to live on at home, and yet would expose his Person, therefore they might try to pass another less dangerous Way, which, if not found, he would comply with their Demands; as he afterwards was oblig'd to do, resolving to cross the River on Floats made of thick Reeds, bound together with Withes, and they spent eight Days in passing, because there were only twelve Swimmers, and those who could not swim, ty'd two Reeds, or Canes as thick as a Man's Thigh together at the Ends, seated themselves between them, and then one Swimmer before and another behind conducted them over, which was look'd upon as a bold and desperate Passage; but by it *Robledo* was eas'd of his Trouble, for having carry'd those Men into a Place, whence the Retreat was so difficult, and he very well rewarded the Inventor of that Method of carrying them over, being oblig'd to give a good Account of those who had serv'd him so faithfully.

WHEN past the River, they could not proceed along its Bank, but were forc'd to cross several steep Ridges, where two Horses fell and were kill'd, which furnish'd Flesh for some Days. From one of those Hills, they discover'd a Province call'd *Curame*, the Natives whereof stood upon their Guard in Places of difficult

384 *The HISTORY of America.*

difficult Access; but *Robledo* after having offer'd them Peace, fell upon a great Number of them, killing and taking many. The Prisoners, by means of the Interpreters acquainted him, that there were several Provinces farther on, with whom they were at War, and us'd to eat one another. Having represented to them how beastly a Practice that was, and that they ought to worship one only God, with more to that Purpose, he dismiss'd them, desiring that they might be Friends, otherwise he would make War on them, and they promis'd to return, with all the Lords. Some Days passing, and none returning, *Robledo* sent out Capt. *Vallejo*, with some Men, who took many Prisoners, and some of those that had been taken before being ask'd, Why they would not accept of Peace? Answer'd, That their Lord was very powerful, and would not be a Friend to Christians. *Robledo* then advanc'd into the Provinces of *Hebexico*, *Penco*, *Purruto*, and *Guarny*, and having been twenty Days in those Parts return'd to *Curame*, where he had left *Alvaro de Mendoza*. Thence he again went back to *Hebexico*, and thinking he had discover'd enough, propos'd to settle a Colony there, which being acceptable to all, because they were weary of going through so many Hardships and Fighting, the same was perform'd with some Difficulty, because Provisions were to be got only by Dint of Sword. The new Town was call'd *Antiochia*, and *Robledo* perceiving, that, tho' he had been there two Months, the *Indians* would not be brought to Peace, order'd Capt. *Robledo*, with forty Men to go burn a Town they call'd *Guamas*, where the Inhabitants being upon their Guard, tho' he attack'd it before Day, came out with burning Wreaths of Straw, by the Light whereof the *Spaniards* defeated them, killing many, and among the rest a Lord call'd *Zuzaburruco*. The Place being abandon'd, the *Spaniards* took

The HISTORY of America. 385

took much Gold, Cotton Cloth, and Prisoners, with which he return'd. *Robledo* told the Prisoners, that he did them Harm because they would not accept of Peace. They answer'd, That their Lords were against it, and not they; because other *Spaniards* had been at *Nori*, and *Buritica* thirty-four Leagues from thence, and done no Harm, and they meant those under *John de Badillo* that were in those Parts some Years before.

Antony Pimentel (being sent to reduce the Province of *Pécapa*, perform'd it by the Help of the Dogs, because the Horses were of no use by reason of the Roughness of the Country) and it was wonderful that those Dogs knew the *Indians* that were Friends from those who were Enemies.

Robledo having founded the Colonies of *Antiochia*, *Cartago*, and *St. Anne of Anzerma*, thought he had done enough to deserve being employ'd by the King, without any Subjection to another, and accordingly set out with twelve Men for *Cartagena*) on the 8th of *January* 1542, through the Vales of *Nori*, and the Province of *Guaca*, thirty Leagues from *Antiochia*, and two Days after over the Mountains of *Abile*, where they lost their Way, and travelling to the Westward, a Black knew a River that falls into that of *Darien*, and being in want of Provisions, they kill'd an Horse to eat, and so proceeded till they came to a Field of *Indian* Wheat, which was a great Relief to them. Eight Days after, they found an *Indian* Fishing, who because they understood not his Language, often repeated *St. Sebastian*, *St. Sebastian*, pointing with his Hand towards the Town of that Name, which was fifteen Leagues from thence at the End of the Bay of *Uraba*, and had been founded in the Territory of *Cartagena* by the Adelantado *Don Pedro de Heredia*. Other *Indians* came up afterwards with their Bows, and the Poison for their Arrows wrapp'd up

386 The HISTORY of America.

in Leaves, that it might not take wet. They knowing *John de Frades*, who had been in that Country, ran to embrace him, calling him by his Name, and furnish'd Hens, *Indian* Wheat, and Fruit. At length those *Spaniards* came in a very shatter'd Condition to the Town of *St. Sebastian de Buena Vista*, where Capt. *Alonso de Heredia*, (Brother to the Adelantado, was Governour, who tho' he admir'd that so small a Number should pass through so many fierce Nations of *Indians*, instead of using them kindly, seiz'd and robb'd them of all the Gold they had; and the Adelantado coming soon after, form'd a Proceſs against *Robledo*, pretending that the Town of *Antiochia* was within the Territory of *Cartagena*, and sent him away Prisoner into *Spain*. *Robledo*, to prevent farther Mischief sent *Peter de Zieza* to the Court at *Panama* to acquaint them with what was doing, whence the said *Zieza* return'd to *Popayan*, and is the same that writ the History of the Provinces of *Quito* and *Popayan*, with much Accuracy, and yet he was as unfortunate as many more, in receiving no Reward for his Labours. When *Don Pedro de Heredia* had sent away *Robledo* into *Spain*, he went away himself to the New City of *Antiochia*, where he seiz'd the Magistrates, and declar'd himself Governour; but *John Cabrera* coming in soon after from *Belalcazar* secur'd him, and thinking that the Town was not well seated among those craggy Mountains, remov'd it to the Bank of a River, that runs through the Vale of *Nore*, where it now is. That done he carry'd away *Heredia* Prisoner to *Belalcazar*, who sent him to the Court at *Panama*, to be punish'd as an Usurper of another's Right.

THIS done *Belalcazar* perceiving that the *Indians* of the Province of *Arma* were not otherwise to be

Good!
what the
ravages
described.

The HISTORY of *America*. 387

be kept under, founded a Town there, which was also call'd *Arma*, and *Heredia* being discharg'd by the Court at *Panama*, return'd with a Retolution to be reveng'd, and accordingly coming back to *Cartagena*, march'd from thence with Horse and Foot, possess'd himself of *Antiochia* twice, and was as often turn'd out of it. Whilst these Things were in Agitation, Capt. *Ferdinand Perez de Quesada*, being inform'd that beyond the Mountains to the Westward of the New Kingdom of *Granada*, which is adjoining to the Parts we have been speaking of, there were extraordinary Treasures of Gold, Silver, and Emeralds, set out from the said New Kingdom of *Granada*, with two hundred and seventy *Spaniards*, and near two hundred Horses, and all other Necessaries for such an Enterprize. His first March was through a very cold Desert, full of Morasses, and Lands overflow'd, extending fifty Leagues, where some Servants, and about twenty-five Horses were lost. Being past that Solitude, they came into a Vale, call'd of our Lady, where they got some Provision, which began already to fall short. When pass'd the Vale, they advanc'd fifty Leagues Southward, along the Ridge of the Mountain, the same Way *George de Espira*, Governour of *Venezuela*, had gone before, because the lower Land is apt to be flooded. Beyond that began the long Mountains, running to the Westward; at the beginning whereof was a Race of *Indians*, call'd *Macos*, the most agreeable of all that was then discover'd there, tho' the Inhabitants were not very many, nor rich. Having found nothing to eat since their coming from the Vale of our Lady, they stay'd in this Place eight Days; and then came to the River *Papamere*, where is another Generation of *Indians* call'd *Guaipis*; said to drive a Trade with

388 The HISTORY of America.

the People of the Country then sought after, and they gave such an Account as encourag'd the Men to continue their Hardships. Next they came to another Nation call'd *Choques*, Man-eaters, the Land somewhat populous, and uneven, through which they travell'd nine Days, as far as *Rio Bermejo*, or the Red River, whence *George de Espira* turn'd back, the same being about five hundred Leagues from the North Sea.

WHEN past this River, they enter'd upon a new Country, which the Guides said they knew not, and being extraordinary craggy, Discoverers were sent out, who could find no Way, but one that went up to the Mountain of *Tagaeza*, the same that had always directed them. Thirty Leagues they travell'd along that uneasy Way, and not being able to proceed, were forc'd to return to the uncooth Plains, along which they march'd several Days, without finding any Provisions besides a few Roots, hewing their Way through, and being forc'd to make many Bridges. The Hardships continuing, and Food falling short, the Soldiers began to sicken apace, and some dy'd, and thus they came to a Town call'd *del Sacramento*, whither the Discoverers brought Samples of that Sort of Cinnamon, which has been said to be carry'd to *Quito*, by which being put in Hopes of some Ease, they found themselves drawn into greater Hardships, all that Country being full of Bogs, and Quagmires, without Provisions, and those call'd the Cinnamon-Trees extend forty Leagues, and there many Men perish'd through Hunger. Departing thence, they proceeded to a Town they call'd *de la Fragua*, or of the Forge, where they cross'd two mighty Rivers, and had some Rancounters with the *Indians*. The Men being then much fatigu'd, and the

The HISTORY of *America*. 389

the Place affording some Provisions, it was thought fit to rest there two Months, after which finding themselves inclos'd between the Mountains, they return'd to a River they had pass'd, not being able to go along the same by which they came, because the Lands were all flooded. This River led them to a Vale within those Mountains, call'd *Mocoa*, where some *Indians* that were taken, giving a good Account of what was farther on, some were sent to discover the same, whilst *Quesada* himself, with the rest of the Men, holding on his Way, came to a Nation, that guarded all the most difficult Passes, and made Stands in those Places where the Horses could be of no use. Thus, with much Difficulty they went on, still hearing much of a Country call'd *Achibichi*, and being come to it with incredible Labour, found themselves in the Vale of *Cibundoy*, which is in the Territory of the Town of *Pasto*, under the Government of the Adelantado *Belalcazar*, having travell'd from their first Entrance into the Province of the *Macos* to the said Vale two hundred Leagues through Woods, a Desert, poor, uncooth, and marshy Country. Eighty *Spaniards* dy'd in this Progress, and the rest came off spent, and sickly, it being look'd upon as a Wonder that they did not all perish amidst such Hardships; one hundred and ten Horses were lost, and almost all the Servants. The *Spaniards* were on their Journey from their first setting out till their Arrival in the Vale of *Cibundoy*, a Year and four Months, and from the Entrance of the Woods, the Mountain runs South to the aforesaid Vale, which they travell'd on the opposite Side to that where are the Towns of *Guacacillo*, *Popayan*, and *Pasto*, whence Capt. *Quesada* return'd to the New Kingdom of *Gra-*
nada,

390 *The HISTORY of America.*

nada, all that heard of that long and dangerous March admiring, that those brave Men, in so long a Time had not mutiny'd, but born all their Sufferings with such Resolution,

The End of the Eighth Book.



THE



T H E
General HISTORY
Of the vast CONTINENT and ISLANDS of
A M E R I C A, &c.

D E C A D IV. B O O K IX.

C H A P. I.

*What was done at the River of Plate
by the Governour Alvar Nuñez Ca-
beza de Vaca ; his Discovery up that
River, and several other Particulars.*



W E concluded the last Book with the Affairs
of the Countries about the Equinoctial, and
must begin this in the Southern Regions
about the famous *River of Plate*, where we
left *Alvar Nuñez Cabeza de Vaca*, the new Gover-
nour, on the *River Parana*, hasting towards the City

392 The HISTORY of *America*.

of the *Assumption*. He arriv'd there on the 11th of *March* 1542, and it was observ'd, that for some Leagues before he reach'd it, many *Indians* met him on the Way with Provisions, bidding him welcome in *Spanish*, and some of them so perfect in the Language, that they seem'd to have been bred in *Spain*. The City is seated on the Bank of the River *Paraguay*, in twenty-five Deg. of S. Lat. He was receiv'd with much Satisfaction by all the *Spaniards*, admiring how he had travell'd about three hundred Leagues among *Indians* in such peaceable manner, and having produc'd his Commission, he was receiv'd as Governour. He considering that all the Ships which came from *Spain* would directly come to an Anchor at *Buenos Ayres*, where they ought to find a suitable Reception, sent two Brigantines, with as many Men as was thought Requisite to settle on that Harbour, the Distance from which to the *Assumption* is three hundred and fifty Leagues up the River, a dangerous Passage. Those Men setting out towards the Middle of *April*, he next apply'd himself to reduce the Natives to Obedience, to which purpose he assembled all the Priests, to whom he caus'd to be read a Letter from the King, laying the good Usage of the *Indians* on their Consciences. Soon after his Arrival the *Spaniards* made many Complaints against the King's Officers, a wicked sort of People, who throughout all the *West-Indies*, under Colour of securing the Royal Revenue of the Crown, committed many Insolencies; however *Alvar Núñez* to take care first of what was most necessary, summon'd the *Indians* that were in Subjection, whom he discours'd in the Presence of the Clergy, and Religious Men, admonishing them to give Attention to the Priests, for their Instruction in the Christian Faith, on which depended the Felicity of their Souls hereafter, and their good Usage in
this

The HISTORY of *America*. 393

this World, declaring that the King's Will was such, and that he was much intent upon it; at the same charging them to forbear eating Man's Flesh. They answer'd, They would readily comply with his Directions, and ever continue Loyal. This Nation of the *Guaranies* by their Language understand all the other Nations along the *River of Plate*, they were wont to fatten Prisoners taken in War, to eat them, feeding them with all Dainties, and when fit for their Palates, kept great Festivals with Dancing, as has been said before of the *Brasilians*, and then devour'd them, with much Jollity. The *Agaces*, on the *River Paraguay*, are a People of a large Stature, and daring, went along the River in Canoes, like Pirates, neither tilling, nor sowing the Ground, making War continually on the *Guaranies*, to exchange Prisoners for Food. The *Spaniards* were first at War with them, then they concluded a Peace, and broke it; but now being inform'd that *Alvar Nuñez* was come, and apprehending a War, they sent three prime Men, and Peace was again concluded upon good Terms, the chief Article being, that the *Agaces*, who were among the *Guaranies*, should stay there if they pleas'd, and that such as of their own free Will desir'd to be Christians should not be molested. Another Nation, call'd *Guaycurues*, had made War on the *Indians* that had submitted to the Crown of *Spain*, possessing their Lands and Fisheries, and the prime *Indians*, who were Christians, having made their Complaints against them, the Governour order'd inquiry to be made into that Affair, and finding it to be as the Plaintiffs had said, he sent three Priests, with a Guard of fifty Soldiers, to require those People to restore the Lands they had taken, to submit to the King, and give Ear to the Preachers, or else he would make War on them. They return'd eight Days after, and reported, that
the

394 *The HISTORY of America.*

the *Guaycurues* were so far from complying, that they had committed Hostilities, and some of the Soldiers shew'd the Wounds they had receiv'd. The Governour resolving, no longer to bear with their Insolence, drew together two hundred Musketeers, and Cross-bow-men, and twelve Horsemen, with whom he march'd from the *Assumption* on the 12th of *July*, and proceeded to the Town call'd *Zaguay*, on the Bank of the River, belonging to a Christian *Indian*, call'd *Lawrence Mormocen*, where many thousands of *Guarani* *Indians* were drawn together, all well arm'd, and equipp'd, to take Part in that War, which was made in Favour of them. They all pass'd the River by two in the Afternoon, in the Brigantines, and two hundred Canoes brought for that Purpose.

THE Spies sent to discover the *Guaycurues* brought word that they were hunting, and knew nothing of the *Spaniards* having pass'd, whereupon it was resolv'd to march by Night, in order to surprize them when they were all together, which was accordingly done. In the Morning the Charge was given, and tho' those *Indians* were startled at the Horses, they fought bravely, being large Men, active, and resolute; however four hundred Men and Boys were taken, and for as much as it was the Custom of the *Guaranies* to return home into their own Country, if they had taken but a Feather from their Enemies, it was then thought requisite to retire, taking special Care that the Prisoners might not be kill'd, the Enemy still making some Attacks. In their return they kill'd abundance of Deer, the *Indians* very much admiring, that the Horses should be so swift as to overtake them. Being come to the City of the *Assumption*, they found that *Gonzalo de Mendoza*, who had been left Governour there, with two hundred and fifty *Spaniards*, had secur'd six
of

The HISTORY of *America*. 395

of the *Taperue Indians*, a Nation that neither sow'd their Land, nor bred Cattle, and were extraordinary Runners. *Mendoza* said, that those *Indians* told him, that their Nation understanding there was War made on the *Guaycurnes*, desir'd to be at Peace with the *Spaniards*, and assist them; but that he suspecting this to be a treacherous Design, had detain'd them. *Alvar Nuñez* having discours'd each of them apart, gave them good Words, and some Gifts, offering to be their Friend, provided that they did not make War on the *Guaranies*, who were the King's Subjects, and so they went away well pleas'd. *Mendoza* farther inform'd, that the *Agaces*, with whom Peace had been before concluded, had, during the Governour's Absence advanc'd towards the City in Arms; but that finding they were discover'd, they had retir'd, and fell upon the Country Houses and Land of the Christian *Indians*, carrying away many Women; that they made Inroads every Night, and that the Women they had given as Hostages were fled. The Religious Men, the Commanders, and the Officers of the Crown having been advis'd with about this Breach of the Peace, all gave it under their Hands, that War ought to be made upon those *Indians*. The Governour then order'd all the Prisoners of the *Guaycurnes* to appear before him, and declar'd, it was the King's Will, that none of them should be Slaves, and that those who had any in their Custody should secure them, and conceal none; after which he sent one of them to call the Prime Men of their Nation, saying, he would conclude Peace with them. That Messenger return'd within four Days, with about twenty of them, who sitting down upon one Foot, as is their Custom, said, they had been at War with the *Guaranies*, the *Imperues*, the *Agaces*, the *Guatataes*, the *Naperbes*, the *Mayayes*, and several other Nations, and vanquish'd them

396 *The HISTORY of America.*

them all, and since they found that the *Spaniards* were braver than themselves, they were come to submit to them. The Governour answer'd, He was come thither by Order of the great King of *Spain*, to endeavour to make them Christians, that they might be sav'd, and to keep them in Peace, and in case they would forbear making War on the *Guaranies* his Friends, he would look upon them as such, and discharge all their Prisoners. They reply'd, that they then submitted themselves to the King, promis'd to be Friends to the *Guaranies*, and would bring Provisions to the City, and obey what Orders should be given them. The Peace being concluded, they went away with the Prisoners, well satisfy'd, coming afterwards in great Numbers once a Week to trade and barter, and never broke the Peace, but were very good Friends.

A few Days after the *Aperues* had been gone, many of them return'd to the Bank of the *Paraguay*; the Governour sent Canoes to bring them over, and they also being come in his Presence, sat down upon one Foot, like peaceable People, which is their Custom, saying, That since the *Guaicurues* had been vanquish'd, they, and several other Nations were afraid, and willing to conclude Peace with, and submit to the Conquerors, to which purpose they brought some of their Daughters, whom they desir'd the Governour to accept of as Hostages. *Alvar Núñez* answer'd, That he had been sent by the King of *Spain*, to signify to all Nations, how much it concern'd them to become Christians, as the Religious Men would instruct them; and that, if they would do so, and be Friends to the *Guaranies*, he would defend them against their Enemies, and they might come to trade in the City as the *Guaicurues* did. He then receiv'd their Hostages, and their Act of Submission, whereupon

The HISTORY of *America*. 397

upon they went away well pleas'd; he giving them as he did to all others, Hawks-bells, Axes, Scissors, Knives, Needles, and such like Things; for like a discreet Man he endeavour'd rather to subdue those Barbarian Nations by fair Means than by Force of Arms. The Affairs at the *Assumption* seeming to be in a peaceable Condition, the Governour sent two other Brigantines, with Supplies of Men, and Necessaries to *Buenos Ayres*; and because *Dominick de Irala*, who had been Governour before his coming was a turbulent Person, he gave him good Words, promising to acquaint the King with his good Services, and appointed him to go up the *Paraguay*, with ninety *Spaniards*, in three Brigantines, well furnish'd with Provisions, for three Months and an half, to make Inquiry along the Shores of what was farther up the Country, and with them went some chosen Christian *Guaranies*, to be sent with three *Spaniards* upon Discovery. The Brigantines sail'd on the 20th of *November* 1542, and eight Days after gave Notice, that the three *Spaniards* had set out, with about eight hundred *Indians* from Port *Piedras*; and twenty Days after those three *Spaniards* return'd to the City of the *Assumption*, saying, that when they had travell'd four Days Journey with those *Indians*, they fir'd all the Fields they pass'd through, which was giving Notice to their Enemies, and that besides it being contrary to the Custom of such as go upon Discovery, the Captain of the *Indians*, whose Name was *Aracare*, bid them go back, for the Christians were nought, and that seeing them go back, they also came away.

UPON this Advice, four Prime Christian *Indians* offer'd to go upon that Discovery, provided that four *Spaniards* would go with them, which the Governour having accepted with Thanks, they gather'd fifteen hundred

396 *The HISTORY of America.*

them all, and since they found that the *Spaniards* were braver than themselves, they were come to submit to them. The Governour answer'd, He was come thither by Order of the great King of *Spain*, to endeavour to make them Christians, that they might be sav'd, and to keep them in Peace, and in case they would forbear making War on the *Guaranies* his Friends, he would look upon them as such, and discharge all their Prisoners. They reply'd, that they then submitted themselves to the King, promis'd to be Friends to the *Guaranies*, and would bring Provisions to the City, and obey what Orders should be given them. The Peace being concluded, they went away with the Prisoners, well satisfy'd, coming afterwards in great Numbers once a Week to trade and barter, and never broke the Peace, but were very good Friends.

A few Days after the *Aperues* had been gone, many of them return'd to the Bank of the *Paraguay*; the Governour sent Canoes to bring them over, and they also being come in his Presence, sat down upon one Foot, like peaceable People, which is their Custom, saying, That since the *Guaycurues* had been vanquish'd, they, and several other Nations were afraid, and willing to conclude Peace with, and submit to the Conquerors, to which purpose they brought some of their Daughters, whom they desir'd the Governour to accept of as Hostages. *Alvar Núñez* answer'd, That he had been sent by the King of *Spain*, to signify to all Nations, how much it concern'd them to become Christians, as the Religious Men would instruct them; and that, if they would do so, and be Friends to the *Guaranies*, he would defend them against their Enemies, and they might come to trade in the City as the *Guaycurues* did. He then receiv'd their Hostages, and their Act of Submission, whereupon

upon they went away well pleas'd; he giving them as he did to all others, Hawks-bells, Axes, Scissors, Knives, Needles, and such like Things; for like a discreet Man he endeavour'd rather to subdue those Barbarian Nations by fair Means than by Force of Arms. The Affairs at the *Assumption* seeming to be in a peaceable Condition, the Governour sent two other Brigantines, with Supplies of Men, and Necessaries to *Buenos Ayres*; and because *Dominick de Irala*, who had been Governour before his coming was a turbulent Person, he gave him good Words, promising to acquaint the King with his good Services, and appointed him to go up the *Paraguay*, with ninety *Spaniards*, in three Brigantines, well furnish'd with Provisions, for three Months and an half, to make Inquiry along the Shores of what was farther up the Country, and with them went some chosen Christian *Guaranies*, to be sent with three *Spaniards* upon Discovery. The Brigantines sail'd on the 20th of *November* 1542, and eight Days after gave Notice, that the three *Spaniards* had set out, with about eight hundred *Indians* from Port *Piedras*; and twenty Days after those three *Spaniards* return'd to the City of the *Assumption*, saying, that when they had travell'd four Days Journey with those *Indians*, they fir'd all the Fields they pass'd through, which was giving Notice to their Enemies, and that besides it being contrary to the Custom of such as go upon Discovery, the Captain of the *Indians*, whose Name was *Aracare*, bid them go back, for the Christians were nought, and that seeing them go back, they also came away.

UPON this Advice, four Prime Christian *Indians* offer'd to go upon that Discovery, provided that four *Spaniards* would go with them, which the Governour having accepted with Thanks, they gather'd fifteen hundred

398 *The HISTORY of America.*

hundred *Indians*, went up by Water to Port *Piedras*, and then travell'd thirty Days, through Desert Countries, with much Hunger, and Thirst, when not knowing how to proceed, they resolv'd to return, feeding on Herbs, and drinking the Juice of them. They return'd to the *Assumption*, quite spent, having suffer'd much from the *Indian Aracare*, who thereupon was try'd, condemn'd, and hang'd. (At this Time arriv'd four Brigantines the Governour had sent to the River of *Parana*) to relieve the *Spaniards*, that were aboard the Ship he had sent from the Island of *St. Catherine*, and *Peter de Estopinan* affirm'd, that all those Men had suffer'd much, and been in Danger of perishing, (by reason that the Port of *Buenos Ayres* was abandon'd; that twenty-five Men had gone away to *Brasil* for Want, and all must have perish'd, had they not been so seasonably reliev'd, for that after the Succour arriv'd, they had been attack'd, and five or six Soldiers wounded, and that the Town of *Buenos Ayres* could not be built because it was Winter, and the Wind and Water carry'd away the mud Walls.)

THUS ended the Year 1542, and on the 4th of February 1543, a thatch'd House in the City of the *Assumption* taking Fire, the same was carry'd on by the Wind in such Manner, that only two hundred Houses were sav'd, after which they were rebuilt with mud Walls. After this *Dominick de Irala* return'd with the three Brigantines he had commanded, and said, he had gone as far as the Country of the *Indians* call'd *Cacones*, who till'd the Land, and bred Hens, that he had march'd three Days Journey up, and lik'd it, having seen some Tokens of Gold and Silver; calling that Province *de los Reyes*, or of the King's, because he arriv'd there on the Feast of the *Epiphany*. Upon this Relation it was resolv'd to make an Incur-
sion

The HISTORY of America. 399

sion that Way, and in order to it the Governour sent *Gonzalo de Mendoza*, with three Brigantines, to get Provisions among the *Guaranies*, directing him to pay for the same, and use them well. When *Mendoza* was come to Port *Giguy*, the Governour was inform'd by the Interpreters, that two powerful *Indians* were revolted, and obstructed those who continu'd loyal from furnishing Provisions, whereupon *Dominick de Irala*, went with one hundred and fifty Men to reduce them, as he did, partly by Force, and partly by fair Means, the Governour always adhering to the King's Instructions, which enjoyn'd him to use all possible Methods for gaining those People, without declaring War. Provisions were then purchas'd, and when all was ready to proceed on the intended Discovery, the King's Officers privately induc'd *F. Bernard de Armenta*, and his Companion, to go away to the Sea Coast, and bring over Letters to the King, complaining of the Government of *Alvar Nuñez*, whom they hated, because he had deliver'd the Soldiers and Inhabitants from the Oppression, and Tyranny, and reform'd several Abuses, reducing them to Obedience, for which reason they slander'd all his best Actions. When *Alvar Nuñez* came to know of this Contrivance, the Friars were gone, but he sent after and fetch'd them back, and inquiring into the Matter, caus'd the King's Officers to be secur'd, appointing a Judge, and when ready to set out upon his Expedition, he took two of those Officers with him, leaving the other two in the City, but suspended from the Execution of their Employments, till the King should order otherwise. Having thus settled Affairs, he took four hundred Musketeers, and Cross-bowmen, two hundred whereof went in ten Brigantines, and the rest with twelve Horse by Land, to the Port of *Guaybrãno*, and thus he set out, leaving Capt.

John

400 *The HISTORY of America.*

John de Salazar de Espinosa (in the City, with above two hundred Musketeers, and Cross-bow-men, and six good Horses. His Departure was on the 8th of September 1543, the ten Brigantines being attended by one hundred and twenty Canoes, aboard which were twelve hundred *Indian* Soldiers, very gay, with their Plumes of Feathers, and Plates of bright Metal on their Foreheads, which made a good Show, and they said, that when they fought, the Brightness thereof blinded there Enemies. In a few Days this Fleet arriv'd at the Port of *Guaybiano*, the Boundary of the Nation of the *Guaranies*, and the next Day proceeded to the Port of *Itabitan*, where he found those that went by Land, and there they all imbarc'd, with the Horses, and sail'd up the River, very pleasantly, fishing, and landing to hunt, when they kill'd Abundance of Deer, and other wild Creatures. On the 12th of October that Fleet arriv'd at Port *Candelaria*, or *Candlemas*, where *John de Ayolas* had landed, and been treacherously kill'd, with eighty *Spaniards*, whilst he was waiting for *Dominick de Irala* to go fetch him off in the Brigantines. Here they made an Observation, and found the Latitude to be twenty Deg. forty Min. South.

To that Port came six *Paraguac Indians*, and ask'd, Whether those were any of the same Christians that had been before in those Parts? Being told, they were not, one of them went to speak to *Alvar Nunez*, and told him, He came from a principal *Indian* of that Country, who desir'd to be his Friend, and had preserv'd all he took from *John de Ayolas*, being about sixty-six Loads carry'd by *Indians* call'd *Chances*, being Plates, Bracelets, Crowns, Hatchets, and small Vessels of Gold, and Silver. *Alvar Nunez*, answer'd, he might assure his Lord, that he forgave all that was past, and would be his Friends, and having given him

some

some Toys, he went away, saying his Lord would come the next Day. Four Days being past, and no Body appearing, the Governour's Interpreter, advis'd him, not to stay, for that they impos'd on him, to gain Time to retire, and secure themselves, but that he might follow and overtake them. After eight Days sail, they discover'd the Track of the *Paraguays*, and found the Bank of the *Paraguay* cover'd with several Sorts of Fruit and Cassia fistula Trees, which both *Spaniards* and *Indians* did eat. Having divided the Fleet into two Parts, the Governour advanc'd with one of them to the Country of the *Guaxarapos*, leaving *Gonzalo de Mendoza* with the rest to follow him slowly, for fear of alarming those People with so great a Multitude. When come into that Country, some of the Natives appear'd, and Peace was concluded, and there an Observation was taken, and the Lat. was nineteen Deg. twenty Min. The Natives, when the River is low, draw near to it, to make their Advantage of the Fishery, and when the Floods come down, which is about *January*, they retire up the Country, because the Water rises six Fathoms above the Banks, and spread above one hundred Leagues over the Plains, which happens every Year, when the Sun departs from their Tropick towards ours; and those People when the Water rises above the Banks, have their Canoes ready, with Hearths in them, and go away with the Water whither they please; and there they dress their Meat for four Months, which is the Time the Floods last, land where there is any dry Ground, and hunt the wild Beasts that fly from the Water, and as soon as the Water falls, they return to the Banks of the River, where an infinite Multitude of Fish remains, which occasions a Stench. *Alvar Nunez* left those People peaceable, and well satisfy'd,

402 *The HISTORY of America.*

for they are Savage and Robbers, like Men living on Frontiers.

C H A P. II.

Actions and Discoveries of the Governor Alvar Núñez in the Province of the River of Plate continu'd; till the King's Officers mutiny, and send him Prisoner into Spain, where he is honourably discharg'd.

PROCEEDING up the River, they came to a strong Current, that passes between upright Rocks, where they took a Multitude of the Fishes call'd *Dorados*, or Giltbacks, some of them weighing half a Quarter of an hundred Weight, very well tasted, fat, and so wholesome, that the Broth of them drank cures the Itch, and Leprosy. On the 25th of *October* they came to a Place where the River divides into three Branches, one of them forming a great Lake, call'd *Rio Negro*, or the Black River, which runs up the Country to the Northward. The other two Branches, meet again, something farther on; and farther on again they found the Mouth of a River, which runs up the Country to the Westward, where the End of the *Paraguay* is lost, because of other Rivers, and great Lakes, which are here divided, with so many Mouths, that tho' the Natives

are

The HISTORY of *America*. 403

are continually traversing them, they can scarce know all, and are sometimes lost. This River *Alvar Núñez* now enter'd, is call'd *Tiguaru*, signifying good Water, and it runs into the Lake, and as before they had gone up against the Stream, when once in it they went down the Water. *Alvar Núñez* caus'd several Land-Marks, as Trees cut, and three Crosses to be set up at the Mouth of that River he had enter'd, to direct the Ships which came after him. After eight Days sailing, they came to some Mountains standing in the Middle of the River, which are naked, red, big, and round like Bells, suppos'd to contain much Metal, but no Tryal was made, for want of Tools, and because most of the Men were sickly. Advancing still along the River, they enter'd another Mouth of the same Lake, that is above a League and half wide, and pass'd out at another Mouth of it, along an Arm of the same, close by the Continent, whence they proceeded to the Entrance into another Lake, where are the Towns of the *Xacocias*, the *Xaqueffes*, and the *Clanesses*, who receiv'd the Governour in peaceable manner, which was not acceptable to his Men, because Soldiers never love Peace, but the Governour said, that by means of the peaceable and friendly they were respected by other Nations; for if all were Enemies, it would be impossible to penetrate so far among those People, and keep them in Awe, for which reason it was convenient to manage dexterously, without discovering any Fear. It would have been requisite to unlade the Brigantines, that they might pass to Port *Reyes*, because the Waters were fallen, but the *Spaniards* and *Indians* lifted them over the Flat, which reach'd almost a Musket-shot and an half. Being come to that Port, they found Abundance of the Natives expecting the Governour, whom they receiv'd with much Joy. He then erected a Chapel to say

404 The HISTORY of America.

Mas, set up a Cross. took Possession of the Country, and pitch'd the Camp, taking special Care, that neither the *Spaniards*, nor the *Indians* should injure the Natives. The Country about Port *Reyes* is fruitful, abounding in Provisions, as *Indian* Wheat, Game and Fish. The *Indians* there are of a middle Stature, go stark naked, and have great Holes in their Ears. Here Idolatry was found among them, for they worshipp'd wooden Idols, and the *Spaniards* were told, that farther up the Country, they had them of Gold and Silver. Upon preaching to them they burnt their Idols, tho' they were afraid of the Devil, yet, after the first Mass was said, they rested satisfy'd. The Governour inquiring about the Inland Country, in order to proceed thither, was inform'd that a Race of *Indians*, call'd *Xaraies*, five Days Journey distant by Land, the way bad, and eight Days along the River, had some Gold and Silver, which they got from the Inland Country, and that they till'd the Ground, and bred Hens, Geese, and other Creatures. Hereupon he sent *Hector de Acuña* and *Antony Correa* the Interpreters, with ten, or twelve of the Native *Indians*, directing them to speak to the Chief of the *Xaraies*, acquainting him, that he would be his Friend, and giving them many Toys to present him, and to enquire particularly into the Nature of the Country.)

THE next Day Capt. *Gonzalo de Mendoza* arriv'd with the rest of the Fleet, and said, that the *Guaxarapo Indians*, notwithstanding the Amity concluded with them, had, without any Provocation attack'd the Brigantine commanded by Capt. *Augustin de Campos*, and kill'd five *Spaniards*, and another endeavouring to make his Escape had been drowned. Those *Indians* soon after went to perswade their Neighbours at Port *Reyes* to break the Peace with the *Spaniards*,

The HISTORY of *America*. 405

Spaniards, because they were not brave, and had soft Heads, so that they might easily kill them. (Eight Days after *Hector de Acuna* and *Antony Correa* return'd, saying, they had travell'd over Marshy Lands, with much Difficulty, till drawing near the Lands of the *Xaraies*, they met thirty *Indians*, who receiv'd them joyfully, and said, their Chief had been inform'd of their coming, and sent them Meat; that without the Towns they found about five hundred *Indians*, very gay, who advanc'd to receive them, and their Lord was sitting in a Cotton Net, encompass'd by above three hundred *Indians* standing, who by means of an Interpreter of the *Guarani* Language, bid them welcome, adding, that he was desirous to see the Commander of the Christians, and to be his Friend, because he had heard good Tidings of him. When they had deliver'd their Message, he answer'd, He accepted of the Friendship of the Christians, and would cultivate it with all the Kindness he could do them; but as for the Inland Country, he knew nothing of it, because it was all Subject to be overflow'd by the rising of the Rivers; but that the *Indian* Interpreter had travell'd the Country, whom they might take along with them, to give an Account of what he had seen, and so they return'd. The *Xaraie Indians* are a People of a good Disposition, the Men till the Ground and sow their Corn, which the Women reap, and carry Home, and are notable Spinsters of Cotton. Upon this Relation, and that which the *Indian* sent by the Lord gave, *Alvar Nuñez* resolv'd to go upon this Expedition, for which he chose out three hundred Musketeers and Cross-bow-men, leaving one hundred *Spaniards* and two hundred *Indians* to guard the Brigantines, under the Command of *John Romero*. The Governour march'd five Days through very thick Woods, till he came to a River, the Water

406 *The HISTORY of America.*

whereof was clear, but hot, where the Guide, said, it was so long since he had been that way, and the Woods so thick, that he knew not how to proceed. At this Time came ten or twelve *Indians*, who said, they had stay'd to live there ever since the last Wars, and knew nothing of what was farther on; but that in an House hard by there was an *Indian*, who did, who being brought before the Governour, said, there was sixteen Days Journey to the inhabited Countries they sought after, that the Ways were still worse than those they had pass'd, and that he would willingly guide them, as knowing the Way, tho' he fear'd the *Indians* of that Country would kill him. Having no Provisions for so long a Journey, and considering all other Difficulties, it was resolv'd to return to Port *Reyes*; but Capt. *Francis de Ribera* was order'd, with six *Spaniards*, and some *Indians*, to go along with the Guide, who knew the Way, as far as *Tapua*, which was the nearest Part of the inhabited Country they sought after.

THE Governour returning to Port *Reyes*; was assur'd by Capt. *John Romero*, that the Natives of that Country, being joyn'd in League with the *Guaxarapos*, had conspir'd to destroy them, and take the Vessels, in order to which they furnish'd no Provisions, nor perform'd any Acts of Friendship, as they were wont. Some of the Prime Men of that Country coming to *Alvar Nunez*, he admonish'd them to stand to their Engagements, and he would be their Friend; for if they fail'd he would make War on them. They promis'd to continue faithful, and to quit the Alliance with the *Guaxarapos*, whereupon he gave them Caps, and other Things, and they went away well satisfy'd. Some advis'd him to hang them, for a Terror to others, but he answer'd, that tho' they falsify'd their Words, he would not violate his Faith. Then considering,

The HISTORY of *America*. 407

considering, that he had there above three thousand Men, between *Spaniards* and *Indians*, and that there was Provision only for twelve Days, he summon'd the Great Men of the Country, and demanded Provisions of them. They answer'd, That they had none, but that the *Arriamicocies*, who were nine Leagues from thence had Plenty, and would barter for *Spanish* Commodities. It being resolv'd in Council, that the Effusion of Blood ought to be avoided, but that they might advance to get Provisions by way of Trade, which, if refus'd, the same might be taken by Force, the Governour sent Capt. *Gonzalo de Mendoza* with one hundred and twenty *Spaniards*, and sixty *Indian* Archers to seek for Provisions, with strict Orders, not to wrong any Body, unless it were unavoidable, such being the King's Pleasure. Up the River went Capt. *Francis de Ribera*, to the Towns of the *Xarages* to the same Purpose, and with like Instructions. *Mendoza* sent the Governour Word, that the *Arriamicocies* were in Arms, and not only refus'd to give Provisions, but threaten'd in a very daring manner; and that having refus'd to give Ear to any Message he had sent them, they had been so terrify'd by only seeing two *Indians* shot by his Musketeers, that they were fled to the Woods, without hearkning to any thing he could say, that all Endeavours were us'd to signify, that he was for making Peace with them; that going then to their Houses he found great Store of Food, whence he again sent to invite them to return to their Houses, for as much as he desir'd their Friendship; to which they had answer'd, That they would not, and had sent for the *Guaxaropos* and the *Guatos* to come to there Assistance. This is all that hapned there till the End of the Year 1543.

ABOUT the Beginning of 1544, Capt. *Francis de Ribera*, above-mention'd to have been sent to the

408 The HISTORY of America.

Xarayes, with a Guide, and six *Spaniards*, (return'd, having been as far as *Tapuaguazu*, where the Guide said the populous Country began) and tho' the six *Spaniards* were wounded, all the Men rejoyc'd, having concluded them to be lost, eight of the eleven *Indians* that went with them being return'd before, through the Dread of the Perils they were like to undergo. *Ribera* said, that he had travell'd twenty-one Days, without ceasing, from the Wood, where the Governour left him, the Way being so impassable by reason of the Briers, and Brambles, that some Days he had not advanc'd above a League, continually holding on to the Westward, feeding on Deer, Swine, and Dantas, which the *Indians* kill'd with their Arrows; for there was great plenty of Game, as there was Honey, which they found in hollow Trees, as also of Fruit; that the 21st Day they had cross'd a great River, where they caught a delicious Fish like an Olave, after which they presently fell into a new Track of *Indians*, and following the same, found great Stacks of *Indian* Corn, shown them by an *Indian* that came out to meet them, having a large Silver Chin Plate hanging at his under Lip, and Gold Ornaments in his Ears, who took *Ribera* by the Hand, and signify'd by Signs, his Language not being understood, that they should go with him, and when come near to a Cottage made of Timber and Straw, they saw the Men and Women carry out what they had into the Fields, and then from some large Jars, in which they laid up their Corn, they drew out Plates, little Axes, Bracelets, and other Pieces of Silver. That having caus'd them to sit down, they gave them some of their Liquor made of Mayz to drink, out of Calabashes, or Gourds; that some Slaves, who serv'd them, said, there were some Christians three Days Journey from thence among the *Indians* call'd *Payzunoës*; and they show'd them *Tapuaguazu*, which is a
very

very large high Rock; after which some painted *Indians* appear'd with their Bows and Arrows; and the Master of that House, who had conducted them to it, taking up his Arms, and several Messengers passing to and fro, he perceiv'd they design'd to kill them, for which reason he advis'd his Comrades to return the same Way they came, not thinking they were safe there; that as they were so doing, tho' they said they were going to call more Christians, above three hundred *Indians* charg'd and pursu'd them into the Wood, all wounded; but the *Indians* durst not adventure any farther, as believing that there had been more Christians, that they return'd from thence the very same Way to Port Reyes, being about seveny Leagues; that he had observ'd those *Indians* call'd *Trapecocies* had much Food, and bred Geese and Hens, like those in *Spain*.

Now all the Men that were at Port Reyes began to fall sick of Fevers, occasion'd by the Waters being spoilt by the Flood coming down. The *Sacarine*, and *Xaqueffe* *Indians*, seeing the *Spaniards* so sickly, began the War, in Conjunction with the *Guaxarapos*, and one Morning took five young Soldiers, who were gone out a Fishing, with some new converted *Guaranios*, carry'd them to their Town, where they kill'd and eat them, making several other Excursions, in all which they kill'd fifty-eight Christians, whereupon they were declar'd Enemies. At this Time Capt. *Ferdinand de Ribera* return'd with the Vessel he had been in, discovering up the River; and the Country being all overflow'd, there was no making War, or any Discovery, that Inundation continuing four Months. Hereupon he resolv'd to return to the City of the *Assumption*, not permitting any *Indians* to be carry'd away from *Port Reyes*, because the King had so order'd, and therefore

therefore the *Spaniards* began to bear him ill Will, which would not have been, had he conniv'd at their Crimes, and Breach of the King's Commands, because our corrupt Nature rather inclines us to evil than to good. Being come down to the *Assumption* in eight Days, whereas he had been two Months going up, he found that Capt. *Salazar*, whom he had left Governour there, had assembled above twenty thousand *Indians*, with a great Number of Canoes, to invade the *Agaces* both by Land and Water, because they had broken the Peace, and made War on the Christians, and their Confederates, but all ceas'd at that Time. The Governour had not been above a Fortnight at the *Assumption* before the King's Officers, who hated him, because he would not connive at their Insolencies and Frauds, conspir'd to remove him from the Government, perswading the Men that had been left in the City, that he intended to take away their *Indians* and Lands, and give them to the sick that came with him, whereupon they broke into his House, he being then sick, seiz'd his Person, and plunder'd all he had. The next Day they appointed *Dominick de Irala*, who had been a chief Ring-leader in the Mutiny, Deputy-Governour, because being a Man of little Worth, he would do all that they should direct, and accordingly conferr'd all other Employments on their own Creatures, thus usurping the Regal Authority. Next they gave out, that they would make an Inroad, the same Way *Alvar Nuñez* had gone before, to get some Gold and Silver to send to the King, that he might pardon their Offence; but the Men would not consent to it, many crying out to have the Governour set at Liberty, for which reason, the King's Officers and their Adherents mistus'd them,

The HISTORY of *America*. 411

them, and took away their Estates. However the Mutiny still increas'd, many declaring for the Governour, so that both Parties were in Arms, and the Government being entirely off the Hinges, the Soldiers went barefac'd about the *Indian* Towns, robbing and abusing those People, and when they complain'd to *Irala*, or the King's Officers, they answer'd, It was not in their Power to prevent it, (which occasion'd many Christian *Indians* to withdraw into the Mountains,) where they could not be instructed. Besides those usurping Magistrates and Officers using the *Spaniards* no less insolently, fifty or sixty of them went away in a Passion, towards the Coast of *Brasil*; and others who intended to have gone up the Country were secur'd, stripp'd, and barbarously treated. They also imprison'd three Clergymen, who reprov'd them for their treasonable Practices, and proceeded to such Inhumanity, as to permit the *Indians*, who had already left it off, to eat the Flesh of their Enemies. The Disorders daily increasing, those Rebels resolv'd to send away the Governour Prisoner into *Spain*, with formal Informations drawn up against him, as they thought fit. Accordingly they put him aboard one of his own Brigantines by Night, he being then sick and weak, and yet he cry'd out, That he left in his stead, in the King's Name, Captain *John de Salazar de Espinosa*, (and call'd Witnesses to it, whereupon one of those Villains who acted as Treasurer, ran to him with a Dagger, swearing, he would stab him, if he mention'd the King. With him were sent Prisoners, the afore said Capt. *Salazar*, and *Peter de Estopiñan*. When at Sea there hapned a mighty Storm, which continu'd four Days, and being in great Danger of perishing, the Inspector *Cabrera*, and the under Treasurer *Garciruanegas*, who had been chief Promoters

412 *The HISTORY of America.*

Promoters of all the Mischiefs here mention'd, and were going into *Spain* to be the Governour's Accusers, and Prosecutors, repenting of the horrid Crimes they had committed, looking upon that Storm, as a Judgment for their Enormities, took off the Governour's Fetters, and kiss'd his Feet, begging Pardon, acknowledging his Innocence, and their own Guilt in occasioning so many false Oaths to be taken, and other heinous Sins to be committed. Being arriv'd in *Spain*, they return'd to their Vomit, forgot all their good Purposes, and hasted to Court, to accuse the Governour, but upon his Arrival there they scamper'd, pretending to go to their own Homes. *Cabrera* fell sick at *Loxa*, ran distracted, and in that Condition kill'd his Wife. *Garcivanegado* dy'd suddenly. The Council clear'd the Governour; yet would not permit him to return to the River of *Plate*; and thus Justice was done him by halves. Having brought the Affairs of the River of *Plate* to this notable Period, it is Time to see what was done in other Places.



C H A P,

C H A P. III.

The Expedition of the Viceroy of New Spain to subdue the revolted Indians in New Galicia; Voyage of two Ships of his to discover Northward on the South-Sea; he sends Ships to the Spice Islands.

DON Antonio de Mendoza, Viceroy of New Spain, understanding how haughty the *Indians* of New Galicia were grown, with the Success they had met with in their Revolt, and the killing of the *Adelantado Alvarado*, as has been said before in its Place, resolv'd to go in Person to reduce them, and in order to it commanded the *Indians* of *Tlascala*, *Cholula*, *Gnaxocingo*, *Tepeaca*, *Tezcucó*, and others, to provide such Arms offensive and defensive as they us'd, granting leave to the *Caziques* and prime Men to buy Horses to ride, and to use *Spanish* Weapons, as Spears, Swords, Head-pieces, &c. and having thus drawn together fifty thousand *Indians*, they made a very agreeable Appearance, being all extraordinary well equipp'd; tho' there were some that said, it was not proper to arm the *Indians*, and accustom them to *Spanish* Weapons. He set out from *Mexico* on the 8th of *October* 1542, with three hundred *Spanish* Horse, among whom were many Persons of Distinction, and one hundred and fifty Foot Musketeers, Cross-bow-men, and Targeteers, under the Command
of

414 *The HISTORY of America.*

of Capt *Urbaneta*. He made some Stay at *Mechoacan* for all the Men to join him, and thence proceeded to *Taxucalca*, which is the Boundary between the *Mechoacans* and the *Chichimecas*. Next he march'd three Days through a Desert to *Acuyna*, where was a stony Mount defended by the Enemies, who having been summon'd to submit, and persisting in their Rebellion in Hopes of Relief, the *Spanish* Infantry were order'd to possess themselves of an Intrenchment, and to advance, if they found no Resistance, being seconded by twenty thousand *Indians*. Four of those Works were gain'd without any Opposition, and the Enemy seeing the fifth attack'd, turn'd their Backs and fled, that the Passes being secur'd, the *Spanish* *Indians* either kill'd, or took them all. A Squadron of Horse had been order'd to mount as soon as the Foot had gain'd the second Intrenchment, and they were of use, because the Top of the Hill was plain, and fit for Horses. This was the first Mount gain'd, where the friendly *Indians* behav'd themselves very well, whom the Viceroy commanded, that since no *Indians* were to be made Slaves, they should deliver up their Prisoners to have Justice done on them.

NEXT the Army march'd in very good Order, such as did any Harm in the Country being punish'd, and came to another Town call'd *Aquatique*, seven Leagues from the former, still in the Hollow of the Great River, where the Enemies were also fortify'd on a Mount, or Rock. The Defendants being summon'd to surrender, answer'd, That if they were not reliev'd within fifteen Hours, they would submit, and come down to the Town, to pay the usual Tributes. That Time being elaps'd, and the Rebels still delaying, the Viceroy order'd three Pedreiros to be planted against them, which having been fir'd

The HISTORY of *America*. 415

fir'd fifteen or sixteen Times, some chief Men, and the Lady of the Town came down, with Crosses in their Hands, in respect to which holy Ensign, he pardon'd, and bid them live peaceably in their Houses. The next Day the Army march'd, at the Sight whereof some *Indians*, who were upon another Rock, fled up the River, but being pursu'd, most of them were taken, yet the Viceroy would not make them Slaves, but *Tanemes*, that is, Servants to attend the Army during the War. From this Place to the Rock of *Nuchizlan* was twelve Leagues, and the same Distance from *Guadalaxara*, and the main Strefs of the War being in that Place, the Viceroy order'd the People of *Guadalaxara* directing them not to be there before him for Fear of any Misfortune, for he was provident, mild, and good natur'd. The Commanders at *Guadalaxara*, took such good Measures that they arriv'd there exactly with the Army. When the Army was incamp'd, no Enemy appear'd for some Days, till being rouz'd by some Cannon-Shot, they fell to work, and added two Intrenchments to four they had before. Being summon'd in the usual Form, they answer'd, That all the Country was their own, and they would defend it. Some false Attacks were made to terrify them, whilst they made Mantlets to cover the Men, The eighth Day in the Morning the Artillery began to play, which soon made Breaches in two of the Trenches, and the Soldiers were for attacking the third, but the Infantry being a small Number, the Viceroy commanded all the Horse, except twelve of each Troop, to dismount, and give the Assault with Sword and Target, which being accordingly done, two Trenches more were gain'd, and so the rest, tho' with much Difficulty, and the Cannon being brought up began to dislodge them, Capt. *Inigo Lopez de Al-*
nuncibay

416 The HISTORY of America.

nuncibay planted his Colours there. The Slaughter made by the *Tlascallans*, *Mexicans*, and *Zarascos* was very great, and would have been much greater had not the Viceroy prevented it, however the dead and living Prisoners amounted to eight thousand, the latter of which the Viceroy declar'd Slaves, being above fourteen Years of Age, and distributed them among the Forces, alledging, it was fit to be done for an Example, because the Religious Men strenuously oppos'd him in that particular; and the reason he gave for so doing was, that those People were naturally Robbers, Murderers, and guilty of several other heinous Crimes. All the other strong Holds submitted, and the People came down from those Mountains to inhabit the Plains. The Viceroy, who had manag'd this War with singular Conduct, having been now two Years from *Mexico*, return'd in triumphant manner, and applying himself to the Government, which he manag'd with much Discretion, having among other good Things he did establish'd a Council, or Court for Country Affairs, because the Cattle had multiply'd very much, and still daily increas'd, which continues to this Day after the same manner that it is practis'd in *Spain*.

NOR was the Viceroy only intent upon the Land Affairs, for tho' the two Ships he had sent before to discover along the Coast of *New Spain* to the Southward, had miscarry'd, he fitted out two more, under the Command of *John Rodriguez Cabrillo*, the one call'd *St. Saviour*, and the other the *Victory*, which sail'd from the Port of the *Nativity*, on the 26th of *June* 1542, and the next Morning were at Cape *Corrientes* in twenty-two Deg. twenty Min. N. Lat. *Sunday* the 2d of *July* they came into twenty-four Deg. large, and had Sight of the *Marques del Valle's* Port, call'd *de la Cruz*, or of the *Cross*, which is

The HISTORY of America. 417

on the Coast of California.) The 8th of the same Month, they were in twenty-five Deg. Lat. being the Point of the Trinity. Wednesday the 19th they discover'd a Port, where was good Shelter, call'd it of the *Magdalen*, in twenty-seven Deg. and water'd. The 20th of *August* they came to Cape *Engano*, in thirty-one Deg. Lat. *September* 14th, they anchor'd at a Cape, which they call'd *de la Cruz*, or of the Cross, a good Bottom, the Land high, and naked, in thirty-three Deg. Tuesday, *October* 10th, they discover'd some Towns of peaceable *Indians*, with whom they traded, and call'd them the Towns of the Canoes, because there were many, and they lye in thirty-five Deg. twenty Min. Having made little Way for some Days, by reason of the Calm, on Wednesday the 18th of the same Month, they came to a long Point of Land, which for that reason they call'd *de la Galera*, or of the Gale, in thirty-six Deg. thirty Min. when the Wind blowing fresh at N. W. they stood out to Sea, and discover'd two Islands, the one eight Leagues in length East and West, and the other four, in which last they saw a very good small Harbour, and both of them well inhabited, those People and all the rest of the Coast they had past living on their Fisheries, making Beads of the Fish Bones to barter with the People on the Continent. Those Islands are about ten Leagues from Cape *Galera* W. by N. staying eight Days in the Harbour, they were kindly entertain'd by the *Indians*, who go naked, their Faces painted in Checkers, and this they call'd Port Possession. Wednesday the 25th they sail'd from that Port, with fair Weather, the Wind S. W. but the next Day it blew hard at S. and S. W. with heavy Showers of Rain, and Hazy, which put them in some Danger, because that Wind was contrary, and they near the Coast, and that high. Friday, Saturday and

418 *The HISTORY of America.*

Sunday they had all sorts of Winds, *Monday* and *Tuesday* heavy Rains, and close Weather. *Wednesday* the 1st of *November*, they return'd to Port *Galera*, for Shelter against the N. W. Wind, which blew hard; and *Thursday* the 2^d made into Port *Sardinas*, falling off forty Leagues, the Country very populous, and the Natives good natur'd. The Prime Men of a Town near the Port went aboard the Ship, and danc'd to the Musick of a Tabor, and a Bag-pipe the *Spaniards* had, and lay aboard, the Boats in the mean Time watering and wooding; those People's Houses were large and double, like those in *New Spain*, and their burial Place were pal'd about. This Province was call'd *Sejo*, the Natives fed on Acorns, Nuts, and Fish, and said, that farther on there were People cloath'd.)

Saturday the 11th they coasted along to the S. W. seeking, but not finding *Our Lady's River*, and saw a vast Ridge of high Mountains, which they call'd the Mountains of *St. Martin*, in thirty-seven Deg. thirty Min. Lat. and at the End of them towards the N. W. is a Cape in thirty-eight Deg. which they nam'd Cape *St. Martin*. At Night such a Storm came up at S. S. E. and S. W. with Gluts of Rain, that the Ships, were parted, and one of them threw over-board all that was upon Deck. *Monday* the 13th the Commadore stood in for the Land, to seek the other Ship, and lay by all Night. There a Cape runs out into the Sea, cover'd with very tall Pine-Trees, which they call'd Cape *Pines*, and upon an Observation found themselves above forty Deg. to the Northward, where they had a View of above fifteen Leagues along the Coast, high Land, bearing North-West and South-East. *Wednesday* 15th, they lay along the Coast, the Wind North-West, the Cold so intense that they could scarce Work, and saw
all

all the snowy Hills) and in the Afternoon spy'd the other Ship, in much Distress, and leaky. *Friday* 16th, they came to a spacious Bay, like an Harbour, and call'd it the Bay of *Pines*. The 18th they look'd out for an Harbour, seeing snowy Mountains, with a Cape butting out from them, which they nam'd *Cabo de Nieve*, or Cape Snow, in thirty-eight Degrees forty Minutes Latitude, the Weather being all clear and fair along the Coast, when the North-West Wind blows. From thirty-seven Degrees thirty Minutes, to forty, the Coast bears North-West) and South-East, where finding no Harbour, they were forc'd to make for the Island of *Possession*, which is one of those call'd of *St. Luke*, where they enter'd on the 23d of *November*, and the Harbour being good, refitted the small Ship, laying it a-ground, because it was ready to sink. There they stay'd till the End of *December*, the Weather continuing so foul, that sometimes they could not go athore in three or four Days. At length, on *Friday* the 19th of *January* 1543, with much Difficulty, they arriv'd at Port *Sardinas*, whence they sail'd again on the 14th of *February*, and *Monday* the 26th to that they call'd Cape *Fortunas*, in forty-one Degrees Latitude. From the 27th of *February* till *Thursday* the first of *March* they had a dreadful Storm, and that Day took an Observation, and found forty-four Degrees Latitude, the Cold being so excessive, that they were almost frozen. The 5th they return'd to the Island of *Possession*, where the Sea breaking, they took Shelter on the South-South-East of the Island of *St. Sebastian*. At Night the Commadore vanish'd, (and in five Days they ran two hundred Leagues, under a Foresail Reef'd, having nothing to eat, but rotten Bisket,) a Pound whereof was allow'd a Man. *Thursday* the 8th the other Ship sail'd from Port *St Sebastian*, requiring

420 *The HISTORY of America.*

the Commander to return to *New Spain*, since they had no Provisions, and on the 26th found the other Ship at the Island of *Cedars*. *Saturday, April 14th*, they return'd to the Port of the *Nativity*, their Commadore being dead. The Seamen said that Voyage requir'd strong Ships, of two hundred Tuns Burthen, well rigg'd in all Respects, and the Sails to be *Spanish*, because those of the *West-Indies* soon split; that they ought to carry much Store of Provisions, and no *Indians*, because they were of no use on the Voyage, and only serv'd to eat up the Stores. In short, those Ships reach'd to forty-four Degrees Latitude.

BESIDES the Enterprizes above-mention'd, the Viceroy of *New Spain* was intent upon trading to the *Molucco Islands* in the *East-Indies*, by way of the *South-Sea*, in Order to which he fitted out two Ships, one Galley, and two small Tenders, well furnish'd with all Necessaries, which sail'd under the Command of *Ruy Lopez de Villalobos*, from the Port of *Juan Gallego*, in *New Spain*, on the first of *November 1542*. Having sail'd one hundred and eighty Leagues, in the Latitude of eighteen Degrees thirteen Minutes, they fell in with two Desert Islands, twelve Leagues distant from one another; the first whereof they call'd *St. Thomas*, and the other *Anublada*, eighty Leagues from which they saw another Island, and nam'd it *Roca-partida*; six Leagues beyond which, they discover'd an Archipelago of low Islands, all wooded, at one of which they with much Difficulty came to an Anchor, because the Water is so deep about them that they found no Bottom within a Musket-Shot of the Shore. They are inhabited by poor People, altogether unpolish'd, where as soon as the Ships anchor'd at that call'd *St. Stephen*, the Inhabitants fled away on the opposite Side, twenty-five Women remaining hid

hid in the most woody Part of the Island, who were well us'd, and had Toys given them. Having water'd, the Ships sail'd from this *Archipelago*, which they call'd of *Coral*, having found some Tokens of it. On the Feast of the *Epiphany* 1543, having run thirty-five Leagues, they pass'd by ten other Islands, as agreeable as the others, for which reason they call'd them the *Gardins*, the Latitude between nine and ten Degrees. When they had proceeded one hundred Leagues to the Westward, there blew such a Storm, that they expected all to have perish'd, and actually lost the Galley, to their great Grief, as believing it necessary for carrying on their Designs. The 10th of *January*, when they had advanc'd fifty Leagues farther, in ten Degrees Latitude, they (pass'd by a beautiful Island, that was inhabited, and they not anchoring, the *Indians* came out in *Paraos*, who made the Sign of the Cross, and were heard to say in *Spanish*, *Good Morrow Sailors*, for which reason they nam'd it the Island *Matalotes*, or of Sailors. Thirty-five Leagues to the Westward, they (came to another larger Island, and call'd it *de los Arracifes*, or of the Ridges of Rocks, because there were many about it. The 2d of *February*, they (anchor'd in a Bay, which they call'd of *Malaga*, in seven Degrees Latitude, and lay there a Month.) *Ruy Lopez* would have settled a Colony there, but did not, because the Place was unhealthy; yet he took Possession for the Crown of *Spain*, and (call'd it *Cesarea Caroli*, the Island being three hundred and fifty Leagues in Compass,) and it is reckned to be above fifteen hundred Leagues from the Port of the *Nativity* in *New Spain*. Departing hence they coasted sixty Leagues along *Cesarea*, and discover'd two small Islands about four Leagues distant from each other to the Southward, where *Ruy Lopez* thought to settle, and accordingly concluded a

- one of
the
Philippin?

422 The HISTORY of America.

Peace with the Inhabitants of one of them call'd *Sarragan*; yet the *Indians* soon repented, appear'd in Arms, and could not be perswaded to sell Provisions, whereupon on *Monday* the 2d of *April*, the Town was attack'd, and taken, several *Spaniards* being wounded, six whereof dy'd, and they nam'd this Island *Antonia*, being about six Leagues in compass, containing four Towns. All the Inhabitants retir'd to a steep Rock, for which they were drove, and permitted to escape, without being pursu'd, in order to gain them, but they fled over to *Cesarea*. On the Hill, or Rock was found much *China* Ware, Musk, Amber, Civet, Benjamin, Storax, and other Perfumes, both in Cakes, and Oyls, much us'd among them, which they bought of those that traded from *Mindanao* to the *Philippine* Islands. There were also some Tokens of Gold, and a Piece of Gold Mail studded through, but nothing else; because all the Natives of those Islands are wont to bury all they have in the Mountains. When the Booty was brought together, the General demanded the 7th Part, and any one Jewel he should choose, which was granted. Then the Viceroy's Officers demanded his Dues, which provok'd the Soldiers; the King's Fifth was also requir'd, and the General answer'd, that it should be paid for Gold, Silver, and precious Stones, but not for any other Thing. He order'd *Indian* Wheat to be sow'd, for fear of wanting Provisions, which the Men refus'd, saying, Their Business was to fight, and not to till the Ground; however, he insisted on it, and they comply'd, which prov'd to their Advantage.

IN that Island their Weapons were Hangers, Daggers, Spears, Darts, Bows and Arrows, and Trunks, all poison'd. The defensive Arms, Escapiles, or Armour of Cotton, down to their Feet, Coselets of Wood,

Wood, and Buffaloes Skins, Cuirasses of Reeds, and hard Wood, large Shields that cover them all over, Helmets of hard Leather, and they had some small Pieces of Cannon, and Muskets. They are void of all Sincerity, and notwithstanding any Peace or Friendship will break through all, when they have an Opportunity. Notwithstanding what the *Spaniards* had sow'd, they were reduc'd to extreme Want, whereupon *Ruy Lopez*, being inform'd that he might be supply'd, if the Lord of *Mindanao* were his Friend, being but fifty Leagues from *Cesarea*, because that Island is very plentiful; but he was there disappointed, the Men he sent thither narrowly escaping the Treachery of those People. *Ruy Lopez* having got some Provisions by Force at *Sanguin*, sent away one Vessel back to *New Spain*, with Advice of what he had done, and a Galiot to certain Islands afterwards call'd *Philippines*, to buy Provisions.

C H A P. IV.

What hapned to the Spaniards under the Command of Ruy Lopez de Villalobos in the aforesaid Islands, the Moluccos, and the East-Indies, till they return'd into Spain.

WHEN the aforesaid Vessels were gone, a Letter was brought to *Ruy Lopez*, from Don *George de Castro*, requiring him not to molest the *Indians* of those Islands, all which belong'd to the

424 The HISTORY of *America*.

King of *Portugal*, and offering him Relief, if he were in Distress. *Ruy Lopez* answer'd, That he had Orders from the King of *Spain* not to touch at the *Molucco* Islands, but to repair to all the rest, which were within the Limits of the Crown of *Spain*. The *Spaniards* being in much Want of Provisions, resolv'd to remove from that Island, and were drove by the Currents to *Gilolo*, the King whereof being at War with the *Portugueses*, concluded a Peace with *Ruy Lopez*, promising to supply him with Provisions, and assign a place for them to build a Fort. At *Gilolo* all the Goods were landed, and that King own'd himself a Subject of the Crown of *Spain*, and there came to the Ships one *Peter de Ramos*, who had been left there by the Ships of *Don Garcia de Loaysa*, and could never be induc'd to serve the *Portugueses*, declaring he would rather dye than receive their Pay, and he had learnt the Language of the Country, and was well belov'd by the Natives. Soon after the King of *Tidore* came in Person to intreat the *Spaniards* to repair to his Island, and he would furnish them with Provisions, because the *Portugueses* were contriving to seize him. *Ruy Lopez* accepted of his offer, upon Condition, that he was not to make War against the *Portugueses*, nor obstruct them in their Trade of Cloves. It was said before, that one of the Ships, call'd the *St. John*, had been sent back from the Island of *Sarragon*, to carry Advice of all that had hapned till then, to *New Spain*. That Ship, in the Latitude of twenty-six Degrees discover'd a small Island, and twenty six Leagues farther on, two others, lying North and South from the Islands *Ladrones*, beyond that again they saw three more, one of them being a burning Mountain, that casts forth Fire three several Ways. The 18th of *October* the Pilots found they had run seven hundred Leagues in a direct Line, in
the

the Latitude of thirty Degrees bare, whence a violent North Wind drove them back to *Tendaya*, where they anchor'd in a large Bay, on the North Side, the Harbour good, the Country populous, with Plenty of Rice, Swine, and Fowls; the Inhabitants well shap'd, wearing Gold in their Ears, Necklaces, and some Chains, and they said the Land afforded much Gold. There a Lord, whose Name was *Herein*, went three Times aboard, having about him above the Value of one thousand Pieces of Eight in Gold, and the Slaves in his Boat had Gold Collars. They went to another Town, the Lord whereof was call'd *Macabandala*, where their Boat was stolen, and they seiz'd another Lord, whose Name was *Turis*, that he might cause it to be restor'd. They departed from thence on the 3d of *January* 1544, and after much driving backward and forward, at length arriv'd at *Tidore*, where *Ruy Lopez* then was. At this Time *Jordan de Fletes* came to Command at the *Molucco* Islands for the King of *Portugal*, and concluded a Suspension of Arms with the *Spaniards*, upon Condition that no *Portugueses* should go to *Tidore*; that there should be no Communication between the *Spaniards* and the *Portugueses*, and that the Cloves should be sold them as they had been before, provided that they went not thither to buy them, and this to hold till the Kings of *Spain* and *Portugal*, or the Viceroy of *New Spain* and *India* should order otherwise. The Ship *St. John* that was mention'd above to have been forc'd back from her Voyage to *New Spain*, being now refitted, sail'd again for that Country on the 17th of *March* 1545, but with no better Success than the first Time, for after having been four Months at Sea, it again return'd to *Tidore*.

ALL this Time many Messages pass'd between the *Spaniards* and the *Portugueses*, and between both those

those Nations, and the Kings of *Gilolo*, *Tidore*, and *Ternate*, each being jealous of the other, and endeavouring to strengthen themselves by Treaties, in which nevertheless they plac'd no great Confidence. The *Portuguese* Governour offer'd, in case the *Spaniards* would quit *Tidore*, and repair to one Side of *Ternate*, or to an Island close by it, that they would serve them with all they had, which the *Spaniards* would not accept, as well knowing that the Design was to set the King of *Tidore*, and others against them. Twenty *Spanish* Soldiers, and three Clergymen having now deserted to the *Portuguese*, the King of *Tidore* grew jealous, whereupon he summon'd all the *Spaniards* into the Market-place, where he represented to them how much he had suffer'd for adhering to the Crown of *Spain*, ever since *Magellan's* Voyage, and how kind he had been in relieving them in their Distress, praying that they would not forsake him, and offering whatsoever his Island could afford; to all which *Ruy Lopez* return'd no other Answer, but that it was too late. However he privately treated with the *Portuguese* Governour, without communicating what was in Hand, which all the *Spaniards* were concern'd at, being fully bent upon defending the King of *Tidore*, who had reliev'd them in their Distress, and own'd himself a Subject to the King of *Spain*. On the 22d of *October*, *Ferdinand de Sousa*, a new *Portuguese* Governour, sent from *India* to the *Moluccos*, arriv'd at *Ternate*, with one hundred and fifty Men, in three Ships, and as many Foists, with whom *Ruy Lopez* corresponded by Letter, and agreed to an Interview between them, contrary to the Opinion of all his Officers, and of the King of *Tidore*. But before his Departure, he ask'd their Advice concerning the Conditions to be stipulated, and they unanimously agreed, that the Truce ought

ought to be continu'd, till they had Orders from the King, or from the Viceroy of *New Spain*, and in Case of Refusal, that the *Portuguese* Governour should give them a Ship well furnish'd with all Necessaries to carry them away, giving him Hostages for Payment of all the Charges he should be at, and that the King of *Tidore* should no way suffer for having entertain'd them. In case these Terms should be rejected, that the *Spaniards* should then stand upon their Defence, being all ready to dye for the Honour of their Nation, and for their Friends and Benefactors. This Advice was given in Writing, and sign'd by all Persons of Distinction.

THE next Day *Ruy Lopez* and *Ferdinand de Sousa* met, and conferr'd together in private, the latter said he would conclude nothing without communicating it to his Comrades, for such he reckned all aboard his Ships, and *Ruy Lopez* told his People, that he had deliver'd the Articles they gave him, and should have an Answer the next Day; but returning to *Tidore*, he declar'd, that the *Portuguese* Commander having refus'd to consent to the Articles they had propos'd, he had left others with him, the Purport whereof was, That all the *Spaniards* should be carry'd to *India*, and there embark'd for *Spain*. This *Ruy Lopez* said he had agreed to, and the prime Men intreating him not to conclude any thing, without the general Approbation of them all, since they had always been punctually subservient to him, and that Compliance with the *Portuguese* would render him contemptible; he answer'd, That no more should be said of it, for he had positively agreed to those Conditions. Upon this positive Behaviour of his, all the Officers, and Soldiers, in Form intreated, and requir'd of him, not to conclude a Treaty so dishonourable to himself and them all, especially at a time
when

when there was so little Necessity to compel them to it, and in case he persisted in his Resolution to conclude without, and contrary to their Opinion they protested, that all the Loss of Reputation should redound to himself, and he should be answerable for all other Losses and Dangers that might ensue, since he would act in that manner contrary to the Sentiments of such brave Officers and Soldiers. The next Day, being the 28th of *October*, he was told, that the Sailors complain'd that they had not a Ship allow'd them to sail to *New Spain*, which after some Cavilling he positively refus'd to grant, alledging, that it was contrary to his Agreement with the *Portugueses*. On the first of *November* the Officers again demanded an Answer to their Remonstrance, and pressing the Matter home, some harsh Words pass'd, and *Bernard de la Torre* told him, that he would look upon him as his Superior, till they were in *Spain*; but that he might be assur'd he would prosecute him there, and if that fail'd, he would call him to Account Man to Man. He answer'd, That the Challenge was very remote, and he ought to consider him as his Superior, and not ask any thing of him in a disrespectful manner, and that he knew better what was for the good of them all, and for the Service of the King. At length *Ruy Lopez* return'd the following Answer to the above-mention'd Remonstrance, That they well knew they had positive Orders from the King not to touch at the *Molucco* Islands, or any other Parts belonging to the *Portugueses*, which he had sworn to observe, among his other Instructions, yet was so far justifiable in what he had done, that he had been compell'd to it by want of Provisions, yet could not continue there as a Christian, the same being contrary to the King's express Command, and must give occasion to the
Slaugh-

Slaughtering of many Men, and other Mischiefs, all which would be charg'd upon the Viceroy of *New Spain*, who had sent them, and he again would lay all at their Doors; many other Arguments he urg'd, very much to the Purpose, and like a Man of Honour and Conscience, but too tedious to be here repeated at large. The Officers and Soldiers, having taken this into consideration, reply'd, That they had intreated the *Portugueses* to relieve them in the great Want which had brought them thither, and since those People had not done it, they might lawfully stay there, without obstructing the *Portuguese* Trade, till such Time as they could return to *New Spain*, which the *Portugueses* would willingly have forwarded, had he not made the Proposal of going home by the Way of *India*; that it was uncertain, whether *Gilolo* belong'd to the Crown of *Portugal*, and therefore they ought not to give it up, especially since the King of that Island, own'd himself a Subject of the King of *Spain*, and had always shown such extraordinary Favour to all *Spaniards*, wherefore they intreated and requir'd him to infringe the Capitulation concluded with him upon Oath.

Ruy Lopez rejoyn'd, That he had never taken an Oath to, or contracted with the King of *Gilolo*, in the Name of his own King, and referr'd himself to the written Treaty; that he did not think himself so much oblig'd to that King as they said, nor had directed any to make War against him, yet did not think it lawful to oppose the same; and in short, that he would justify his Actions where there was an Authority to call him to Account. This was his Answer, and yet he assisted the *Portugueses* with Men against *Gilolo*, and supply'd them with Gun-powder, because that which they had was naught. The *Spaniards* having none to stand by them, and being very poor,

at length comply'd with their Commander, and *Ferdinand de Sousa* offering them Cloaths, some refus'd them, and stay'd among the *Indians*, the rest took what was offer'd, and imbark'd aboard the *Portuguese* Ships, which carry'd them to the City of *Malaca*, where they remain'd five Months, in very great Want, selling what little they had left. Thence they were transported to *Goa*, where the Viceroy kept them till the Middle of *May* 1547, when they again imbark'd and arriv'd at *Lisbon* the said Year, having departed from *New Spain* in 1542. All this Relation has been here delivered together, tho' hapning in so many Years, to avoid the frequent dismembring of such Accounts, which is inevitable in adhering to the Method of Annals.

The End of the Fifth Volume.



*BOOKS printed for, and sold by J. Batley
at the Dove in Pater-noster-Row.*

A NEW Spanish Grammar, more perfect than any hitherto publish'd. All the Errors of the former being corrected, and the Rules for Learning that Language much improv'd. To which is added, A Vocabulary of the most necessary Words: Also a Collection of Phrases and Dialogues adapted to familiar Discourse. By Capt. John Stevens, Author of the large Spanish Dictionary.

A new Dictionary of Heraldry, explaining the Terms us'd in that Science, with their Etymology, and different Versions into Latin. Containing all the Rules of Blazon, with Reasons for the same. The original Signification of Bearings. And a concise Account of the most noted Orders of Knighthood, that are, or have been; and of Honours and Dignities, Ecclesiastical, Civil, or Military. Illustrated with 196 Devices in Copper. The whole design'd to make that Science familiar. Revised and corrected, with a Letter to the Publisher, by Mr. James Coars.

An History of the Affairs of Europe, from the Peace of Utrecht to the Conclusion of the Quadruple Alliance; being a Narrative of the most important Transactions that have happen'd since the said Peace, and the Motives which have induced the chief Powers of Europe to confirm the same by a General Guaranty. To which is added, A Treatise of the Religious and Civil Interests of Europe: Containing a short Review of the State of Religion, from the Reformation; with the several Advantages gained to the Protestant Interest, and the Civil Liberties of Europe, by the late Negotiations, particularly the Advantages of the Quadruple Alliance; with some Observations

...s printed for, and sold by J. Batley.

servations how far the See of Rome, and the Ecclesiastical Constitution, may be affected by a General Guaranty of the chief Powers of Europe. Also several Arguments, shewing that the Romish Maxims practised in some Nations, are no ways suited to the general Maxims and Policies of the present Times, nor to the present Interests of the Roman Catholick Princes and States of Europe. With Historical Remarks on the ancient and present State of Europe, from the first Ages of Christianity, so far as the Affairs of all Nations have been guided and influenced by the Prevalency of the Ecclesiastical Power over the Civil. By William Gibson.

Surveying improv'd, or the whole Art, both in Theory and Practice, fully demonstrated. In four Parts. I. Arithmetick, Vulgar and Decimal. II. All Definitions, Theorems, and Problems; with plain Trigonometry, and whatever else is necessary to the Theory of Surveying. III. The Description and Use of Instruments proper to be used in practical Surveying. IV. How to measure, cast up, plot or divide any Parcel of Land; to take inaccessible Heights and Distances; with Surveying Counties, Roads, Rivers, &c. Also to reduce a Plan to a Prospect; and to correct any Survey by Astronomical Calculation; with Directions for making transparent Colours for Maps. To which is added, An Appendix concerning Levelling, and conveying Water to any possible Place assign'd; with 96 Figures engrav'd on Copper. By Henry Wilson.

Buchanan's History of Scotland, in 20 Books, the second Edition, Revised and Corrected from the Latin Original, by Mr. Bond, 2 Vol. 8vo.

The History of Herodotus, translated from the Greek, by Mr. Littlebury, 2 Vol. 8vo.

A Voyage into the Levant, by Mr. Tournefort, in 2 Vol. 4to.